This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

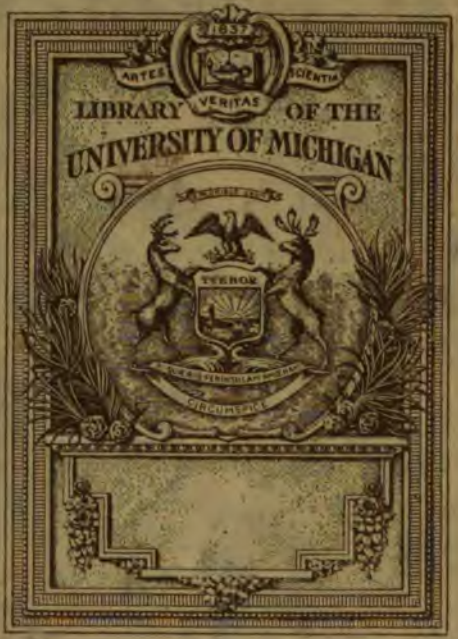
+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

823 Dodsley.—A Select Collection of Old English Plays, originally published by R. Dodsley in 1744; 4th edition, now first chronologically arranged, revised, and enlarged, with the Notes of all the Commentators, and New Notes by W. C. Hazlitt, 15 vols. small 8vo, olive green cloth, contents lettered (published £7 17s. 6d.) £3 7s. 6d. 1875-6



Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Grad R. P.
PR
1261
.D65
1874

OLD ENGLISH PLAYS.

VOL. XV.

ELVIRA OR THE WORST NOT ALWAYS TRUE.

THE MARRIAGE NIGHT.

THE ADVENTURES OF FIVE HOURS.

ALL MISTAKEN; OR, THE MAD COUPLE.

HISTORIA HISTRIONICA.

INDEX AND GLOSSARY.

Digitized by Google

PRINTED BY BALLANTYNE, HANSON AND CO.
EDINBURGH AND LONDON

Digitized by Google

A SELECT COLLECTION

OF

OLD ENGLISH PLAYS.

ORIGINALLY PUBLISHED BY ROBERT DODSLEY
IN THE YEAR 1744.

FOURTH EDITION,

NOW FIRST CHRONOLOGICALLY ARRANGED, REVISED AND ENLARGED
WITH THE NOTES OF ALL THE COMMENTATORS,
AND NEW NOTES

BY

W. CAREW HAZLITT.

VOLUME THE FIFTEENTH.

LONDON:
REEVES AND TURNER, 196 STRAND,
AND 100 CHANCERY LANE, W.C.
1876.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

ELVIRA

OR

THE WORST NOT ALWAYS TRUE.

389209

Digitized by Google

EDITION.

Elvira: Or, The worst not always true. A Comedy, Written by a Person of Quality. Licenced May 15*th*, 1667, *Roger L'Estrange. London, Printed by E. Cotes for Henry Brome in Little-Brittain.* 1667. 4°.

Digitized by Google

INTRODUCTION.

GEORGE DIGBY, Earl of Bristol, was the author of the following play. He was, as Mr Walpole[1] observes, "a singular person, whose life was one contradiction. He wrote against Popery, and embraced it; he was a zealous opposer of the Court, and a sacrifice for it; was conscientiously converted in the midst of his prosecution of Lord Strafford, and was most unconscientiously a prosecutor of Lord Clarendon. With great parts, he always hurt himself and his friends; with romantic bravery, he was always an unsuccessful commander. He spoke for the Test Act, though a Roman Catholic; and addicted himself to astrology on the birthday of true philosophy." The histories of England abound with the adventures of this inconsistent and eccentric nobleman who, amongst his other pursuits, esteemed the drama not unworthy of his attention. Downes, the prompter,[2] asserts that he wrote two plays between the years 1662 and 1665, *made out of the Spanish;* one called "'Tis better than it was," and the other entitled "Worse and Worse." Whether either of these is the

[1] "Catalogue of Royal and Noble Authors," ii. 25.

[2] "Roscius Anglicanus," 1708, p. 23.

Digitized by Google

present performance cannot now be ascertained. It is, however, at least probable to be one of them with a new title.[1] The same writer says he also joined with Sir Samuel Tuke in the composition of "The Adventures of Five Hours." "Elvira" was printed in the year 1667, and Mr Walpole imagines that it occasioned our author being introduced into Sir John Suckling's Session of Poets, a conjecture which, however, will by no means correspond with the time in which Lord Bristol and Sir John Suckling are supposed to have written the respective works before mentioned. From the notice taken of him by Sir John Suckling as a poet, he seems to have been the author of some pieces which are now lost to the world.[2] After a life, which at different periods of it commanded both the respect and contempt of mankind, and not unfrequently the same sentiments at one time, he died, neither loved nor regretted by any party, in the year 1676.

[A MS. note in one of the former editions says: "A play of pure *intrigue*.—Style feeble and drawling.—Plot extremely complicated, and quite unintelligible without a most fixed attention, which, however, the play has not merit enough to excite. *July* 1819."]

---

[1] P. 22.

[2] It is not easy to find out why this inference is drawn, since Sir J. Suckling only mentions him by name, with three others comparatively little known.

> "Sands with Townshend, for they kept no order;
> *Digby* and Shillingsworth a little further."

"Session of the Poets."—*Collier*. [But the Digby here mentioned was Sir Kenelm Digby, surely.]

Digitized by Google

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

Don Julio Rocca.
Don Pedro de Mendoça.
Don Fernando Solis, *in love with Donna Elvira.*
Don Zancho de Moneçes, *in love with Donna Blanca.*
Fabio, *servant to Don Fernando.*
Fulvio, *servant to Don Pedro.*
Chichon, *servant to Don Zancho.*
A Page.

Donna Elvira, *a beautiful lady, Don Pedro's daughter.*
Donna Blanca, *a lady of high spirit, Don Julio's sister.*
Francisca, *Donna Blanca's woman.*

Scene, Valencia.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

ELVIRA;

OR,

THE WORST NOT ALWAYS TRUE.[1]

ACT I.

The room in the inn.

Enter DON FERNANDO, *and at another door his servant* FABIO, *both in riding-clothes.*

DON F. Have you not been with him, Fabio, and given him
The note?
FAB. I found him newly got out of his bed;
He seem'd much satisfied, though much surpris'd,
With your arrival; and as soon as possibly
He can get ready, he'll be with you here.
He says he hopes some good occasion brings you
To Valencia, and that he shall not be
At quiet till he know it. 'Twas not fit

[1] The errors Dodsley committed, and Reed allowed to remain, in the course of this play, were very numerous: it has been thought worth while to point out only a few of them in the notes.—*Collier.*

Digitized by Google

For me, without your orders, to give him
Any more light than what your ticket did.
DON. F. 'Tis well: go now, and see if Donna Elvira
Be stirring yet, for I would gladly have her
A witness, even at first, to what shall pass
Betwixt my friend and me in our concernments:
If she be still asleep, Fabio, make bold
To knock, and wake her; w' have no time to lose.
O, here she comes. Wait you Don Julio.
[*Exit* FABIO.

Enter DONNA ELVIRA.

ELV. Ah! can you think my cares and sleep consistent?
Slumber and tears have sometimes met in dreams;
But hearts, with such a weight as mine opprest,
'Find still the heaviest sleep too light a guest.
DON F. Madam, though such least pity do deserve,
Who by their own unsteadiness have drawn
Misfortune on themselves, yet truly, Elvira,
Such is my sense of yours and my compassion,
To see a lady of your quality
Brought to such sad extremes in what is dearest,
As makes me even forget my own resentments,
Granting to pity the whole place of love;
And at that rate I'll serve you. Yet thus far
You must allow the eruption of a heart
So highly injur'd, as to tell you frankly,
'Tis to comply with my own principles
Of honour now, without the least relation
To former passion or to former favours.
ELV. Those you have found a ready way to cancel;
Your sullen silence, during all our journey,

Digitized by Google

Might well have spar'd you these superfluous words;
That had sufficiently instructed me
What power mere appearances have had,
Without examination, to destroy
With an umbrageous nature all that love
Was ever able on the solid'st grounds
To found and to establish. Yet, methinks,
A man that boasts such principles of honour,
And of such force to sway him in his actions,
In spite of all resentments, should reflect,
That honour does oblige to a suspense,
At least of judgment, when surprising chances,
Yet uninquired into, tempt gallant men
To prejudicial thoughts of those with whom
They had settled friendship upon virtuous grounds.
But 'tis from Heav'n, I see, and not from you,
Elvira must expect her vindication;
And until then submit to th' hardest fate
That ever can befall a generous spirit—
Of being oblig'd by him that injures her.

DON F. Nay, speak, Elvira, speak; you've me attentive: [*With a kind of scornful accent.*
It were a wonder worthy of your wit
To make me trust my ears before my eyes.

ELV. Those are the witnesses, indeed, Fernando,
To whose true testimony's false inference
You owe my moderation and my silence,
And that I leave it to the gods and time
To make appear both to the world and you
The maxim false, that still the worst proves true.

Enter FABIO.

FAB. Don Julio is without.

DON F. Wait on him in—— [*Exit* FABIO.
And now, Elvira,
If you'll be pleas'd to rest yourself awhile

Digitized by Google

Within that closet, you may hear what passes
Betwixt my friend and me, until such time
As I by some discourse having prevented
Too great surprise, you shall think fit t' appear.
He is the man (as I have often told you
During my happy days) for whom alone
I have no reserves; and 'tis to his assistance
That I must owe the means of serving you
In the concernments of your safety and honour;
And therefore, madam, 'twill be no offence,
I hope, to trust him with the true occasion
That brings me hither to employ his friendship;
Observing that respect in the relation
Which I shall always pay you.

ELV. [*Retiring as into the closet.*] There needs no management in the relation.
I am indifferent what others think,
Since those who ought t' have thought the best have fail'd me:
Sir, I obey, resign'd up to your conduct,
Till mistress of my own. [*Exit.*

Enter DON JULIO: DON FERNANDO *and he embrace.*

DON J. My joy to have my dear Fernando here
So unexpectedly, as great as 'tis,
Cannot make Julio insensible
Of th' injury you have done him, t' have alighted,
And pass'd a night within Valencia
At any other place than at his house:
Donna Blanca herself will scarce forgive it,
When she shall know it.

DON F. I hope she's well.

DON J. She is so, thanks to heaven:
But I must bid you expect a chiding from her.

DON F. You both might well accuse me of a failure,

Digitized by Google

Did not th' occasion of my coming hither
Bring with it an excuse, alas ! too just,
As you will quickly find.
DON J. Nay, then you raise disquiet ; ease me quickly,
By telling me what 'tis. Of this be sure :
Heart, hand and fortune are entirely yours
At all essays.
DON. F. [*After pausing awhile.*] It is not new t' ye that I was a lover,
Engaged in all the passion that e'er beauty,
In height of its perfection, could produce ;
And that confirm'd by reason from her wit,
Her quality and most unblemish'd conduct ;
Nor was there more to justify my love,
Than to persuade my happiness in her
Just correspondence to it, by all the ways
Of honourable admission, that might serve
To make esteem transcend the pitch of love.
DON J. Of all this I have not only had knowledge,
But great participation in your joys :
Than which I thought nothing more permanent,
Since founded on such virtue as Elvira's.
DON F. Ah, Julio ! how fond a creature is the man
That founds his bliss upon a woman's firmness !
Even that Elvira, when I thought myself
Securest in my happiness, nothing wanting
To make her mine, but those exterior forms,
Without which men of honour, that pretend
In way of marriage, would be loth to find
Greater concession, where the love is greatest ;
As I was sitting with her, late at night,
By usual admittance to her chamber,
As two whose hearts in wedlock-bands were join'd,
And seem'd above all other care, but how

Digitized by Google

Best to disguise things to a wayward father,
Till time and art might compass his consent;
A sudden noise was heard in th' inner room,
Belonging to her chamber: she starts up
In manifest disorder, and runs in,
Desiring me to stay till she had seen
What caus'd it. I, impatient, follow,
As fearing for her, had it been her father:
My head no sooner was within the room,
But straight I spied, behind a curtain shrinking,
A goodly gallant, but not known to me.

DON J. Heavens, what can this be?

DON F. You will not think that there, and at that hour,
I stay'd to ask his name. He ready as I
To make his sword th' expresser of his mind,
We soon determin'd what we sought: I hurt
But slightly in the arm; he fell as slain,
Run through the body: what Elvira did,
My rage allow'd me not to mark: but straight
I got away, more wounded to the heart
Than he I left for dead.

DON J. Prodigious accident! where can it end?

DON F. I got safe home where, carefully conceal'd,
I sought by Fabio's diligence to learn
Who my slain rival was, and what became
Of my unhappy mistress, and what course
Don Pedro de Mendoça took to right
The honour of his house.

DON J. You long'd not more
To know it then, than I do now.

DON F. All could be learn'd was this: that my rival,
Whom I thought dead, was likely to recover,
And that he was a stranger lately come
Up to the court, to follow some pretensions:

Digitized by Google

His name he either learn'd not perfectly,
Or did not well retain. As for Elvira,
That none knew where she was; and that Don Pedro
Had set a stop to prosecution
In any public way, with what reserves
Was not yet known.
DON J. More and more intricate.
DON F. I must now come to that you least look for.
I had but few days pass'd in my concealment
(Resentment and revenge still boiling in me)
When late one evening, as I buried was
In deepest thought, I suddenly was rous'd
By a surprising apparition, Julio—
Elvira in my chamber, speaking to me
With rare assurance thus:—Don Fernando,
I come not here to justify myself,
That were below Elvira towards one,
Whose action in deserting me hath shown
So disobligingly his rash judgment of me.
I come to mind you of honour, not of love:
Mine can protection seek from none but yours.
I've hitherto been shelter'd from the fury
Of my enrag'd father by my cousin Camilla:
But that's no place, you easily may judge,
For longer stay: I do expect from you
To be convey'd where, free from violence
And from new hazards of my wounded fame,
I may attend my righting from the gods.
DON J. Can guilt maintain such confidence in a maid?
Yet how to think her innocent, I know not.
DON F. 'Twere loss of time to dwell on circumstances,
Either of my wonder or reply: in short,
What I found honour dictated, I did.
Within two hours, I put her in a coach,

Digitized by Google

And, favour'd by the night, convey'd her safe
Out of Madrid to Ocana, and thence
In three days hither to Valencia,
The only place where (by your generous aid)
I could have hopes to settle and secure
Her person and her honour. That once done,
Farewell to Spain: I'll to the wars of Milan,
And there soon put a noble end to cares.

DON J. Let us first think how to dispose of her,
Since here you say she is; that done (which presses),
You will have time to weigh all other things.

DON F. My thoughts can pitch upon no other way
Decent or safe for her, but in a convent,
If you have any abbess here to friend.

DON J. I have an aunt, ruling the Ursulines,
With whom I have full power; and she is wise,
In case that course were to be fix'd upon.
But that's not my opinion.

DON F. What can
Your reason be?

DON J. Last remedies, in my judgment,
Are not to be used, till easier have been tried.
Had this strange accident been thoroughly
Examined in all its circumstances,
And that from thence she were convicted guilty,
Nought else were to be thought on but a cloister;
But, as things stand imperfectly discover'd,
Although appearances condemn her strongly,
I cannot yet conclude a person guilty
Of what throughout so contradictory seems
To the whole tenor of her former life,
As well as to her quality and wit;
And therefore let's avoid precipitation,
Let my house be her shelter for awhile;
You know my sister Blanca is discreet,

Digitized by Google

And may be trusted; she shall there be serv'd
By her and me with care and secrecy.
DON F. The offer's kind, but nowise practicable,
And might prove hazardous to Blanca's honour,
When it should once break out (as needs it must)
From servants seeing such a guest so treated.
DON J. That, I confess, I know not how to answer:
But, could Elvira's mind submit unto it,
I could propose a course without objection.
DON F. That she can soon resolve; what is it, Julio?
DON J. A gentlewoman, who waited on my sister,
Hath newly left her service for a husband,
And it is known she means to take another:
I have a ready way to recommend one--
By Violante, of whose love and mine
You are not ignorant, since that ere this
We had been married, had not kindred forc'd us
To wait a dispensation for't from Rome.
Blanca (I am sure) will readily
Embrace any occasion of obliging her.
DON F. That were a right expedient indeed,
Could but Elvira's spirit brook it.

Enter ELVIRA *as from the closet.*

ELV. You have ill measures of Elvira's spirit,
Mistaken Don Fernando. Till Heaven's justice
Shall her entirely to herself restore,
The lowlier shape her fate shall hide her under,
The more 'twill fit her humour.
[DON JULIO *starts back as it were amazed.*

Digitized by Google

DON J. [*Aside.*] O heavens! can guilt with such
perfection dwell,
And put on such assurance? It cannot be.
DON J. [*Addressing himself to her, and beginning; she holding out her hand and interrupting him.*] Madam——
ELV. Spare compliments, and let your actions
speak:
Those may oblige both him and me; your words
Cannot comply with both.
DON J. [*Aside.*] Did ever yet
Such majesty with misery combine,
But in this woman? [*To her.*] Madam, I obey,
And, since you're pleas'd t' approve what I proposed,
No moment shall be lost in th' execution.
[*Exit* JULIO, FERNANDO *accompanying him, and* FABIO.
ELV. O, how unkindly have the heavens
dealt
With womankind above all other creatures!
Our pleasure and our glory to have placed
All on the brink of precipices, such
As every breath can blow the least light of us
Headlong into, past all hopes of redemption:
Nor can our wit or virtue give exemption.
'Tis true, I lov'd; but justified therein
By spotless thoughts and by the object's merit,
I deem'd myself above the reach of malice;
When in an instant, by another's folly,
I am more lost than any by her[1] own.
Accurs'd Don Zancho, what occasion

---

[1] The substitution of *my* for *her*, in opposition to the authority of the old copy, till now made this passage unintelligible.—*Collier.*

Digitized by Google

E'er gave Elvira to thy mad intrusion?
Unless disdain and scorn incentives are
To make men's passions more irregular.
Ah, matchless rigour of the Pow'rs above!
Not only to submit our honour's fate
Unto the vanity of those we love,
But to the rashness even of those we hate. [*Exit.*

Enter DONNA BLANCA *at one door, reading a paper, with great marks of passion and disturbance; and her waiting-woman* FRANCISCA *at another, observing her.*

BLAN. Ah, the traitor!
FRAN. What can this mean? [*Aside.*
BLAN. Was this thy sweet pretension at Madrid,
Drawn out in length, and hind'ring thy return?
Thy fair pretence, thou shouldst have said, false man.
FRAN. For love's sake, madam, what can move you thus?
BLAN. For hate's sake, say, and for revenge, Francisca,
And so thou may'st persuade me to discover
My shame unto thee. Read, read that letter;
'Tis from your favourite Chichon.
[FRANCISCA *takes the letter and reads it.*

"Madam, to make good my engagements of concealing nothing from you during this absence of my master, I am bound to tell you that some ten days since, late at night, he was left for dead, run through the body by another unknown gallant, in the chamber of a famed beauty of the court. Whilst the danger continued, I thought it not fit to let you know either the accident or the occasion; which, now he is recovered, and think-

54

Digitized by Google

ing of his return to Valencia, I must no longer forbear. I hope you will have a care not to undo me for being more faithful to you than to the master you gave me.—Your creature,

"CHICHON."

BLAN. Have I not a worthy gallant, think you?

FRAN. Madam, this comes of being over-curious,
And gaining servants to betray their masters.
How quiet might you have slept, and never felt
What pass'd with your Don Zancho at Madrid!
His pale and dismal looks at his return,
Though caus'd by loss of blood in the hot service
Of other dames, might fairly have been thought
Effects of care and want of sleep for you,
And (taken so) have pass'd for new endearments.
Who ever pry'd into another's letter,
Or slyly hearken'd to another's whisper,
But saw or heard somewhat that did not please him?
'Twas Eve's curiosity undid us all.

BLAN. Away with thy moralities,[1] dull creature!
I'll make thee see, and false Don Zancho feel,
That Blanca's not a dame to be so treated.
But who are those I hear without? Whoe'er
They be, they come at an unwelcome hour.

[FRANCISCA *looks out.*

FRAN. Madam, it is a page of Violante's,
Ushering [in] a handsome maid.

---

[1] In former editions misprinted—

"Away with thy *formalities*, dull creature!"—

which destroys all the spirit of the exclamation.—*Collier.*

Digitized by Google

Enter a Page with a letter, and ELVIRA. *The Page presents the letter to* BLANCA; *she addresses herself to* ELVIRA, *and she throws up her veil.*

BLAN. This letter is in your behalf, fair maid,
[*Having read the letter.*
There's no denying such a recommender;
But such a face as yours is needed none.
Page, tell your lady as much: and you, Silvia,
[*Turning.*
(For so she says you are call'd) be confident
Y' are fallen into the hands of one that knows
How to be kind, more as your friend than mistress,
If your demeanour and good-nature answer
But what your looks do promise.

ELV.[1] Madam, it is the noble charity
Of those you cast upon me, not mine own,
To which I must acknowledge any advantage
I ever can pretend to, more than what
Fair Violante's meditation gives me.

BLAN. She's strangely handsome, and how well she speaks! [*Aside to* FRANCISCA.

FRAN. So, so, methinks: you know new-comers, madam,
Set still the best foot forward.

BLAN. And know as well, that you decaying stagers
Are always jealous of new-comers, young
And handsome.

FRAN. You may be as sharp upon me as you please;
I know to what t' attribute your ill-humour.

---

[1] The old copy inserts in the margin opposite Elvira the words *by the name of Silvia* merely to show more distinctly that Elvira was to pass by that name, which is inserted before what she says.—*Collier.*

Digitized by Google

BLAN. Francisca, entertain her: I'll go write
To Violante, and then rest awhile,
In hopes to ease the headache that hath seiz'd me;
That done, sweet Silvia, we shall talk at leisure.
[*Exit* BLANCA.

FRAN. *Sweet Silvia!* kind epithets are for new faces. [*Aside.*

ELV. Now comes the hard part of my task indeed,
To act the fellow waiting-woman right.
But, since the gods already have conform'd
My mind to my condition, I do hope
They'll teach me words and gestures suitable.
[*Aside.* FRANCISCA *embraces* ELVIRA.

FRAN. Let me embrace thee, my sweet sister, and beg you
To be no niggard of a little kindness:
A very little serves, with such a face,
To gain what heart you please.

ELV. If it can help to gain me yours, I'll take it
For the best office that it ever did me,
And love it much the better.

FRAN. Make much on't then, for that 't has done already.

ELV. If you will have me vain enough to think it,
You must confirm it by the proof of being
My kind instructor how to please my lady,
For I am very raw in service.

FRAN. O, that
I were so too, and had thy youth t' excuse it.
But my experience, sister, shall be yours
By free communication. Come, let's in,
And rest us in my chamber; there I'll give you
First handsel of the frankness of my nature.
[*Exeunt* ELVIRA *and* FRANCISCA.

Digitized by Google

Enter DON ZANCHO *and* CHICHON *his man, in riding-habits.*

DON Z. I must confess, Chichon, the very smell
Of sweet Valencia has e'en reviv'd my spirits.
There's no such pleasure as to suck and breathe
One's native air.
CHI. Chiefly after being in so fair a way,
As you, of never breathing any more!
DON Z. Prythee, no more of that; since I have forgot it,
Methinks thou easily may'st.
CHI. Faith, hardly, sir, whilst still your ghastly face
Doth bear such dismal memorandums of it,
Apter to raise inquisitiveness in those
Knowing nothing of the matter, than t' allay
Remembrance in partakers.
DON Z. Heaven shield us from Donna Blanca's queries!
No matter for the rest.
CHI. You would not wish to find her so unconcern'd;
I'm sure you would not: faith, I long to hear
Th' ingenious defeats, I make account,
You are prepar'd to give to her suspicions.
DON Z. Let me alone for that: but, on thy life,
Be sure that nothing be screw'd out of thee,
Neither by her nor by her sly Francisca.
CHI. Be you, sir, sure, that from your true Chichon
They'll know no more to-day, than yesterday
They did; nor thence more to the world's end,
Than what they did before we left Madrid.
DON Z. Truly, Chichon, we needs must find the means

Digitized by Google

To get a sight of her this very night:
I die, if I should miss it.

CHI. Last week left gasping for Elvira's love.
And scarce reviv'd, when presently expiring
For Blanca's again! I did not think Don Cupid
Had been a merchant of such quick returns.

DON Z. Thou art an ass, and want'st distinctiveness
'Twixt love and love: that was a love of sport
To keep the serious one in breath.

CHI. Faith, sir, I must confess my ignorance,
That when I saw you grovelling in your blood,
I thought your love had been in sober sadness.

DON Z. Prythee, leave fooling, and let's carefully
Gain the back way into my house unseen,
That none may know of my return, till Blanca
Find me at her feet. And be you industrious
T' observe Don Julio's going forth this evening:
Doubtless he'll keep his usual hours abroad
At Violante's, since not married yet.

CHI. I shall observe your orders punctually.
[*Exeunt.*

Enter DON JULIO, *and knocks as at* BLANCA'S *door.*

DON J. What, sister, at your siesta[1] already? if so,
You must have patience to be wak'd out of it,
For I have news to tell you.

Enter BLANCA.

BLAN. No, brother, I was much more pleasingly

[1] The heat of the day, from noon forwards. So called from Hora Sexta, noonday, a time when the Spanish ladies retire to sleep.

Digitized by Google

Employ'd—in serving you; that is, making
My court to Violante by receiving
To wait upon me, in Lucilla's place,
A gentlewoman of her recommending.
DON J. Where is she? let me see her.
BLAN. 'Twere not safe:
She is too handsome. You think now I jest?
But, without raillery, she is so lovely,
That, were not Violante very assur'd
Of her own beauty and the strong ideas
That still upholds within you, one might question
Her wit to have set her in her gallant's way.
But what's the news you mean?
DON J. That our dear friend and kinsman, Don Fernando,
Is come to town, and going for Italy:
The secret of it doth so much import him,
It forc'd him to forbear alighting here,
And lodging with us, as he us'd to do;
But yet he says, nothing shall hinder him
From waiting on you in the dusk of th' evening:
I hope you'll find wherewith to regale[1] him.
BLAN. As well as you have drain'd my cabinets
Of late in presents to your mistress, some
Perfumes will yet be found, such as at Rome
Itself shall not disgrace Valencia.
DON J. I know your humour, and that the best present
Can be given you is to give you the occasion
Of presenting; but I am come in now
Only to advertise you, and must be gone;
Yet not, I hope, without a sight of one
So recommended and commended so.

---

[1] It is singular that in the old copy the author should here have inserted the Spanish verb *regalar* instead of the English one.—*Collier.*

Digitized by Google

BLAN. I should have thought you strangely chang'd in humour,
Should you have gone away so uncuriously.
Francisca, ho! [*She knocks.*

Enter FRANCISCA.

FRAN. What please you, madam?
FRAN. Prythee, tell Silvia I would speak with her. [*Exit* FRANCISCA.
Well, clear your eyes, and say I have no skill,
If she appears not t' ye exceeding handsome.

Enter FRANCISCA *with* ELVIRA. DON JULIO *salutes her.*

DON J. Welcome, fair maid, into this family,
Where, whilst you take a servant's name upon you,
To do my sister honour, you must allow
Its master to be yours, and that by strongest ties,
Knowing who plac'd you here, and having eyes.
ELV. I wish my service, sir, to her and you
May merit such a happy introduction.
DON J. Farewell, sister, till anon: accompanied
As now you are, I think you'll miss me little.
[*Exit* JULIO.
BLAN. I must confess, I ne'er could better spare you
Than at this time, but not for any reason
That you, I hope, can guess at.
Francisca, you and Silvia may retire,
[*Exeunt* ELVIRA *and* FRANCISCA.
And entertain yourselves: I'll to my closet,
And try to rest, or (rather) to vent freely
My restless thoughts. O, the self-torturing part
[*Aside.*
To force complaisance from a jealous heart! [*Exit.*

Digitized by Google

ACT II.

Scene changes to the room in the inn. Enter DON JULIO *and* DON FERNANDO.

DON J. Albricias,[1] friend, for the good news I bring you:
All has fallen out as well as we could wish.
As to Elvira's settling with my sister,
So lucky a success in our first aims
Concerning her, I trust, does bode good fortune
Beyond our hopes; yet, in the farther progress
Of this affair——

DON F. There's no such thing in nature left as *better*,
Julio; the worst proves always true with me.
Yet prythee, tell, how does that noble beauty
(Wherein high quality is so richly stamp'd)
Comport her servile metamorphosis?

DON J. As one whose body, as divine as 'tis,
Seems bound to obey exactly such a mind,
And gently take whate'er shape that imposes.

DON F. Ah, let us mention her no more, my Julio!
Ideas flow upon me too abstracted
From her unfaithfulness, and may corrupt
The firmest reason. Above all, be sure
I do not see her so transform'd, lest that
Transform me too: I'll rather pass with Blanca
Both for unkind and rude, and leave Valencia
Without seeing her.

DON J. Leave that to me, Fernando;
But if you intend the honour to my sister,
It will be time: the night draws on apace.

---

[1] See an early note to "The Adventures of Five Hours" in the present volume.

Digitized by Google

DON F. Come, let's begone then.

[*As they are going out, enter* FABIO *hastily.*

FAB. Stay, sir, for heaven's sake, stay——

DON F. Why, what's the matter?

FAB. That will surprise you both, as much as me.

Don Pedro de Mendoça is below,
Newly alighted.

DON F. Ha! What say'st thou, sirrah?
Elvira's father?

FAB. Sir, the very same;
And he had scarcely set one foot to ground
When he inquired, Where lives Don Julio Rocca?

DON J. For my house, Fabio? It cannot be;
I never knew the man.

DON F. The thing does speak itself and my hard fate.
What else can bring him hither but pursuit
Of me and of his daughter, having learn'd
The way we took? and what's so easy, Julio,
Here at Valencia, as to know our friendship;
And then of consequence, your house to be
My likeliest retreat?

DON J. 'Tis surely so;
Let us apply our thoughts to best preventives.

DON F. Whilst we retire into the inner room
T' advise together, Fabio, be you sure
(Since unknown to him) to observe his motions.

[*Exeunt omnes.*

Scene changes to the prospect of Valencia. Enter DON ZANCHO *and* CHICHON, *as in the street near* DON JULIO'S *house.*

DON Z. Newly gone out, say you?
That is as lucky as we could have wish'd:

Digitized by Google

And see but how invitingly the door
Stands open still!
CHI. An open door may lead to a face of wood;
[*Aside to* DON ZANCHO.
But mean you, sir, to go abruptly in
Without more ceremony?
DON Z. Surprise redoubles (fool) the joys of lovers.
But stay, Chichon, let's walk aside awhile,
Till yonder coach be past. [*Exeunt.*

Scene changes to the room in the inn. Enter DON JULIO *and* DON FERNANDO.

DON J. There's no safety in any other way.
You must not stir from hence, until w' have got
Some farther light what course he means to steer.
Let Fabio be vigilant: I'll get home
Down that back-stairs, and take such order there
Not to be found, in case he come to inquire,
As for this night at least shall break his measures;
And in the morning we'll resolve together,
Whether you ought to quit Valencia or no.
DON F. Farewell, then, for to-night: I'll be alert.
But see y' excuse me fairly to my cousin.
[*Exeunt.*

Scene changes to BLANCA'S *antechamber. Enter* DONNA BLANCA *and* FRANCISCA.

BLAN. As well as Silvia pleases me, Francisca,
I'm glad at present that she is not well,
She would constrain me else: she has wit enough
To descant on my humour, and from thence
To make perhaps discoveries, not fit
For such new-comers.
FRAN. If she has wit, she keep it to herself,

Digitized by Google

At least from me: of pride and melancholy
I see good store.

BLAN. Still envious and detracting?

Enter DON ZANCHO *and* CHICHON.

FRAN. See who comes there, madam, to stop your mouth!

[DONNA BLANCA *casting an eye that way, and* CHICHON *clinging up close behind his master, and making a mouth.*

CHI. Sh' has spied us, and it thickens in the clear.
I fear a storm: goes not your heart pit-a-pat?

[*To his master, aside.*

BLAN. Ah, the bold traitor!—but I must dissemble,
And give his impudence a little line,
The better to confound him.

[*Advancing to him, and as it were embracing him with an affected cheerfulness.*

Welcome as unexpected, my Don Zancho.

DON. Z. Nay, then we are safe, Chichon.

[*Aside to* CHICHON.

Incomparable maid! Heaven bless those eyes,
From which I find a new life springing in me;
Having so long been banish'd from their rays,
How dark the court appear'd to me without them;
Could it have kept me from their influence,
As from their light, I had expir'd long since.

BLAN. Y' express your love now in so courtly a style,
I fear you have acted it in earnest there,
And but rehearse to me your country mistress.

DON Z. Ah, let Chichon but tell you how he hath seen me
During my absence from you.

Digitized by Google

CHI. I vow I have seen him even dead for love.
You might have found it in his very looks,
Before you brought the blood into his cheeks.
BLAN. E'en dead (you say) for love! but say of whom?
DON Z. Can Blanca ask a question so injurious,
As well to her own perfections as my faith?
BLAN. I can hold no longer.
[*Aside to* FRANCISCA.
My faithful lover, then it is not you——
[*To him scornfully.*
CHI. She changes tone: I like not, faith, the key,
The music will be jarring. [*Aside to his master.*
BLAN. 'Tis not then you, Don Zancho, who, having chang'd
His suit at court into a love pretension,
And his concurrents into a gallant rival,
Fell by his hand, a bloody sacrifice
At his fair mistress' feet: who was it, then?
[DON ZANCHO *stands awhile as amazed, with folded arms.* CHICHON *behind his master, holding up his hands, and making a pitiful face;* FRANCISCA *steals to him, and holding up her hand threateningly—*
FRAN. A blab, Chichon, a pick-thank, peaching varlet!
Ne'er think to look me in the face again.
[*Aside to* CHICHON.
CHI. In what part shall I look thee, hast thou a worse?
It is the devil has discover'd it—
Some witch dwells here: I've long suspected thee.
[*Aside to* FRANCISCA.
FRAN. I never more shall think thee worth my charms.

Digitized by Google

BLAN. What, struck dumb with guilt? perfidious man!
That happens most to the most impudent,
When once detected. Well, get thee hence,
And see thou ne'er presum'st to come again
Within these walls, or I shall let thee see
'Tis not at court alone, where hands are found
To let such madmen blood.

[*She turns as going away, and* DON ZANCHO *holds her gently by the gown.*

DON Z. Give me but hearing, madam, and then if——

DON J. What, ho! no lights below-stairs?

[*Aloud, as below.*

FRAN. O heavens! madam, hear you not your brother?
Into the chamber quickly, and let them
Retire behind that hanging; there's a place,
Where usually we throw neglected things.
I'll take the lights and meet him: certainly
His stay will not be long from Violante
At this time of the night; besides, you know,
He never was suspicious.

[DON ZANCHO *and* CHICHON *go behind the hanging, and* DONNA BLANCA, *retiring to her chamber, says—*

Capricious fate! must I who, whilst I lov'd him,
Ne'er met with checking accident, fall now
Into extremest hazards for a man,
Whom I begin to hate?

[*Exit, and* FRANCISCA *at another door with the lights.*

FRANCISCA *re-enters with* DON JULIO.

DON J. Where's my sister?

FRAN. In her chamber, sir,
Not very well; she's taken with a megrim.

Digitized by Google

DON J. Light me in to her.

[*Exit* DON JULIO, FRANCISCA *lighting him with one of the lights.* CHICHON *peeping out from behind the hangings.*

CHI. If this be Cupid's prison, 'tis no sweet one.
Here are no chains of roses; yet I think
Y' had rather b' in 't than in Elvira's chamber,
As gay and as perfum'd as 'twas.

DON Z. Hold your peace, puppy; is this a time for fooling?

Enter FRANCISCA, *and* CHICHON *starts back.*

FRAN. [*Coming to the hanging.*] Chichon, look out; you may, the coast is clear.

[CHICHON *looks out.*

Could I my lady's near concerns but sever
From yours in this occasion, both of you
Should dearly pay your falsehood.

CHI. You are jealous too, I see; but help us out
This once, and if you catch me here again,
Let Chichon pay for all, faithful Chichon.

FRAN. Y' are both too lucky in the likelihood
Of getting off so soon. Stay but a moment,
Whilst I go down to see the wicket open,
And see that there be nobody in the way.

[*Exit* FRANCISCA.

CHI. It is a cunning drab, and knows her trade.

Re-enter FRANCISCA, *and comes to the hanging.*

FRAN. There's now some witch o' th' wing indeed, Chichon,
Julio, that never till this night forbore
To go to Violante's, ere he slept,
And pass some hours there—Julio, who never
Inquired after the shutting of a door,

Digitized by Google

Hath lock'd the gate himself at 's coming in,
And bid a servant wait below till midnight,
With charge to say to any that should knock
And ask for him, that he's gone sick to bed!
What it can mean, I know not.

CHI. I would I did not; but I have too true
An almanac in my bones foretells a beating
Far surer than foul weather. He has us, faith,
Fast in Lob's-pound.[1] Heaven send him a light hand,
To whom my fustigation shall belong:
As for my master, he may have the honour
To be rebuk'd at sharp.

FRAN. May terror rack this varlet; but for you, sir,
Be not dismay'd, the hazard's not so great.
Yonder balcony, at farther end o' th' room.
Opens into the street, and the descent is
Little beyond your height, hung by the arms:
When Julio is asleep, I shall not fail
To come and let you out; I keep the key.
In the meanwhile, you must have patience.

CHI. It were a nasty hole to stay in long.
Did not my fear correct its evil savour. [*Aside.*
Dame, you say well for him, with whom I think
Y' have measur'd length, you speak so punctually
Of his dimensions; but I see no care
For me, your pretty, not your proper man,
Who does abhor feats of activity. [*To her.*

FRAN. I'll help you—with a halter!

[*Exit* FRANCISCA, *and* CHICHON *retires.*

---

[1] [*i.e.*, In a snare. See Hazlitt's "Proverbs," 1869, p. 200, where it is shown that the earlier phrase is *Cob's pound.*]

Digitized by Google

Scene changes to BLANCA'S *Bedchamber. Enter* BLANCA *and* ELVIRA; *and soon after* FRANCISCA, *as in* BLANCA'S *chamber, she sitting at her toilet undressing.*

BLAN. My brother told me I should see him again,
Before he went to rest.
FRAN. I think I hear him coming.
BLAN. He'll not stay long, I hope; for I am on thorns
Till I know they are out. I' th' meanwhile.
We must persuade Silvia to go to bed,
Lest some odd chance should raise suspicion in her,
Before I know her fitness for such trusts.

Enter DON JULIO. ELVIRA *offers to unpin her gorget.*

BLAN. I prythee, Silvia, leave, and get thee gone
To bed: you ha'n't been well, nor are not yet;
Your heavy eyes betray indisposition.
ELV. Good madam, suffer me; 'twill make me well
To do you service.
BLAN. Brother, I ask your help; [*To Julio.*
Take Silvia hence, and see her in her chamber.
This night she must be treated as a stranger,
And you must do the honour of your house.
[JULIO *goes to* ELVIRA, *and taking her by the hand, leads her away.*
ELV. Since you will not let me begin to serve,
I will begin to obey. [*Making a low curtsey.*
FRAN. Quaint, in good faith! [*Bridling.*
DON J. My sister's kinder than she thinks, to give me [*To* ELVIRA, *as he leads her.*
This opportunity of telling Silvia

Digitized by Google

How absolutely mistress in this place
Elvira is.

[FRANCISCA *whispers all this while with* BLANCA.

ELV. Good sir, forget that name.

[*Exeunt* JULIO *and* ELVIRA.

BLAN. If that be so, what shall we do, Francisca?
What way to get them out?

FRAN. It is a thing so unusual with him,
It raises ominous thoughts, else I make sure
To get them off as well as you can wish;
But, if already awaken'd by suspicion,
Nothing can then be sure.

BLAN. O, fear not that: what you have seen him do
Of unaccustom'd, I dare say relates
To quite another business.

FRAN. Then set your heart at rest from all disturbance
Arising from this accident.

BLAN. If you are certain
To get them off so clear from observation,
'Twill out of doubt be best: I'll tell my brother
Don Zancho is return'd, and had call'd here
This evening to have seen him; for my fears
Sprang only from the hour and the surprise,
Warm'd as he then had found me; since you know
How little apt he is to jealousy.

FRAN. Madam, y' have reason; that will make all sure,
In case he should be told of's being here;
The time of's stay can hardly have been noted.

Enter DON JULIO.

DON J. As an obedient brother, I have perform'd
What you commanded me.

Digitized by Google

BLAN. A hard injunction from a cruel sister,
To wait upon a handsome maid to her chamber!
DON J. You see I've not abused your indulgence
By staying long; nor can I stay indeed
With you, I must be abroad so early
To-morrow morning; therefore, dear, good night.
BLAN. Stay, brother, stay; I had forgot to tell you [*As he is going.*
Don Zancho de Moneçes is return'd,
And call'd this evening here t' have kiss'd your hands.
Francisca spake with him.
DON J. I hope he's come successful in his suit:
To-morrow I'll go see him. [*Exit* DON JULIO.
BLAN. You see he's free from umbrage on that subject.
FRAN. I see all's well, and may he sleep profoundly—
The sooner, madam, you are abed the better.
BLAN. Would once my fears were over, that my rage
Might have its course.
FRAN. I shall not stop it,
But after it has had its full career
'Twill pause, I hope, and reason find an ear.
[*Exeunt.*

Scene changes to the room in the inn. *Enter* DON FERNANDO *and* FABIO.

DON F. Is he gone out?
FAB. No, sir, not as yet;
But seeing the servant he had sent abroad
Newly return'd, I listen'd at his door,
And heard him plainly give him this account—

Digitized by Google

That he had found Don Julio Rocca's house,
And having knock'd a good while at the door,
Answer was made him without opening it,
Don Julio's not at home; whereat Don Pedro
Impatient rose, and, calling for his cloak
And sword, he swore he'd rather wait himself
Till midnight at his door, than lose a night
In such a pressing business.—This I thought
Fit to acquaint you with, and that he spake
Doubtfully of his returning to lodge here.

DON F. You have done well, but must do better yet,
In following him, and being sure to lose
No circumstance of what he does.

FAB. To dog him possibly might be observ'd,
This moonlight, by his servant; but since, sir,
We're certain whither he goes, my best course
(I think) will be to go out the back-way,
And place myself beforehand in some porch
Near Julio's house, where I may see and hear
What passes, and then do as I shall see cause.

DON F. 'Tis not ill thought on; but how late soever
Your return be, I shall expect to see you,
Before we go to bed.

FAB. I shall not fail. [*Exeunt.*

Scene changes to DONNA BLANCA'S *antechamber.* *Enter* FRANCISCA, *and goes to the hanging where* DON ZANCHO *and* CHICHON *are hid.*

FRAN. Ho! trusty servant with his faithful master!
Come out; the balcony's open, lose no time,
Julio's abed, and fast asleep ere this—

Digitized by Google

There's nobody in the street, it is so light
One may discover a mile; therefore be quick.

[DON ZANCHO *and* CHICHON *come out from behind the hanging, and follow her, as leading to the balcony.* [*Exeunt.*

[*And soon after* DON ZANCHO *and* CHICHON *appear as in the balcony, and* FRANCISCA'S *head as peeping out of the door into it.*

Scene changes to the prospect of Valencia. Enter FABIO *as in the street, and settling himself in a porch.*

FAB. Here is a porch, as if 'twere built on purpose.

[FABIO, *looking up, perceives them in the balcony.*

Ha! here's a vision that I little dreamt of.
Stand close, Fabio, and mum!

[DON ZANCHO *gets over the balcony, and letting himself down at arm's length, leaps gently into the street.* CHICHON *offers at the like, but takes a fall as he lights, and (rising) counterfeits lameness.* FRANCISCA *retires, and locks the balcony.*

CHI. Curse on the drab, I think I've broke my leg.

FAB. The moon has turn'd my brains, or I have seen
That person somewhere, and that very lately—

[*He pauses, scratching his head.*

But, sure, I'm mad to think it can be he.

[*Exeunt* DON ZANCHO *and* CHICHON, *as turning down the next street.*

Digitized by Google

Enter DON PEDRO *and* FULVIO.

FAB. O, now I see my men.
[*Retiring into the porch.*
DON P. This is the street, you say; which is the house?
FULV. That fair one, over against the monastery.
Shall I go knock?
DON P. What else?
[FULVIO *knocks at* DON JULIO'S *door, and nobody answers.*
DON P. Knock harder.
[*He knocks again, and one asks as from within,* Who's there?
DON P. A stranger, who must needs speak with Don Julio,
Although unknown to him: my business presses.
FROM WITHIN. Whoe'er you be, and whatsoe'er your business,
You must have patience till to-morrow, sir.
Don Julio went sick to bed, and I dare not
Wake him.
DON P. Fortune takes pleasure, sure, in disappointing,
When men are press'd with most impatience;
But, since there is no remedy, guide, Fulvio,
Unto the lodging y' have provided for me;
I hope 'tis near at hand.
FULV. Not above three doors from Don Julio's,
There, where it makes the corner of the street.
[*Pointing.*
FAB. Here I must follow, till I've harbour'd them.
[*Exeunt;* FABIO *stealing after them.*

Digitized by Google

Scene changes to a room in the inn. Enter DON FERNANDO *alone, as in his chamber.*

DON F. It cannot now be long, ere Fabio come,
And 'twere in vain to go to bed before,
For rest, I'm sure, I should not—
[*He walks about the room pensively.*
Ah, my Elvira!—Mine? thou dost infect
My very words with falsehood, when I name thee.
Did ever mistress make a lover pay
So dear as I for the short bliss she gave?
What now I suffer in exchange of that,
May make mankind afraid of joys excessive.
But here he comes—

Enter FABIO.

Have you learn'd anything
That's worth the knowing? [*To* FABIO.
FAB. Two things I think considerable, sir:
The one, that Julio hath found means to gain
This night to cast your business in, without
Admitting of Don Pedro, whose pressures
Might have been troublesome, and urged you
To hasty resolutions; whereas now
You've time to take your measures. The other, sir,
Is that Don Pedro lodges here no more,
And consequently hath eas'd you of constraint,
Whilst you rest here, and left the way more free
For intercourse betwixt Don Julio and you.
This more I must observe t' ye, that Don Pedro
Took special care to have his lodging near
Don Julio's house, whereby 'tis evident,
That there he makes account his business lies.
DON F. The news you bring me hath been worth your pains,
And thanks t' ye for 't. I suppose that is all?

Digitized by Google

FAB. Perhaps there's something else.
DON F. Say, Fabio, what is't?
FAB. Pray, sir, allow me
This night to think, whether it be fit or no
To tell it you; since 'tis a thing relates not,
As I conceive, to you nor to your business;
And yet, in the concernments of another,
May trouble you.
DON F. Be not o'erwise, I prythee. I will know
What 'tis, since you have raised curiosity
By such grimaces.
FAB. You must be obey'd; but pray remember, sir,
If afterwards I am call'd fool for my pains,
Who made me so: but since I do not only
Expect the fool, but ready to be thought
A madman too, ere I have done my story,
In this I will be wilful, not to tell it
Till y' are abed, that I may run away—
So if you long to hear it, hasten thither.
[*Exit* FABIO, *as to the chamber within.*
DON F. Content, i'faith; you ask no great compliance. [*Exit.*

Scene changes to the room in ZANCHO'S *house. Enter* DON ZANCHO; *and* CHICHON, *as at home, halting.*

DON Z. We're well come off from danger; would we were
But half as well from Blanca's jealousy.
CHI. Speak for yourself; I never came off worse.
A pox upon your venery, it has made me
Another Vulcan. [*He halts about, grumbling.*
DON Z. Go, rest to-night, or grumble, as you please;

Digitized by Google

But do not think limping will serve your turn
To-morrow: faith, I'll make you stir your stumps.
Think you a lover of my temper likely
To sit down by it so?

CHI. I'm sure I am only fit to sit down by it,
Since I can hardly stand.

[*He makes as if he would sit down, and* DON ZANCHO *giving him a kick on the breech.*

DON Z. Coxcomb, come away.

CHI. To-night's to-night: to-morrow's a new day.[1] [*Exeunt.*

ACT III.

Enter DON FERNANDO *and* FABIO, *as in the room in the inn.*

DON F. Are all things ready, Fabio, in case
Don Julio, when he comes, conclude with me
That I should be gone presently?

FAB. Horses stand ready for you at the post-house.

DON F. 'Tis well; attend without.

[*Exit* FABIO.

Enter DON JULIO.

I see you sleep not in your friend's concerns,
You are so early; and since so, the sooner
We fix a resolution, certainly
'Twill be the better. 'Twas no small point gain'd,
To frustrate for a night Don Pedro's aims,
As Fabio tells me you have done; for he
Ne'er quitted him an inch last night, until
He had harboured him.

DON J. What, has he left his lodging?

[1] [A common proverbial expression.]

Digitized by Google

DON F. That he has,
And (which is more considerable) taken one
Close by your house, which evidences clearly,
Where his suspicions lie: that being so,
I'm confident you'll be of my opinion
For my dislodging from Valencia
Immediately; for, Elvira being
Already so well settled, nothing can
So much endanger her discovery
As my remaining longer in these parts.
DON J. Were I but free as yesterday, Fernando,
To think of nothing but Elvira and your
Concernments, I must confess your absence
From hence were to be wish'd: but, cousin,
There's fallen out this very night a thing,
Which shows how little I beholden am
To fortune that, having so newly lent me
The means of serving handsomely my friend,
Calls back the debt already, and makes me
As needing of your aid, as you of mine.
DON. F. Ho! Fabio, forbid the horses presently.
[FABIO *looks in.*
The least appearance, Julio, of my being
[*To* JULIO.
Useful to you by staying puts an end
To all deliberation for myself;
Say, what's the accident? you have me ready.
DON J. Such and of such a nature, my Fernando,
That, as to be communicated to none
But you (another self), so I am sure
It will astonish you with the rehearsal.
Ah! could you think it possible, that Blanca
Should raise disturbance in the heart of Julio,
As to the honour of his family?
DON F. Heavens forbid!
DON J. Never was brother so secure as I,
Or so unalterable in his persuasion,

Digitized by Google

Of having a sister of unmatch'd discretion;
Nor e'er could less than evidence itself
Have shaken such a confidence.
DON F. For God's sake, Julio,
Hold me no longer in such pain of mind.
But, sure, we shall be better there within,
Free from the noise of the street.
DON J. You say well. [*Exit* JULIO.
DON F. [*As he follows him, aside.*] This is what
Fabio told me he saw last night,
Discovered by some accident to Julio;
It can be nothing else. O women, women!
[*Exit* FERNANDO.

Enter DON PEDRO *and* FULVIO, *as in their new lodgings.*

DON P. I am glad you have lighted on so fit a place
For all I intend, as this is, Fulvio.
I shall repair the last night's disappointment
By early care this morning: in the meanwhile,
Fail not of your part in the discovery
Where my enemy dwells, and i' th' observation
Of all his motions; that's the important part.
FULV. Rely, sir, on my care and vigilance.
[*Exeunt* DON PEDRO *and* FULVIO.

Enter DON JULIO *and* DON FERNANDO, *as in the outward room of the inn.*

DON J. It is a quarter
Always reserv'd to my own privacy.
There lying unsuspected, if, whilst I
Continue late abroad, under pretence
Of being at Violante's, you keep watch
Carefully within, he cannot 'scape us:

Digitized by Google

So you be sure to observe punctually
The sign agreed, and bolting of the doors,
When he is once within.

DON F. Since you have so resolv'd and laid your business,
Dispose of me, and lead the way, whilst I
Give Fabio his instruction what to do
During my absence.

[*Exeunt* FERNANDO *and* JULIO.

Enter DONNA BLANCA *and* FRANCISCA, *as in* BLANCA'S *antechamber.*

FRAN. Since the black cloud, that threaten'd you last night
With such a storm, is luckily blown over
Without a sprinkling, I hope, madam, you
Will imitate the Fates, and grow serene
From all those clouds which so much threaten'd others.

BLAN. Ah! Francisca, canst thou—

[*She stops, seeing* ELVIRA *coming.*

Enter ELVIRA, *with a fine basin of flowers.*

But here's Silvia.
O, the sharp thorns she brings me at this time,
With flowers in her hand, by the constraint
Her presence gives me! [*Aside.*

ELV. Madam, I wish the 'ranging of these flowers
May be to your mind; but alas, I fear
I am too dull for works of fancy.

BLAN. 'Tis me you find too dull to relish them:
Anon they may be welcomer.

ELV. I'll wait that happy hour.
[*Aside.*] She's in ill humour. [*Exit* ELVIRA.

Digitized by Google

BLAN. But tell me now, didst ever see, Francisca,
So false and bold a creature? The impudence
He had to clothe his treachery with new courtships,
Provokes me most of all.
FRAN. Last night indeed, incens'd as you were, madam,
I fain would know what air so soft and gentle
He could have breath'd, would not have blown the flame
Higher and higher; but methinks your pillow
Should in so many hours have had some power
T' allay and mollify: I then complied
(He present) with your anger; but now, madam,
You must allow me to speak reason t' you
In his behalf, before you go too far,
And put things in your passion past recal,
Which, that once over, you would give your life
To have again.
BLAN. Pray, think me not so tame.
FRAN. So tame, say you? I think you wild, I swear,
To take so much to heart, what at the most
Deserves but some such sparkling brisk resentment,
As, once flash'd out in a few choleric words,
Ought to expire in a next visit's coyness.
BLAN. Make you so slight of infidelity?
FRAN. Cupid forbid! I'd have men true to love;
But I'd have women, too, true to themselves,
And not rebuke their gallants by requiring
More than the nature of frail flesh will bear.
I'd have men true as steel; but steel, you know,
(The purest and best-polish'd steel) will ply,
Urg'd from its rectitude, forsooth; but then
With a smart spring comes to its place again.

Digitized by Google

BLAN. Come, leave your fooling, and speak soberly.

FRAN. Why then, in sober sadness, you're i' th' wrong—
I do not say in being angry with him,
And nettled at the thing—that's natural.
We love no partners, even in what we know
We cannot keep all to ourselves: but, madam,
To think the worse of him for it: or resolve
A breach of friendship for a slight excursion,
That were a greater fault than his, who has
For one excuse long absence; and in truth
Another you'd be sorry he wanted—youth.

BLAN. You talk as if——

FRAN. [*interrupting her.*] Stay, madam, I beseech you,
And let me make an end: I have not yet
Touch'd the main point in his excuse, a suit
At court, enough I trow for any dog-trick.

BLAN. How like a goose you talk! a court pretension!
What has that to do, one way or other,
With his faith to me?

FRAN. So one, displeased to find his crawfishes
Shrivell'd within and empty, said to his cook
(Who laid the fault upon the wane o' th' moon):
What has the moon to do with crawfishes?
Marry, she has, 'tis she that governs shell-fish;
And 'tis as true, in courts that love rules business
By as preposterous an influence.

BLAN. I prythee, make an end, or come to th' point.

FRAN. Why, then, I'll tell you: you may believe me
(Having been train'd up in my youth, you know,
In the best school to learn court mysteries,
An aunt of mine being mother of the maids),

Digitized by Google

Love holds the rudder, and steers in all courts.
How oft, when great affairs perplex the brains
Of mighty politicians to conjecture,
From whence sprung such designs, such revolutions:
Such exaltations, madam, such depressions,
Against the rules of their mysterious art;
And when, as in surprising works of nature,
Reason's confounded, men cry those are secrets
Of the high pow'rs above, that govern all
Grave lookers on, stroking their beards, would say,
What a transcendent fetch of state is this!
These are the things that wisdom hides and hatches
Under black cap of weighty jobbernowl;
I mean Count Olivarez. All the while,
We female Machiavels would smile to think,
How closely lurking lay the nick of all
Under our daughter Doll's white petticoat.

BLAN. All this, I grant you, may be true, and yet
Ne'er make a jot for his excuse, Francisca.
His suit had no relation to such matters.

FRAN. Whate'er the thing be, 'tis all one. D' you think
Suits, be they what they will, can be obtain'd
By such as pass for fops, as all young men
Without a mistress or a confidant
Are sure to do there? A sharp-pointed hat
(Now that you see the gallants all flat-headed)
Appears not so ridiculous as a younker
Without a love-intrigue to introduce
And sparkify him there. Madam, in short,
Allow me once to be sententious:
It is a thing that always was, and is,
And ever will be, true to the world's end:
That, as in courts of justice, none can carry
On business well without a procurator,

Digitized by Google

So none in princes' courts their suits make surer,
Than those that work them by the best procurer.
BLAN. [*Smiling a little.*] Well, hast done, Francisca?
FRAN. Madam, I have.
BLAN. Then letting pass
Thy fine reflections politic, now vented
To shew thy skill in courts, I'll tell thee freely,
I'm not transported in my jealousy
So far beyond the bounds of reason, as
Not to know well the difference betwixt
Such escapades of youth, as only spring
From warmth of blood or gales of vanity,
And such engagements as do carry with them
Dishonour unto those, whose quality
And love leave little to the serious part,
Once embark'd by them in a gallantry.
FRAN. I see the clouds disperse. There's no such art
Of compassing one's ends with those above us,
As that of working them into good humour
By things brought in by the by. [*Aside.*
Why, surely, madam, unless anger lend you
Its spectacles to see things, I cannot think
You judge Don Zancho's fault to be any other
Than of the first kind, so well stated by you.
BLAN. Francisca, were I otherwise persuaded,
I am not of an humour that could suffer
Such parleys for him, much less intercession;
But since, upon reflection, I find cause
To think what he has done a sally only
Of youth and vanity, when I shall find him
Sufficiently mortified, I may pardon him.
FRAN. Heavens bless so sweet a temper! but, madam,
Have a care, I beseech you, of one thing.
BLAN. What's that?

Digitized by Google

FRAN. That, whilst your pride of heart
Prolongs his readmission, his despair
Urge him not to some precipitate attempt
That may expose your honour, safe as yet.
You see what danger the last night's distemper
Had like t' have brought you into: transported lovers,
Like angels fallen from their bliss, grow devils.
BLAN. What, would you have me appear so flexible?
Is't not enough
I tell you I may pardon him in due time?
FRAN. Good madam, be advis'd: I do not press you
For his sake, but your own. Trust my experience,
To women nought's so fatal as suspense;
Whose smartest actions ne'er did cast such blot
On honour as this—shall I? shall I not?
BLAN. I'd rather die, than have him think me easy.
FRAN. Your spirit never can be liable
To that suspicion. Madam, leave to me
The conduct of this matter, I beseech you:
If, ere you sleep, you do not see the gallant
Sufficiently humbled at your feet,
Ne'er trust Francisca more.
BLAN. You are so troublesome: do what you will.
[BLANCA *turns away, and exit as into her closet.*
FRAN. What, gone away?
I'll do what she would have, but dares not say. [*Exit.*

Enter DON JULIO *and* ELVIRA, *as in* BLANCA'S *chamber.*

DON J. Where's my sister, Silvia?
[*Looking about him.*

Digitized by Google

ELV. In her closet, sir:
As yet not ready.
DON J. And where's Francisca?
ELV. She's with her, dressing her.
DON J. Why then, Elvira,
Let me not lose this opportunity
Of telling you how sad a man I am
To see you in this posture, and to assure you
How gladly I would lay down life and fortune
To serve you in Don Fernando's absence.
ELV. Your generosity I make no doubt of:
But is Fernando gone?
DON J. I cannot say
That he is gone; for he was not himself,
With the thought of leaving you, and yet less
Himself, whene'er he thought of staying near you;
Tortur'd by two such contrary passions,
As love and sharp resentment.
ELV. He is gone then?—— [*She pauses.*
Ah, generous Don Julio,
[*Putting her handkerchief to her eyes.*
You needs must be indulgent to a weakness
Which, whilst that he was present, indignation,
And a just sense of what I am, had pow'r
To keep within myself; but now I find
That check remov'd, nature will have its tribute,
And you must pardon my withdrawing, where
[*She weeps.*
Such grief may pay it with unwitness'd tears.
[*Exit* ELVIRA.
DON J. Can a demeanour so compos'd, so noble,
And yet so tender, want true innocence?
It cannot be. It grieves my heart, I swear,
T' have given her new affliction; but the secret
Of Don Fernando's close concealment here
Is so important, it necessitated

Digitized by Google

My saying what I did, since secrets are
Ever kept best by those that know them least.

Enter BLANCA *and* FRANCISCA.

Now, high dissimulation play, thy part! [*Aside.*
Good morrow, sister, have you rested well?
And do you rise serene, as does the sun?
Free from distemper, as the day from clouds?
Your looks persuade it me, they are so clear
And fresh this morning.

BLAN. The pleasure of seeing you puts life into them,
Else they'd be dull enough, this ugly headache
Having tormented me all night. You might
Have heard me call Francisca up at midnight.

FRAN. That was well thought on, for 'tis possible
He may have heard some noise. [*Aside.*

DON J. How cunning she is! [*Aside.*
Faith, now you put me in mind of it (I think)
'Twixt sleep and waking, I once heard some stirring.

BLAN. The worst of my indisposition is,
That 'twill, I fear, hinder me again to-day
From visiting Violante, to thank her
For Silvia.

DON J. I charge myself with all your compliments;
For this whole afternoon, till late at night,
I needs must pass with her, to make amends
For yesterday's failings, caus'd, as you know,
By Don Fernando's being in town.

BLAN. I must not hope to see you then again
To-day, when once gone out?

DON J. Hardly; unless to wait on Violante,
In case she come to see you, as 'tis likely,
When I shall tell her you are indispos'd:
And so farewell. [*Exit* DON JULIO.

Digitized by Google

BLAN. All's well, I see, Francisca, as to him:
I wish my heart were but as much at rest
In what concerns Don Zancho.
FRAN. It shall be
Your own fault if it be not quickly so,
As I'll order the matter.
BLAN. Take heed you make him not grow insolent,
By discovering to him my facility.
FRAN. I'm too well vers'd to need instructions.
BLAN. I leave all t' you. But how does Silvia
This morning?
FRAN. I think she has been crying,
She looks so dull and moped.
BLAN. I'll in and see her. [*Exeunt.*

Scene changes to DON ZANCHO'S *house.* *Enter* DON ZANCHO, *and* CHICHON *limping.*

DON Z. What, not yet gone, thou lazy, trifling rascal?
CHI. What juster excuse, sir, for not going,
Than is a broken leg?
DON Z. If you find not your own leg quickly, sirrah,
I shall find you a wooden one.
CHI. Be as angry as you will, sir, I'll not go
Till I have made my conditions: the true time
For servants to stand upon points is, when
Their masters stand upon thorns.
DON Z. What are they, owl's face?
CHI. Assurance, sir, but of free air within,
With fair retreat upon an even floor;
And that it shall not be in a slut's power,
After having kept me in a nasty place,
To empty me out at window.
DON Z. Prythee, Chichon,

Digitized by Google

Ha' done, and miss not th' opportunity
By fooling. Unless you take Francisca,
Just as she comes from mass, this day is lost,
And I lost with it.

CHI. Come, I'll hobble to her.
Expect a sorry account, but yet a true one;
Truth always comes by the lame messenger. [*Exeunt.*

Scene changes to a fine pleasant apartment. Enter DON JULIO, *and knocks, as at the door of his private apartment;* FERNANDO *opens the door and lets him in.*

DON F. Y' have given me here a very pleasant prison:
But what news, my Julio? Are things disposed
For clearing of your doubts? My own concerns
I cannot think on during your disquiet.

DON. J. And I come now so strangely mov'd with yours,
I scarce have sense or memory of my own.
A heart of adamant could not be hinder'd,
I think, from liquefaction into tears,
To 've seen and heard Elvira, as I have done,
Upon th' occasion of my telling her
That you were gone.
A sense so gallant and so tender both
I never saw in woman.

DON. F. Can that high heart descend to tenderness?

DON J. Not whilst (you present) noble pride upheld it;
But, nature once set free from that constraint,
O, how pathetic was her very silence!
And the restraint of tears in her swol'n eyes,
More eloquent in grief than others' torrents.
If she be guilty, all her sex are devils.

Digitized by Google

DON. F. O, say no more; for were there room but left
For self-deceit, I might be happy yet.
Ah! evidence too cruel to deny me that!
[*A noise without.*
DON. J. But what can be the noise I hear without—
In the next room?
[FERNANDO *peeps through the key-hole.*
DON F. 'Slife! I see Don Pedro,
Elvira's father: there's no avoiding him;
He'd not a' come up so, without being sure
You are within.
DON J. Farther put-off would be of little use,
Since first or last he must be satisfied,
Being come hither upon such an errand.
The sooner now we see what 'tis he drives at,
The sooner we shall take from thence our measures;
I'll therefore go out to him, and be sure
To entertain him still so near the door,
That you may hear what passes.
DON F. I shall be attentive, and expect the issue
With much impatience. [*Exit* DON JULIO.

Scene changes to DON JULIO'S *antechamber. Enter* DON PEDRO *and his Servant, and* DON JULIO *and a Page.*

DON P. My business, sir, is to Don Julio Rocca;
[*Addressing himself to* DON JULIO.
If you be he, I shall desire the favour
Of some few words with you in private.
DON J. Sir, I am he to serve you. Page, set chairs.
[*He points to the Page, and makes him set the chairs by the door where* DON FERNANDO *is, and then the Page and* DON PEDRO'S *man retire.* [*They sit down.*

Digitized by Google

DON P. Having not the honour to be known
t' you, sir,
'Tis fit this letter make my introduction:
'Tis from the Duke of Medina.

[*He gives* DON JULIO *the letter, which he receives with great respect; and going a little aside, reads it.*

"Don Pedro de Mèndoça, my kinsman and most particular friend, goes to Valencia in pursuit of one who hath highly injured his family, whose righting I am so much concerned in, as, could it have been done without too much publication of the thing, I would have accompanied him myself, but my presence will be needless in a place where you have power: I do therefore conjure you, and expect from your regard and kindness to me, that you employ it thoroughly in his behalf, and what service you shall do him, put it upon my account, whom you shall always find

"Your most affectionate cousin to serve you,
"THE DUKE OF MEDINA."

DON J. (*giving the letter to* DON PEDRO, *and he taking it.*) Sir, it is fit you see how heartily
The Duke hath recommended your concernments,
Whose will 's a law to me.

[DON PEDRO *having read it, and restoring it.*

DON P. He told me, indeed, how very sure he
was
Of your friendship and dependence.
I am proud to find he makes
So obliging use of it to my advantage.

DON J. I do avow myself his creature, sir;
Therefore the sooner you shall let me know
In what I may be useful t' you, the sooner
You 'll see my readiness to serve you.

DON P. Your personal reputation, sir, as well

Digitized by Google

As your relation to the duke, assur'd me
Beforehand of what I find; and therefore
As hard a part as it is for a gentleman
Of my blood and temper to become
Relater of his own shame, unreveng'd
On the author of it, I shall tell you in short:
I live under an affront of th' highest nature
To the honour of my family; and the person
Who did it makes Valencia his retreat.
'Tis against him, Don Julio,
That your assistance must support me here:
I have already got some notice of him,
And when I shall be ascertain'd, I'll repair
Again unto you for your friendly aid,
And for the present trouble you no farther.

[DON PEDRO *offers to rise, as going away.*

DON J. A little patience, I beseech you, sir.
I have express'd my readiness, and be sure
I am a man never to fail, where once
I have engag'd my word; but, sir, withal
You must consider with a fair reflection,
That in this place are all my chief relations
Of blood and friendship; and though neither shall
Have power t' exempt me from the serving you
In any just pretension, yet you know
That men of honour ever ought to seek,
How to comply with one duty without
Violating another.

DON P. I understand you, sir; and as 'tis that
Which well becomes a person of your worth
To have reflected on, so it becomes me
To satisfy, before I engage you farther.
Then give me leave to ask you, whether or no
Don Zancho de Moneçes be of the number
Of those, towards whom y' are under obligation
Either of blood or friendship?

[DON JULIO *showing some little surprise, but presently recovering.*

Digitized by Google

DON J. Don Zancho de Moneçes, say you?
DON P. Sir, the same—
He startled at his name. [*Aside.*
DON J. He is a person I have always liv'd
In friendly correspondence with, without
Any such tie upon me towards him,
As ought to hinder my frank serving you.
DON P. You have reviv'd me; and since I have now nam'd
My enemy, I can conceal no longer
The grounds on which he is so. That Don Zancho,
About a fortnight since, was late at night
Found in my house, run newly through the body,
And welt'ring in his blood, ready to expire.
I by the outcry brought upon the place,
Surpris'd as you may imagine, and enrag'd,
Was yet so far master of my passion,
As to disdain the owing my revenge
To an unknown hand, perhaps as guilty
Towards me as was the sufferer. I made
Him straight be carried to a surgeon, where
I thought it generous to give him life,
Then dead, that living I might give him death.
Recover'd sooner than I thought, he fled,
And with him, as I have reason to believe,
My only daughter, who the very night
Of the accident was missing. O, the curse
Of men, to have their honours subjected
To the extravagance of such vile creatures!
DON J. [*Sighing.*] 'Tis our hard fate indeed.
DON P. I presently employ'd all diligence
To know what way he took, and having learn'd
'Twas towards this place, hither I have pursued him;
Confirm'd in my pursuit by information
Along the road, that an unknown gallant

Digitized by Google

Had, with his servant, guarded all the way
A conceal'd lady in a coach. And thus, sir,
You have the story of my injury;
Whereof I doubt not but your generous heart
Will wed the just revenge.

DON J. You may rely on't, sir, without reserves,
To th' utmost of my power.

DON P. May the gods reward you
The life that you renew to these grey hairs!
I'll take my leave at present, and return t' ye,
As soon as from the diligences used
I shall have clearer lights.

DON J. Here you shall find me waiting your commands.

[*Exit* DON PEDRO, DON JULIO *waiting on him out.*

Scene changes. *Enter* DON JULIO *and* DON FERNANDO, *as in the private apartment.*

DON J. I hope you overheard us?

DON F. All distinctly,
And with surprising joy at his mistake.
Did ever bloodhound, in a hot pursuit,
Run on so readily upon the change?

DON J. I hope it bodes good fortune in the rest.

DON F. Were e'er two friends engag'd in an adventure
So intricate as we, and so capricious?

DON J. Sure, never in this world: methinks it merits
A special recapitulation.
You, at the height of all your happiness,
Supplanted with your mistress by a rival
You neither knew nor dreamt of, evidence
Anticipating jealousy.

Digitized by Google

DON F. And when that rival, fallen by my sword
In her own presence, is by miracle
Revived, and fitter to serve her than I,
That faithless mistress with the same assurance
She could have done, had she been true as fair,
And for my sake expos'd to fatal hazards,
Flies to my arms for her protection.

DON J. And whilst that you, refining point of honour,
In spite of rage expose yourself to serve her,
She asks and takes, with a vow'd indignation
To be beholden t' ye, new obligations.

DON F. I have recourse unto my only friend,
To help me in protecting my false mistress,
And he, at the same time, by highest powers [is]
Impos'd upon to be her persecutor.

DON J. Whilst the same friend, and by the self-same pow'rs,
Is urg'd to act in their revenge against
The man, on whom you most desire to take it:
And then, to heighten all beyond invention,
That very friend is forc'd, even in that instant,
To a dependence on your only aid,
In his honour's nearest and most nice concerns.

DON F. Heaven, sure, delights t' involve us in a kind
Of labyrinth will pose itself t' unwind. [*Exeunt.*

ACT IV.

Scene changes to the room at DON ZANCHO'S. *Enter* DON ZANCHO, *and* CHICHON *at another door, halting still with a staff.*

DON Z. What, here again already! have you sped?

Digitized by Google

CHI. Lame as I am, you see I've made good speed
In my return, whate'er I've had in my errand.
DON Z. Leave, fool, your quibbling, and deliver me
From the disquiet of uncertainty.
CHI. That's quickly done. Set, sir, your heart at rest
From the vain hopes of ever seeing Blanca—
Now you are at ease, I trow?
DON Z. You'll be at little, unless you leave your jesting
With such edge-tools. Is banishment from her
Matter of raillery? Say, sirrah, and say
Quickly, what hopes?——
Prythee, if thou lov'st me, [*Kindly.*
Hold me no longer in suspense, Chichon.
CHI. Why, then, for fear—the devil a bit for love—
I'll tell you, sir, that luckily I met
The drab Francisca at the capuchin's,
Lodging behind her lady, I think on purpose;
For I perceiv'd her eager sparrowhawk's eye,
With her veil down (ne'er stirs a twinkling-while
From its sly peeping-hole) had found me straight—
I took my time i' th' nick, but she outnick'd me;
For trudging on, her face another way,
With such a voice, as some you have seen have had
The trick to draw from caverns of their belly,
And make one think it came from a mile off,
She made me hear these words: *About twilight*
Fail not to pass by our door, and ask no more
At this time, varlet. And thus, sir, you see,
That neither she nor I have been prolix,
For this is all. You have leave to make your comment
On a brief text.

Digitized by Google

DON Z. As sweet methinks as short: such words imply
Little less than a demi-assignation.
CHI. All puddings have two ends,[1] and most short sayings
Two handles to their meaning.
DON Z. I'm sure I'll still lay hold upon the pleasing'st,
Till it be wrested from me: i' th' meanwhile,
If any visitants come this afternoon,
Be sure to tell them I am gone abroad,
That nothing else embark us at the time.
You shall not go alone.
CHI. I thank you for it—
I cannot go alone.
[*Holding up his staff. Exeunt*, CHICHON *halting.*

Scene changes to DON JULIO'S *private apartment.*
Enter DON FERNANDO *and* JULIO.

DON J. All things are rightly laid, for Violante
Will pass the afternoon with Blanca, and then,
I waiting on her home in th' evening, Blanca
Will be secure from me till late at night.
I shall be where I told you, in full view
Of those two windows. If the gallant come
Up the great stairs, he must pass through that room,
And cannot 'scape your knowledge; if up the back one,
You needs must see him passing through the entry,
Close by that door. If this latter way,
Be sure to set the candle in that window:
[*Pointing.*

[1] [The proverb is, Everything hath an end, and a pudding hath two.]

Digitized by Google

If up the other, in that: and in either case,
As soon as he's within, fail not to bolt,
On th' inside, th' entry-door, and so he may
Find no retreat that way, I coming up
The other.

DON F. Be assured I shall be punctual,
As you direct. [*Exeunt.*

Scene changes to DON PEDRO'S *lodging. Enter* DON PEDRO *and his servant* FULVIO.

DON P. Are you sure of what you say?

FULV. As sure, sir,
As my own eyes can make me of what I saw.
You cannot doubt my knowing him, since 'twas I
(You may remember) fetch'd the surgeon to him,
And saw his wounds dress'd more than once or twice.
The tavern, where I was, looks into his garden,
And there I left him walking to come tell you.

DON P. We are well advanc'd then towards my just revenge.
I found Don Julio as ready to comply
With all the duke's desires as I could wish;
And my great fear is over, that Don Zancho
Might possibly have been some near relation
Of his own: so that now, Fulvio, if you
Keep but a careful eye upon his motions,
And give me notice, he can hardly 'scape us.

FULV. Doubt not my diligence. [*Exeunt.*

Scene changes to the garden. Enter BLANCA *and* FRANCISCA *as in a fine garden with orange-trees and fountains.*

BLAN. You must have your will; but know, Francisca,

Digitized by Google

If you expose me to his vanity,
I never shall forgive you.
FRAN. I tell you, madam, I will bring him t' ye
So mortified, he shall an object be
For pity, not for anger: you'll need employ
Kindness to erect the poor dejected knight.
BLAN. It fell out luckily, that Violante
Came hither; for, my brother now engag'd
With her, we're safe till ten o'clock at least.
FRAN. But how shall we dispose of Silvia?
It will be hard to 'scape her observation,
For she has wit, and of the dangerous kind—
A melancholy wit. O the unlucky star,
That leads a lady, engaged in love-intrigues,
To take a new attendant near her person!
BLAN. 'Twas an unluckiness; but Violante
Could not be denied, I having told her
So often that I wanted one; besides,
Who could have thought sh' had one ready at hand?
But we must make the best on't for this night:
'Twill not be hard to busy her, till 't be late,
In the perfuming-room. This near occasion
Well o'er, I think it will not be amiss,
Against another, to say somewhat to her,
That may, in case she have perceiv'd anything,
Persuade her she is not distrusted.
FRAN. Madam, take heed of that: whene'er you find
It necessary to say anything,
Be sure to say that, that she may think all.
Take one rule more from my experience:
Nothing so fatal as a confidence
By halves in amorous transactions.
But here she comes—

Digitized by Google

Enter ELVIRA.

BLAN. Come, Silvia, and take your part of this sweet place;
This is a day indeed to taste its freshness.
ELV. Madam, I needs must say, within a town
I never saw so fine a one.
BLAN. In truth
I think not many sweeter. Those fountains,
Playing among the orange-trees and myrtles,
Have a fine mix'd effect on all the senses,
But think not, Silvia, to enjoy the pleasure
Without contributing to make it more.
ELV. How can I be so happy?
BLAN. Francisca tells me she has overheard you
Warbling alone such notes unto yourself,
As have not only a good voice betray'd,
But skill to manage it.
ELV. It is Francisca,
That has betray'd a very ill one, madam,
BLAN. Under yon palm-tree's shade, there is a seat
That yields to none in the advantages
It lends to music: let 's go sit down there.
For this first time, one song shall satisfy.
ELV. When you have heard that one, I shall not fear
Your asking me another.
[*They go and sit down under the palm-tree, and* ELVIRA *sings.*

THE SONG.

See, O, see!
How every tree,
Every bower,
Every flower,
A new life gives to others' joys;

Digitized by Google

Whilst that I,
Grief-stricken, lie,
Nor can meet
With any sweet,
But what faster mine destroys.
What are all the senses' pleasures,
When the mind has lost all measures?

Hear, O, hear!
How sweet and clear
The nightingale
And waters'-fall
In concert join for others' ears;
Whilst to me
For harmony
Every air
Echoes despair,
And every drop provokes a tear.
What are all the senses' pleasures,
When the mind has lost all measures?

BLAN. I thank you, Silvia; but I'll not allow
One of your youth to nourish melancholy
By tunes and words so flattering to that passion.
ELV. The happiness of serving you may fit me
In time for gayer things.
BLAN. I will not ask another for the present;
Not for your reason, but because I'll be
More moderate in my pleasures. Now, Silvia,
I have a task to give you.
ELV. Whate'er it be, 'twill be a pleasing one,
Of your imposing.
BLAN. 'Tis to gather store of
Fresh orange-flowers, and then carefully
To shift the oils in the perfuming-room,
As in the several ranges you shall see

Digitized by Google

The old begin to wither. To do it well
Will take you up some hours; but 'tis a work
I oft perform myself; and that you may
Be sure not to mistake, I'll go thither
With you, and show you the manner of it.

ELV. I hope I shall not fail, so well instructed.
Exeunt.

Scene changes to the room at DON ZANCHO'S. *Enter* DON ZANCHO *and* CHICHON.

CHI. Y' are so impatient, sir, you will mar all:
I tell you that 'tis yet too light by half,
The sun is hardly set: pray fetch a turn
Or two more in the garden, ere you go.

DON Z. You must be governor, I see, to-night,
You are so proud o' th' service you have done.
Come away. [*Exeunt.*

Scene changes to the garden again. ELVIRA *appears in the garden, as gathering flowers from the orange-trees, and then (with her apron full) going away, says—*

ELV. The task enjoin'd me is a sweet one, truly,
But I smell somewhat more in the imposal.
So far I am happy yet in my misfortune,
That I am lighted into a lady's service
Of an obliging humour; but (most of all)
One that, as kind as she is, I see 's as glad
To leave me alone, as I to be it. Somewhat
There is mysterious in her looks and conduct:
Such motions just, such inequalities,
Such flatteries to those I trusted least,
Such pretty employments found to busy those
I would be rid of, and such arts are these
To single out her confidant (unnoted),

Digitized by Google

I well remember would Elvira use,
Whilst the unquiet joys of love possess'd her,
How innocent soever. And, besides,
Francisca's sitting up so late last night,
And going up and down so warily,
Whilst others slept, is evidence enough
What god reigns here, as well as at the court.
But I forget myself. Let descants cease,
Who serves, though she observes, must hold her peace. [*Exit* ELVIRA.

Scene changes to the prospect of Valencia. Enter DON ZANCHO, *with his cloak over his face, and* CHICHON.

DON Z. Advance, Chichon, I'll follow at a distance.
'Tis the right time—just light enough, you see,
For warn'd expecters to know one another.
I hope she will not fail you.
CHI. She fail us!
No sentinel *perdu* is half so alert
As she in these occasions.

Enter FRANCISCA *veiled, peeping as out of the portal of* DON JULIO'S *house.*

FRAN. There comes the varlet; and I'm much deceived,
Or that's his master lagging at a distance—
I'll give them a go-by, cover'd with my veil.
[*She passes by them heedlessly.*
CHI. By that light, as little as 'tis, 'tis she:
I'll to her.
DON Z. And I'll stand close the while—
When you have broken the ice, I'll take my time.
[CHICHON, *going to* FRANCISCA, *lays hold of her veil, and she turns about.*

Digitized by Google

CHI. What signifies a veil to hide my doxy,
When every motion of a leg or wing
Darts round perfuming and informing airs?
Thou art the very cauliflower of women.
FRAN. And thou the very cabbage-stalk of men,
That never stank to me, as does a blab.
CHI. Curse on thee, hold thy tongue! Dost thou not see,
Who stands against that wall?
FRAN. Away, sauce-box!
[*She, thrusting him off, goes on.* DON ZANCHO *sets himself just in her way, and makes as if he would lie down in it.*
DON Z. Pass, trample on me, do, trample—but hear me!
FRAN. These shoes have been my lady's, and she'd ne'er
Forgive it, should they do you so much honour.
[*Showing her foot.*
'Tis thou hast caus'd all this.
[*Aside, turning to* CHICHON.
CHI. Fire on thy tongue!
DON Z. Ah, my Francisca, if there be no hopes
Of pardon, nor of pity, yet at least
Let Blanca, for her own sake, be so just
As not to give me cruel death unheard:
Do you your part at least, and do but give her
This letter from me—
[*He offers her a letter, and she starting back:*
FRAN. *Guarda!* that's a thing
She has forbidden with such menaces,
I dare as well become another Porcia,[1]
And eat red burning coals. I had much rather
Consent that, now she's all alone at home,
You should transportedly rush in upon her,
As following me: so possibly you might

[1] [The wife of Brutus.]

Digitized by Google

Attain your end without exposing me
Who, in that case, know how to act my part
So smartly against you, as shall keep her clear
From all suspicion. But I am to blame
Thus to forget my duty: I'll stay no longer.

[*He stops her, and, pulling out a purse of money, puts it into her hand.* FRANCISCA *offers to restore the purse, but yet holding it fast.*

DON. Z. Spoke like an angel.

FRAN. This is, you know, superfluous with me,
And shocks my humour; but anything from you!
Be sure you follow boisterously.

[*She trudges away, and goes in hastily, as at* JULIO'S *house, and* DON ZANCHO *follows her in.* CHICHON *stops at the door.*

CHI. I'll bring you no ill-luck a second time.
If for sport's sake you have projected me
Another summersault from the balcony,
Make your account that 'tis already done,
Here you will find me halting in the street.

[*Exit* CHICHON.

Scene changes to DONNA BLANCA'S *antechamber.*
Enter BLANCA.

BLAN. How true it is that nature cheats mankind,
And makes us think ourselves the only tasters
Of pure delight and bliss; when as indeed,
Oppressing us with pains and griefs, she makes
Deliv'rance from them pass for solid pleasure!
Witness in me those images of joy,
Wherewith she flatters now my expectation:
What will its highest satisfaction be
At most, but ease from what tormented me?

Digitized by Google

Enter FRANCISCA *hastily.*

FRAN. It now imports you have affected rage
As ready at hand as usually you have
Anger in earnest. But, above all, be sure
You discharge it smartly upon me; for here
He presses at my heels.

Enter DON ZANCHO, *and goes to cast himself at* DONNA BLANCA'S *feet, and she starting back from him.*

BLAN. What insolence is this? Think not, Francisca,
That I am to be fool'd! This is your work:
You shall not stay an hour within these walls—
By all that's good, you shall not!
FRAN. For heaven's sake, madam, be not so unjust [*Whining.*
To an old servant, always full of duty.
But can I govern madmen? Would y' have had me
Make all the street take notice? There he attack'd me
With such transportment, the whole town had rung on't,
Had I not run away. Could I imagine
A man so wild as to pursue me hither
Into your presence?
BLAN. It is well, Don Zancho; [*Severely and scornfully.*
Blanca may be thus used; but he that does it
Shall find——
[*She turns away as going out, he holds her by the sleeve.*
DON Z. Pardon this rudeness, madam, but a man
Made desperate hath nothing more to manage.
Hither I come to give you satisfaction,

Digitized by Google

And if my reasons can't, my heart-blood shall;
But you must hear me, or here see me dead.

BLAN. Since to be rid of' him, Francisca, I see
[*Turning to* FRANCISCA.
I must the penance undergo of hearing him,
Keep careful watch to prevent accidents.

FRAN. Madam, your closet will be much more proper
For such a conference; for in case your brother
Should come, Don Zancho has a safe retreat
From thence down the back-stairs. I shall be sure
To give you timely notice.

DON Z. And I know perfectly the passage thorough
Th' entry; I've come up more than once that way
During my happy days.

BLAN. I think y' have reason; since I must have patience,
Light us in thither.

[FRANCISCA *takes the lights, and going before them, exeunt omnes.*

Scene changes to the prospect of Valencia. Enter DON JULIO, *as in the portal of his own house.*

DON J. The light was in the farther window; therefore
He went up this way: now, if Fernando
Have not forgot to bolt the entry-door,
He cannot 'scape us, sure, whoe'er he be.
'Tis the only comfort,
In such misfortunes, when a man hath means
To right his honour, without other help
Than such a friend as is another self,
And that the shame's even from domestics hid,
Until it be reveng'd.

[*Exit* DON JULIO, *as going into his own house.*

Digitized by Google

Enter CHICHON, *as coming out of the porch before* DON JULIO'S *house.*

CHI. 'Slight! 'tis Don Julio that I saw go in!
My master's like to pass his time but ill;
I'll steal in after, and observe: although
My courage cannot stead him, my wit may,
As things may possibly fall out.
[*Exit* CHICHON, *as stealing after* DON JULIO *into his house.*

Scene changes to DONNA BLANCA'S *closet. Enter* DON ZANCHO *and* DONNA BLANCA, *as in her closet.*

BLAN. As fine a story as may be! No, Don Zancho,
I, Blanca Rocca, am not carta blanca,[1]
Fit to receive whate'er impression
Your art——

Enter FRANCISCA *hastily.*

FRAN. Your brother's in the hall already;
Quick, quick, and let him find you in your chamber
Before your glass, I have set it ready there,
Whilst he retires the way it was resolv'd.
[*Pointing to* DON ZANCHO.
[FRANCISCA *takes the candle, and exeunt she and* DONNA BLANCA; DON ZANCHO, *another way.*

---

[1] [*i.e.*, A fool. See Hazlitt's "Proverbs," 1869, p. 38.]

Digitized by Google

Scene changes to DONNA BLANCA'S *bedchamber. Re-enter* DONNA BLANCA *and* FRANCISCA, *as in* BLANCA'S *chamber, she newly seated at her toilet, and beginning to unpin.*

Enter DON JULIO.

DON J. Blanca, I thought you had been abed ere this.
Have you had company to entertain you,
And keep you up beyond your usual hour?
BLAN. What company can I have, you abroad,
At this time of the night?
DON J. I fain would find out some such as might please you. [*Ironically.*
Francisca, take a candle and light me in
To Blanca's closet.
BLAN. Good brother, what's the matter?
You were not wont to be so curious,
As thus to pry into my privacies.
DON J. That you shall know anon. Do as I bid you,
Francisca.
[FRANCISCA *takes one of the candles, and going before him stumbles, and falling puts out the light.* DON JULIO, *taking it up, lights it again at the other on the table, and going with it himself towards* DONNA BLANCA'S *closet.*
These tropes are lost on me. [*Exit.*
FRAN. Let him go, now we have gain'd time enough.
BLAN. Thanks to thy timely fall!
FRAN. Persons employ'd
In such trusts must have their wits about them.

Digitized by Google

'Tis clear that he suspects, but know—he cannot.
When once you see all safe, 'twill then import you
To play the tyrant over him, with reproaches
For this his jealousy.

BLAN. Let me alone for that.
But let us follow him in, that we may mark
His whole demeanour. [*Exeunt.*

Enter DON ZANCHO *in disorder.*

DON Z. Curse on't, the entry-door's bolted within,
What shall I do? [*He pauses.*] I must seek a way,
Through the perfuming-room into the garden.
[*Exit.*

Enter DON JULIO, *with a candle in his hand, and passing hastily over the stage.*

DON J. He must be gone this way, there is no other;
The entry-door was bolted.

Enter DONNA BLANCA *and* FRANCISCA, *who pass over the stage, as if stealing after* DON JULIO.

FRAN. All's safe: he takes that way. Let him, a' God's name,
Follow his nose to the perfuming-room.

BLAN. He'll fright poor Silvia out of her wits;
But I'll come to her succour with a peal
Will ring him.
[*Exeunt* DONNA BLANCA *and* FRANCISCA.

Digitized by Google

Scene changes to the laboratory. Here is to open a curious scene of a laboratory in perspective, with a fountain in it, some stills, many shelves, with pots of porcelain and glasses, with pictures above them: the room paved with black and white marble, with a prospect through pillars at the end, discovering the full moon, and by its light a perspective of orange-trees, and towards that farther end ELVIRA *appears at a table, shifting flowers, her back turned.*

Enter DON ZANCHO *hastily:* ELVIRA *turning about, they both startle, and stand awhile as it were amazed.*

DON Z. O heavens! what is't I see? 'Tis mere illusion,
Or 'tis the devil in that angel's form,
Come here to finish by another hand
The fatal work that she began upon me
By Don Fernando's.

ELV. Good gods! Don Zancho here! it cannot be!
Or 'tis his ghost, come to revenge his death
On its occasioner; for, were he alive,
He could not but have more humanity
Than (having been my ruin at Madrid,
And robb'd me of my home and honour there)
To envy me an obscure shelter here.

[*Whilst they amazed step back from one another, enter* DON JULIO, *who, seeing* DON ZANCHO *with his back towards him, drawing his sword, says—*

DON J. Think not (whoe'er thou art), by flying thus
From room to room, to 'scape my just revenge.

Digitized by Google

Shouldst thou retire to th' centre of the earth,
This sword should find thee there, and pierce thy heart.

[*Throwing down the candle, he makes towards* DON ZANCHO; *but upon his turning about towards him, he makes a little stop, and says—*

Nay then, if it be you, I'm happy yet
In my misfortune, since the gods thus give me
The means at once, and by the self-same stroke,
To right my honour, and revenge my friend;
And, by that action, fully to comply
With what the Duke requires in the behalf
Of wrong'd Don Pedro.

[DON JULIO *makes at* DON ZANCHO: *he draws, and they begin to fight;* ELVIRA *crying out,* Help! help! *runs to part them, and they stop upon her interposing.*

Enter DON FERNANDO *hastily over the stage, as coming from the private apartment.*

DON F. I hear an outcry and [a] clattering of swords.
My friend (engag'd) must find me by his side.

[*Exit, and re-enters at another door.*

[*As* FERNANDO *comes to the door of the perfuming-room, seeing them at a stand, he stops and stands close.*

DON F. They are parleying; let's hear. [*Aside.*

[BLANCA *and* FRANCISCA *passing over the stage.*

BLAN. 'Twas Silvia's voice: my heart misgives me somewhat.

FRAN. 'Tis some new accident or some mistake;
Don Zancho cannot but be safe long since.

Digitized by Google

BLAN. However let us in, and see.

[*Exeunt* BLANCA *and* FRANCISCA, *and re-enter as at another door of the perfuming-room, and make a stand, as surprised with what they see.*

BLAN. We are all undone, I fear.

FRAN. A little patience.

[CHICHON *stealing over the stage.*

CHI. The noise is towards the perfuming-room,
I know the back-way to it through the garden.

[*Exit* CHICHON, *and re-enters at the farther end of the laboratory, and stands close.*

DON Z. Wit must repair the disadvantages
I'm under here, and save my Blanca's honour.
That once secur'd, there will be time enough
To save Elvira's. [*Aside.*

[*Whilst this passes,* ELVIRA *holds* JULIO *by the arm, he striving to get from her.*

Since, by this lady's interposing thus,
You have thought fit our swords should pause awhile,
It may (I think) consist enough with honour
So far to seek your satisfaction, sir,
As to remove mistakes. Know then, Don Julio,
That, though I have presum'd upon your house,
I have not wrong'd your honour: it is she,
With whom you find me, that hath brought me hither;
Her I have long ador'd, and, having got
Intelligence that she was here conceal'd,
My passion (I confess) transported me
Beyond that circumspection and regard,
Which men of quality use, and ought t' observe
Towards one another's dwellings.

DON J. Good gods, what an adventure's here!
Yet all

Digitized by Google

Is well, so Blanca's honour be but safe. [*Aside.*
Sir, you surprise me much; can this be true?
[*To* DON ZANCHO.

BLAN. Francisca, heard you that? had ever man
So ready a wit in such an exigent? [*Aside.*

DON J. [to ELVIRA.] What say you, madam?

FRAN. We're surer lost than ever, unless she
Have wit and heart to take the thing upon her.
[*Aside.*
Madam, make signs to her, and earnestly.
[*To* BLANCA.
[BLANCA *makes earnest signs to* ELVIRA.

FRAN. [*aside to* BLANCA.] She looks this way, as if she comprehended
Your meaning.

ELV. I understand her, and I know as well
What mischief I may bring upon myself;
But let Elvira still do generously,
And leave the rest to fate. [*Aside.*] Sir, since you press me, [*To* DON JULIO.
My humour ne'er could disavow a truth:
Don Zancho's passion and transportments for me,
Beyond all rules of temper and discretion,
Have been the cause of all my sad misfortunes,
And still I see must be the cause of more.

DON J. Unhappy creature! how thou hast deceiv'd
My prone persuasion of thy innocence!

DON Z. If that suffice not, sir, you have this ready
To give you satisfaction. [*Holding out his sword.*

DON F. Hell and furies!—but I will yet contain
Myself, and see how far my friend will drive it.
[*Aside.*

DON J. Stay, Don Zancho,

Digitized by Google

And answer me one question. Is this night
The first of your presuming thus to enter
My house by stealth?

DON Z. The query is malicious;
But I must thorough, as I have begun. [*Aside.*

BLAN. [*Aside to* FRANCISCA.] There was a question makes me tremble still.

DON Z. No, sir, it is not: I'll keep nothing from you.
Last night upon the same occasion——

DON J. Hold! it suffices.

FRAN. [*Aside hastily to* BLANCA.] All's safe, you see: for God's sake, let's away
Ere Julio perceive us.
Your presence here can serve for nothing, madam,
But to beget new chances and suspicions.

[*Exeunt* BLANCA *and* FRANCISCA. DON FERNANDO *rushes out, drawing his sword.*

DON F. Yes, it suffices, Julio, to make
This hand strike surer than it did before.

ELVIRA. Nothing was wanting to my misery,
But his being here to overhear; but yet
I must not suffer the same hand to kill him
A second time, upon a greater error
Than was the first.

[*Aside.* DON FERNANDO *making at* DON ZANCHO; ELVIRA *steps between, and* JULIA *also offers to stay him.*

DON F. [*Striving to come at* DON ZANCHO.]
Strive to protect your gallant from me, do!
Strive, but in vain: the gods themselves cannot!
What, you, Don Julio, too?

[CHICHON, *running out from the place where he lurked, strikes out both the lights with his hat.*

CHI. I have lov'd to see fighting; but at present
I love to hinder seeing how to fight.

Digitized by Google

Knights, brandish your blades, 'twill make fine work
Among the gallipots! [*Aloud.*
You have me by your side, sir, let them come;
They are but two to two. [*As to his master.*
Sir, follow me, I'll bring you to the door.
[*Aside to his master, and pulling him.*

DON Z. There's no dishonour in a wise retreat
From disadvantages, to meet again
One's enemy upon a fairer score.
[CHICHON *pushing his master before him out of door.*

CHI. [*Aside to his master.*] There 'tis; advance, sir, I'll make good the rear.
[*Exit* DON ZANCHO *and* CHICHON.

DON J. Ho! who's without? bring lights. [*He stamps.*] They cannot hear us,
The room is so remote from all the rest.—
What a confusion's this! Recall, Fernando,
Your usual temper, and let's leave this place,
And that unhappy maid unto its darkness,
To hide her blushes, since her shame it cannot.
[*Exit* DON JULIO *groping, and drawing* DON FERNANDO *with him.*

ELV. [*Alone.*] Darkness and horror welcome, since the gods
Live in the dark themselves; for had they light
Of what's done here below, they would afford
Some ray to shine on injur'd innocence,
And not, instead thereof, thus multiply
Obscuring clouds upon it, such as the sun,
Should he with all his beams illuminate
Men's understandings, scarce could dissipate.
I now begin to pardon thee, Fernando,
Since what thou hast heard in this enchanted place
Carries conviction in 't against my firmness,
Above the pow'r of nature to suspend

Digitized by Google

My condemnation: unless wrong'd virtue might
Expect in thee a justice so refin'd,
As ne'er was found in man to womankind.
'Tis now, I must confess, the lost Elvira
Fit only for a cloister, where, secure
In her own spotless mind, she may defy
All censures, and without impiety
Reproach her fate even to the deity.
[*Exit, groping her way.*

ACT V.

Enter DON JULIO *talking to himself, and at another door* FERNANDO *who, perceiving it, stands close.*

DON J. Bless'd be the gods that yet my honour's safe
Amidst such strange perplexities, from which
Fortune and wit (I think) together join'd,
With all their strength, could hardly an issue find.
To temper, comfort, or to serve my friend
What argument? what means? how to assist
Don Pedro in his aims, and to comply
With what I owe the duke, I see as little;
And less conceive, how to behave myself,
As ought a gentleman towards a lady,
With whose protection he hath charg'd himself,
And brought her to his house on that assurance;
Whom to expose cannot consist with honour,
However she may have expos'd her own;
And (least of all) how to repair to Blanca
The injury I have done her, whose high spirit,
I fear, will be implacable. O heavens!
What a condition's mine?
[*He stands pausing, and startles, seeing* DON FERNANDO.

Digitized by Google

Enter DON FERNANDO.

DON F. Pardon, dear cousin, if, to avoid one rudeness,
I have another unawares committed.
Whilst fearing t' interrupt, I have o'erheard;
Yet nothing, cousin, but the self-same things
My thoughts have been revolving all this night,
Concern'd for you, much more than for myself;
For I, upon reflection, find I am
Much easier than I was; by certainty
Freed from the sorest weight, perplexity.
In the first place you must forgive your friend
The high distemper of last night's transports-ments:
I hope you'll find me well recovered from them,
And that my morning resolutions are
Such as will make amends.

DON J. Make no excuses, dear friend: such provocations
Surprising are above philosophy;
And 'tis no small experiment of yours,
If after them you can have brought yourself
So soon to fix a judgment what to do.

DON F. I have fix'd on that, which I am sure will serve
All interests but my own, as heretofore
I understood my happiness; but now
I shall no longer place it in anything
Dependent on the wild caprice[1] of others.

---

[1] Without any sufficient reason, and to the evident injury of the metre, of which the author has nowhere been very careful, he here and elsewhere preferred the Spanish word *capricho*, to the English word *caprice*.—*Collier*.

Digitized by Google

No, Julio,
I will be happy even in spite of fate,
By carrying generosity up to th' height.
Elvira shall her dear bliss owe to me,
Not only by desisting, but by making
Her lov'd Don Zancho marry her: his refusal
Alone can make me kill him o'er again.

DON J. Since that unhappy maid, with all her beauty
And that high quality, hath made herself
Unworthy of your marriage, certainly
None but Fernando ever could have pitch'd
Upon so noble a thought: but think withal,
What difficulties are likely to obstruct it!

DON F. Say what occurs to you.

DON J. Don Zancho is a man of wit and courage;
And though his passion out of doubt be great,
Since it hath made him do so wild an action,
As that of coming twice into my house
After so strange a manner; yet, Fernando,
You cannot but imagine such a one
Likely to have quite different reflections
Upon Elvira's conduct for a wife,
From what he has upon it for a mistress:
They are two notions very differing.
Besides, should the proposal but appear
In the least kind to spring from your desire,
Whose former commerce with her's not unknown,
It were the only way to drive him off
Past all recal. I think few have accepted
Wives recommended to them by their rival.

DON F. In that y' have reason, I confess; but, Julio,
Think of the way; for marry her he must,
Or die, and by no other hand but mine.

Digitized by Google

DON J. [*Pausing.*] I am thinking of it, and, I hope, to purpose.[1]
What interposer can be found so fit
As Blanca in this business, since Don Zancho
Has long been her particular acquaintance?
And what can be more natural, than for her
To take to heart Elvira's chief concernment,
Whom he finds here retir'd in her misfortune,
As to her surest friends?
DON F. Y' have lighted, cousin, on the only way;
And lose no time, I beg you.
DON J. The least that may be; but you must consider
In what a predicament I am likely
To be with Blanca at present.
DON F. I understand you (since the jealousy
You expressed of her); but 'tis to be hoped
The peace will not be long a-making.
DON J. You little know her spirit, once inflam'd.
But as I'll lose no time, so I'll omit
No art to bring her to a temper fit
To hear and to advance the proposition.
DON F. Heaven give you good success!
DON J. [*Turning back to* FERNANDO.] I had forgot to tell you that I think
It will be necessary that, as soon
As I have weather'd Blanca's storm, I make
A visit to Don Pedro, to prevent
His coming hither to disorder us,
Before we have set [all] things right.
DON F. 'Twas not ill thought on: and till you return

[1] Dodsley and Reed very absurdly gave this line to Don Fernando, when it is evidently a reply by Don Julio to the request of his friend. The old copy did not mislead the former editors.—*Collier.*

Digitized by Google

I shall keep close in your apartment;
For Blanca has not seen me, and Elvira
Has too great cares upon her to be curious.
[*Exeunt.*

Enter BLANCA *and* FRANCISCA; BLANCA *with a gay air, as in her antechamber.*

BLAN. Say, my Francisca, can romances equal
Our last night's adventure? was there ever
Such a come-off! Our sex has us'd to boast
Presence of mind in exigents of love;
But I believe none of us ever match'd
Don Zancho's readiness in an occasion
So sudden and so critical.
FRAN. Ever give me the man of ready parts.
BLAN. But prythee, whilst we give Don Zancho 's dues,
Let us be just, too, to poor Silvia's merit;
Was ever anything so generous
Or so obliging to a mistress!
FRAN. So it appears, madam, I must confess;
But the excess of it makes it suspicious.
BLAN. Fie, leave this humour of detracting still,
And call her to me, that I may embrace,
And thank her; that done, consider how
To bring her off, who 's brought us off so well.
[*Offers to go out.*

Enter DON JULIO.

FRAN. Stay, I beseech you, and compose yourself
To act a part quite of another nature;
Here comes Don Julio, towards whom I hope
You'll tune yourself to a far differing key
From that of thanks and kindness.

Digitized by Google

BLAN. Let me alone for that: I'll play the dragon.

[*As* DON JULIO *advances,* BLANCA *turns from him with a furious countenance, and flies out of the room,* DON JULIO *following her.*

DON J. Dear sister, stay, and hear me.

BLAN. Detested brother, leave me.

[*She makes as if she were going, and he holds her.*

DON J. Hear me but, Blanca, and then vent your passion
Against a brother that condemns himself
As much as you can do; but hear me speak.

BLAN. Your actions, Julio, have spoke loud enough
To echo through the world your shame and mine.
Has all the tenor of my life been such,
With such exactness of unblemish'd conduct,
That malice might have stain'd the noonday sun
More easily than tarnish'd Blanca's honour,
And must that honour now be prostitute
By the caprice of an unworthy brother?
Should any other have invaded it,
Had not you righted her, she has a heart
Would have found ways to right herself; but you
Th' aggressor, what remedy but rage?

[*She flings from him and exit.*

FRAN. She acts it rarely. [*Aside.*

DON. J. Was ever man so unfortunate as I?

[*To* FRANCISCA.

I must confess she has reason, and the sense
She thus expresses of my fault becomes her;
But it must be your work, my dear Francisca,
To pacify. When once you shall but know
All that has pass'd these nights, I am certain
You'll say no human confidence could e'er
Be proof against such circumstances.

FRAN. Alas! my offices can signify

Digitized by Google

But little. But I'm sure the occasion
Gives me a sad heart. O my dear lady!
[*As if she were crying.*
DON J. I love good-nature; but I prythee, leave,
And come in with me, that I may tell thee all.
[*Exeunt.*

Enter DON PEDRO *and* FULVIO, *as in his lodging.*

DON P. A' God's name, Fulvio, what has been thy meaning,
To make me sit up almost all last night
Expecting thee, when such impatience held me?
Thou wert not wont to be so negligent
In things of so great weight.
FULV. Nor have I been it now: 'tis overcare
Of your commands hath held me so long from you.
You know the orders that you gave me, sir,
To watch Don Zancho's motions? accordingly
I sat all day in my observing-place,
Till about twilight I saw him and's man
Steal as it were abroad: I as warily
Dogg'd them from street to street, till, sir, at length
He made a stand up close against a wall,
Whilst that his servant entertain'd a woman
Close-veil'd, who was come out, I think, on purpose,
From an adjacent house; soon after, he
Accosted her himself. Their conference
Lasted but little; she made haste away
To th' house from whence she came, and he as much
To follow her in.
DON P. Where was't? and why cam'st thou not presently,
To give me notice, as you were directed?

Digitized by Google

FULV. At that you will not wonder, when you know
Whose house he enter'd; but at this you'll wonder—
It was Don Julio's.
DON P. [*Starting.*] Ha! Don Julio's, say'st thou?— [*He pauses.*
But, now I think on't, 'tis no marvel, Fulvio,
Since newly come to town; for I remember
Don Julio told me, that Don Zancho and he
Had always liv'd in friendly correspondence.
FULV. Visits, sir, only of fair civility,
After long absence, are not usually
Begun by twilight in such cautious manner;
Nor usher'd in by female veil'd conductors.
But pray, sir, hear the rest.
DON P. What can this be? [*Aside.*] Say on then quickly. [*To* FULVIO.
FULV. I presently concluded with myself
That, since Don Julio was the friend on whose
Assistance you relied against Don Zancho,
You ne'er would think, sir, of attacking him,
As he came out from thence: I judg'd it, therefore,
My wisest course to stay, and mark the issue.
And stay I did, till it was after midnight;
About which time, walking from side to side,
That I might see both issues of the house,
It being as light almost as day, I saw
The gallant and his man leap from the wall
Of Julio's garden, and from thence in haste
Make home.
DON P. 'Sdeath, man, thou dream'st! Don Zancho from Don Julio's
In that manner? Awake, fool, and speak sense.
FULV. I say but what I saw, as I see you.
DON P. O, the devil! what, the same villain
Found the affronter of my friend too here

Digitized by Google

In the same kind! Give me my cloak and sword,
I must know the bottom of this. [*Exeunt.*

Enter BLANCA *and* FRANCISCA, *as in her antechamber.*

BLAN. I come from seeing and caressing Silvia;
But with most strange surprise at her comportment
Towards me.
FRAN. How, madam!
BLAN. My words and actions both expressing to her,
Not only highest gratitude and kindness,
But a solicitude in the concerns
Of her honour, equal to what she had shown
In mine, they were receiv'd with such a coldness,
With such an air of melancholy pride,
With half replies, and those not half to th' purpose,
As make me with amazement to conclude,
That either she has lost her understanding,
Or that there's somewhat in't we understand not.
FRAN. She is a maid of an odd composition;
And besides that, I needs must tell you, madam,
That having had my observation freer
Than you, perhaps, during last night's adventure,
I remark'd somewhat, both in her demeanour
And in Don Zancho's, makes me confident
They met not there strangers to one another,
As you imagine. But there's time enough
To think and talk of that: what presses now,
Is your right ordering of Don Julio:
You have begun as well as can be wish'd.
BLAN. Say, did I not do my part? [*Jollily.*
FRAN. Beyond imagination;
But take heed now of overdoing it,
'Tis time to tack about to reconcilement,
And thought of drawing those advantages

Digitized by Google

From the embroilment, as may for the future
Secure you from like accidents.
BLAN. You say well; but how?
FRAN. The first step must atonement be between you,
Of which he hath so earnestly conjur'd me
To be an instrument that, you consenting
To give him a hearing through my mediation,
I am made for ever, and settled in the power
Of serving you by better cosening him:
Besides, he tells me, he hath that to say
And to propose unto you, as shall not only
Excuse him with you, but prevent all danger
Of prejudicial rumours, which might rise
From last night's accident.
BLAN. Agreed; let's in,
And play the second part. [*Exeunt.*

Enter DON ZANCHO *and* CHICHON, *as in his own house.*

DON Z. Were we not born with cauls upon our heads?[1] [*Jollily.*

---

[1] *Cauls* are little membranes, found on some children, encompassing the head, when born. The vulgar opinion has generally been, that every person possessed of one of these *cauls*, whether originally belonging to him, or obtained by purchase, would be fortunate, and escape dangers. "Lampridius tells us, that the midwives sold *cauls* at a good price to the advocates and pleaders of his time; it being an opinion, that while they had this about them, they should carry with them a force of persuasion which no judge could withstand: the canons forbid the use of it, because some witches and sorcerers, it seems, had abused it."—See ["Popular Antiquities of Great Britain," 1870, iii., 139-42.]

Sir T. Brown ("Vulgar Errors," b. v., ch. 21) quotes "the life of Antonius delivered by Spartianus" on the subject. The caul, a "sillyhow" (as Sir T. Brown terms it), is still considered a preservative against danger, and especially

Digitized by Google

Think'st thou, Chichon, to come off twice a-row
Thus rarely from such dangerous adventures?

CHI. Rather, I think, with combs, so oft to venture.

DON Z. Thou coxcomb, say, had I not my wits about me?

CHI. 'Twere too uncomplaisant to deny that.
You know I love not to talk seriously,
But tell me now in earnest, are you satisfied
To have come off so? is there no qualm remaining
Upon your gentle heart for leaving i' th' suds
A poor distressed virgin? Who she is,
I neither know nor care; but I am sure,
Had generous Chichon, to save his life,
Play'd a sweet innocent lady such a trick,
He would have pass'd but for a recreant knight;
And much the more, she having shown herself
So gallant as, to save her lady's honour,
T' expose her own. Say, true Don Galor,[1] say,
Were your part found in a romance or play,
Whose character would it not dislustre?

DON Z. How soon a fool's bolt 's shot without distinction?
Of what's the mark! Thou censur'st without knowing,
Who th' exposed lady is. Know, then, Chichon,
And wonder! 'tis Elvira!—that Elvira

---

against drowning. Notices of the sale of them used to be daily posted on the Royal Exchange, and they are bought by captains of ships and others going to sea, and great prices given for them. The *Times* newspaper of March 17, 1827, has the following advertisement:—"A child's caul, well worth £20, to be sold for £14. Apply at Academy," &c.—*Collier.*

[1] He calls him Sir Galor in reference to the character this knight sustained in the old romances. He was sometimes known by other names.—*Collier.* [More properly, Sir *Galuor*. He was a brother of Amadis of Gaul.]

Digitized by Google

For whom I sighed like to have sigh'd my last,
On her score at Madrid—Don Pedro's daughter.
CHI. You raise enchanted castles in the air;
But were it as you say, that makes the thing
More inexcusable. You had been to blame
T' have us'd a stranger so; but so t' have serv'd
A lady[1] you had once profess'd to love,
Raises the fault above all heightening.
DON Z. Nay, then, I see I must once play the fool,
In answering a fool seriously.
The things thou say'st are heightenings indeed,
Not of my fault, but merit in the action,
Towards my Blanca; since, to save her honour,
I did not only sacrifice Elvira's,
But thus expose mine own. Time may recover
Elvira's fame, and mine this quickly shall.
[*Clapping his hand on his sword.*
Here, take this letter, and employ your wit
In finding out the means with secrecy
To give it Don Fernando unobserv'd.
I shall not stir from home, till I 've his answer.
CHI. You found him, sir, a man of quick dispatch,
In your last business with him at Madrid!
[*Exit* DON ZANCHO.
How honourable 'tis to serve a Don!
What petty Basque on t' other side the mountains
Durst have aspir'd to the high dignity
Of carrying a cartel? A monsieur
Would sooner have put up a twinge by the nose,
Than sent a challenge by a serving-man. [*Exit.*

[1] [Old copy, *lady whom*, which injures the metre. The latter, however, is not very regular or correct in this play.]

Digitized by Google

Enter BLANCA *furiously, and, running to the cabinet, takes out thence a stiletto; and* FRANCISCA *earnestly after her, as in* BLANCA'S *closet.*

BLAN. Villains shall find I am not unprovided
Wrongs to revenge, that cannot be forgiven.
FRAN. I thought the strange constraint upon herself,
Wherewith she heard her brother, would serve in the end
But to make rage break out with greater fury;
Yet it is well she kept it in so long
As to get rid of him. [*Aside.*
Good madam, moderate yourself a little.
BLAN. Preach temper to the damned souls in hell,
That they may teach the traitor moderation,
When I have sent him thither with his devil.
FRAN. I do confess the provocation such,
As more than justifies all these transportments;
And therefore I beseech you think not, madam,
In what I say, I can the least aim have
Of saving him from the extremest fury
Of your resentment, or preserving her,
Who has had the impudence to abuse you so,
Under pretence of serving. May they perish!
But let it be in such a way, as may not
Draw a more dismal ruin on yourself:
Let swift destruction seize them; yet let not,
Madam, your hand, but head dispense their fate.
What can the issue be of such an action,
As that of which I see that shining steel
And flaming eyes of yours the threat'ning comets?
I beg but the reflection of a moment!

[BLANCA *walking upon the stage with enraged gestures pauses, at length sheathing and putting her stiletto in her sleeve with a sober, composed tone:*

Digitized by Google

BLAN. Francisca, I thank you for recalling me
Thus to myself: I will be temperate.
[*Aside.*] But it shall be to make revenge the surer.
FRAN. Her tone nor gestures cannot cosen me,
They both seem to disguise a black design;
But I shall watch you: 'tis a half-gain'd cause
In fury's course to have begot a pause. [*Aside.*
BLAN. Do what I bid you presently, Francisca.
Send to Don Zancho, and let him know from me,
I earnestly desire to speak with him.
FRAN. Lord, madam, what d'ye mean?
BLAN. To make the pleasing proposition to him,
As I told my brother I would. Say, am I not moderate?
But do without reply, what I command.
FRAN. Madam, I shall obey. But [*aside*] observe you so withal,
As to prevent the mischief, if I can.
[*Exit* FRANCISCA.
BLAN. Ye gods, assist me in my just revenge,
Or you will make an atheist. My first work
Must be, before Don Zancho comes, to speak
With his sweet mistress; and with words and looks,
As false as hers have been, so to delude her
With hopes of what she wishes, that they both
May jointly fall my honour's sacrifice. [*Exit.*

Enter DON FERNANDO, *as in* DON JULIO'S *private apartment.*

DON F. Since generosity hath so far got
The mastery, as to have made me fix
Upon a resolution so unheard of,
I long to see it executed. But stay:
I think I hear Elvira's voice without,

Digitized by Google

And Blanca's too. Here curiosity
To overhear is pardonable.
[*He makes as if he hearkened, and then exit, as to go where he may better hear.*

Enter ELVIRA *and* BLANCA *as in the antechamber, and* FERNANDO *peeping as from behind a door.*

DON F. Here not a word can 'scape me.
ELV. Madam, you wrong my zeal in serving you,
Whilst you attribute to any other motive
My yesterday's behaviour.
BLAN. Such niceties, Elvira, are out of season.
[*In a tone that may show what she says to be forced.*
I seek your satisfaction in a love,
Wherein it seems you have been long engag'd.
[ELVIRA *looking round, and* FERNANDO *starting back.*
DON F. I hope she did not see me. [*Aside.*
ELV. My satisfaction, say you, in my love?
Of whom, for heaven's sake? If you mean Don Zancho,
Y' are very far from guessing at my thoughts.
DON F. By heaven, sh' has seen me, and plays the devil still. [*Aside.*
ELV. By all that's good, I am far from loving him—
I say not worse [*aside*], because I know she loves him.
DON F. Ah, Elvira! this is too much, yet not enough
To change in me a noble resolution. [*Aside.*
[*A noise is heard, as of people coming up stairs.*
BLAN. I hear some coming up stairs: should it be Don Zancho, I am not yet ready for him.—
[*Aside.*

Digitized by Google

I see we are likely to be interrupted here,
[*To* ELVIRA.
Elvira, we shall be better in my closet.
[*Exit* BLANCA.

ELVI. Madam, I'll follow you.
What can she mean? since that she needs must think
I know the passion she herself[1] has for him.

[ELVIRA *having stayed awhile behind, as she is going to follow* BLANCA, *enter her father* DON PEDRO *and* FULVIO: *she starts, and stands confounded; he, seeing her, draws out his dagger, and makes at her.*

DON P. Vile stainer of my blood, have I here found thee?

[ELVIRA *perceiving the door a little open, where* DON FERNANDO *is, flies thither, and gets in.*

DON F. This makes it clear she saw me.
[*Aside, as* ELVIRA *thrusts in.*

[DON PEDRO *seizes the door, before it be quite shut, and they struggle, he to pull it open, and* DON FERNANDO *to shut it: after some contest,* DON FERNANDO *gets it close, and bolts it within:* DON PEDRO, *as an enraged person, pulls and bounces at the door.*

DON P. In vain should mountains interpose between
Her and her punishment.
[*He bounces still, as to break down the door.*

Enter BLANCA.

BLAN. What Bedlam have we here, and where's Elvira?

---

[1] *Herself*, omitted by Dodsley and Reed.—*Collier.*

Digitized by Google

DON P. You have one here will know how to revenge
Conspiracies t' affront him: and you, lady,
Whoe'er you are, that seem to take upon you,
Y' had best produce the wicked thing you 've named,
Or by this steel— [BLANCA *cries out.*
BLAN. Ho! brother, brother! help against a madman!

Enter DON JULIO.

DON J. Peace, Blanca, peace, you know not what you say:
Don Pedro is master here.
BLAN. I know not your Don Pedro; but I'm sure
One to be tied in chains could do no more,
That he has done.
DON J. Have patience, sister: 'tis Elvira's father,
With cares enough upon him to justify
Any distemper.
BLAN. Precious! Elvira's father?—
Nay, then I leave you.
[BLANCA *flings out of the room.*
DON F. O the unluckiness of his coming
So unseasonably! 'Twas to prevent that,
I went abroad to seek him. [*Aside.*
DON P. What's this, Don Julio? can a gentleman
Of blood and honour use another thus?
What, after such engagements to the Duke
And to myself to be my friend and helper,
To prove the shelter of my shame's chief author?
I do not wonder now Don Zancho himself
Should have been here at midnight.

Digitized by Google

DON J. I am hard put to't: help, wit, to bring us off. [*Aside.*
Be as distemper'd as you please, Don Pedro,
It shall not alter me! but yet methinks
It would not ill become your gravity,
To think a while, before you make a judgment,
And rashly frame injurious conclusions
From things, wherein a friend has merited from you.
Do but consider, and then say, what Julio
Could do of more advance to what you wish,
Than, having found your daughter, to have brought her
To his own house, where she might be with honour
Accompanied, and serv'd as such by Blanca,
Until such time as, things maturely weigh'd,
You should a final resolution take.
And since Don Zancho's being here last night,
I see 's no secret t' ye, methinks you ought
T' have been so just to me, as to believe
That, since I admitted him within these walls,
It was in order to the serving you.

DON P. Noble Don Julio, you must pity have
Of an old man's distemper in affliction.
I see I was in the wrong; pray, pardon it.

DON J. O, this is more than needs. And now, good sir,
If you'll be pleas'd to walk a turn or two
I' the garden, I'll there give you a full account
How I have laid things for your satisfaction.

DON P. I'll wait on you.

DON J. Go, sir, there lies your way;
And you, boy, fail not, when Don Zancho comes,
[*Turning to the Page.*
To give me notice of it in the garden. [*Exeunt.*

Digitized by Google

Enter DON ZANCHO, *and passes over the stage with* CHICHON *after him: and enter* FRANCISCA, *and pulling* CHICHON, *stays him.*

FRAN. Stay, stay, Chichon, a word w' ye: it imports— [*She whispers with him.*

CHI. I hope you are not in earnest.

FRAN. By my soul, I am—
There is no other way, but for us both
To get up the back-way, and there to watch
The time to interpose.

CHI. Can she be such a fury? her looks are
All milk and honey.

FRAN. You cannot fancy anything so tragic,
But she is capable of executing,
When once provok'd in point of love and honour
Beyond her bounds of temper.

CHI. Lead the way—
I'll have the pleasure to bold up the fright [*Aside.*
She's in, since I am sure there is no danger,
Knowing, as I do, my master's mind towards Blanca:
Besides, 'tis to be hop'd, that these disorders
May produce somewhat that may put an end
To my master's quarrel, or afford me means
To give Fernando his letter. [*Exeunt.*

Enter DON FERNANDO, ELVIRA *lying upon the couch in the private apartment.*

DON. F. This last dissimulation moves me more
Than all the rest; but yet it must not alter
What honour hath inspir'd. See, how she lies,
And how, scarce brought to life from her dismay,
She resumes scorn, to have been sav'd by me!
But multiply what injuries thou wilt,
Perfidious maid, thou shalt not disappoint

Digitized by Google

Fernando of the glory that he aims at:
Of making thy proud heart, Elvira, owe
Its happiness to him. But I hear again [*He peeps*
A noise without—It is Don Zancho,
And I see Blanca coming towards him.
This falls out luckily, that I may hear
What passes; for certainly their meeting
Avowedly thus can be no other subject,
But what Don Julio has proposed to Blanca.
[*Exit as to hearken.*

Enter DON JULIO *and* DON PEDRO, *as in the garden.*

DON J. That's all the remedy, that in these cases
The wisest can propose unto themselves:
His fortune's strait, 'tis true.
DON P. That's what I least regard in this occasion,
So honour be but safe: the less they have,
The more will be her penance for her folly.
But should Don Zancho, upon any umbrage
From what has pass'd between them, prove so insolent
As to reject the marriage, then I trust—
DON J. O, say no more of that: rely upon't,
Should he be guilty of that horrid outrage,
This sword should pierce his heart, though th' only friend
I have i' the world should interpose his own.
And, sir, to let you see my frank proceeding,
Come along with me; I'll bring you to a place
Where, jointly overhearing all that passes
'Twixt him and Blanca, should he play the villain,
His life may pay for't, ere he stir from thence.
DON P. May heaven repay such generous acts of friendship! [*Exeunt.*

Digitized by Google

Enter DON ZANCHO, *and* FERNANDO *appears as behind the door.*

DON Z. For her so suddenly and so avowedly
To send for me hither, is very strange:
What can it mean?

Enter BLANCA.

BLAN. Now lend me temper, Heaven, but for a moment,
Till calmly I have drawn him to pronounce
The sentence of his own too noble death
For such a traitor— [*Aside.*
I think you come not without some surprise,
[*To him with an affected cheerfulness.*
Don Zancho, at my sending for you so:
But let's sit down, for I have much to say t' ye.
[*She takes him by the hand and seats him in one chair, and she sits herself in the other close to him on his right hand, and fumbles in her sleeve.*
I'm so well plac'd I cannot miss the mark. [*Aside.*
DON Z. Good madam, what's the matter? for I see
Disorder in you: put me out of pain.
BLAN. That I shall quickly do: [*Aside.*
Know then, Don Zancho,
In the first place, you must not interrupt me,
Whatever you shall hear; I'll take it ill else.
When I have done, then speak your mind at leisure.
I come not to argue, but conclude.
DON Z. Your will's a law to me;
But whither tends all this? [*Aside.*
BLAN. I do for once allow you to remember
All that has pass'd between us:

Digitized by Google

The folly of my love, the falsehood of yours;
That done, and never to be thought on more—
DON Z. For Heaven's sake, madam—
BLAN. Break not the rule was set:
Know I instructed am in all your story,
And am so far grown mistress of myself,
That I, who th' other day could scarce o'ercome
The sense of a slight failure at Madrid,
Can here at home suffer indignities,
And tell you calmly and with unconcern'dness,
Be you Elvira's and Elvira yours.
I come to do a part you little look'd for
From Blanca's spirit: I must make the marriage.
All things are ready, and her father here.
Now you may speak, Don Zancho; but the thing
Admits of no delay.
DON Z. But can this be in earnest? sure, it cannot.
What needs these trials of so firm a faith?
[*Pausing awhile.*
BLAN. Leave trifling; 'tis no longer time for tricks.
It is not in the pow'r of fate to alter
The resolution taken. [DON ZANCHO *pauses.*
DON. F. She has put it home. [*Aside.*
DON Z. Madam, you use me hardly; this demeanour
Passes my skill, to judge from whence it springs.
You say it is not in the pow'r of fate
To change your resolutions; but I'm sure,
If they be such, 'twill less be in its pow'r
To alter mine: but yet, before I die,
You must be left without excuse by knowing
The truth of all.
DON F. Here it imports indeed to be attentive.
[*Aside.*
DON Z. Madam, 'tis true that, absent at Madrid,
The custom of the court and vanity

Digitized by Google

Embark'd me lightly in a gallantry
With the most fam'd of beauties there, Elvira:
Those and no other the true motives were
To all my first addresses, till her scorns,
Which should have stopp'd them, had engag'd me more,
And made a love in jest a point of honour.
I bore all her disdains without transportment,
Till, having gain'd her waiting-woman's kindness,
I learn'd from her that all Elvira's slightings
She would have thought had sprung from severe maxims
And preciousness of humour, were th' effects
Of deep engagement in another love
With a young gallant, Don Fernando Solis,
With whom the cruel dame was so far gone,
As to admit him almost[1] every night
Into her chamber.

DON F. Bless'd gods, what do I hear? [*Aside.*

DON Z. [*continuing*] I, scarce believing the thing possible,
Urg'd my intelligencer to do for me
That which her lady for another did,
And to admit me to her chamber where,
By being eye-witness of her lady's actions,
I might transfer my entire love to herself.
She granted my request, and late one night,
Somewhat before the gallant's usual hour,
She brought me a back-way up to[2] her chamber,
Within Elvira's. My stay had not been long,
When, having found the truth of what she'd told me,
Converting rage into appearing kindness
To my informer, and expressing it

---

[1] *Almost* omitted by Dodsley and Reed.—*Collier.*
[2] [Old copy *into.*]

Digitized by Google

Uncautiously, we made a sudden noise,
With which Elvira alarm'd, and coming in,
Follow'd by Don Fernando, that fell out,
Which you have heard before.

[DON JULIO *beckoning* DON PEDRO *after him, passing over one corner of the stage.*

DON J. By this time, I suppose, she will have made
The proposition to the full, and we
Shall come at the just time to hear his answer.

[*Exeunt* DON PEDRO *and* DON JULIO.

DON Z. [*Continuing.*] If since that hour I have ever seen
Or thought upon her, till last night's surprise,
May I for ever perish : and methinks
The use of that to your advantage
Might challenge from you a more just construction.

BLAN. I told you at first, I came not here to argue,
But to conclude. Say, will you marry her?

[DON JULIO *and* DON PEDRO *peep out as from behind the hanging.*

DON J. W' are come, you see, just as we could have wish'd. [*Aside.*

DON P. His fate hangs on his lips. [*Aside.*

DON Z. You are mistress of your words and actions, madam,
And may use me as you please ; but this hand
Shall sooner pierce this heart than e'er be given
In marriage to Elvira.

[DON PEDRO *and* DON JULIO *rush in with their swords and daggers drawn, and* DON ZANCHO *draws too.*

DON P. Then, villain, die! Heav'n is too weak to save thee
By any other means.

[DON FERNANDO *draws, and rushing out.*

Digitized by Google

DON F. But here is one that shall—
Or fall by his side.
DON P. O heavens! what's this?
Don Fernando Solis protecting him!
Nay, then the whole world conspires against my honour.
BLAN. For heaven's sake, gentlemen!
[BLANCA *runs in between.*
CHI. Now, by my grandame's pantable,[1] 'tis pretty! [*From behind.*
I'll brush their coats, if once it come to fighting.
Fernando's of our side.
FRANCISCA, *and* CHICHON *with a long broom, run out also from behind the hanging.*
DON J. What frenzy's this, Fernando? was't not you
Engaged me to effect the marriage? Sure, w' are all
Bewitch'd.
DON F. Stay, my Don Julio, stay,
And let Don Pedro have patience but to hear me—
'Tis true; but you know well upon what grounds:
Those are quite chang'd by my having overheard
All that hath pass'd; for my Elvira, Julio,
Proves spotless in her faith, as in her beauty,
And I the only guilty, to have doubted.
What have I then to do, but here to prostrate
Myself at her offended father's feet,
And beg his pardon? that obtain'd, t' implore
His help to gain me hers, as to a person
In whom respect for him hath always held
Proportion with my passion for his daughter.
DON P. You know, Don Julio, when I spake with you,

---

[1] Or *pantofle.* In "Damon and Pithias" [iv. 67,] we have seen it called *pantacle.*—*Collier.*

Digitized by Google

The terms of estimation and respect,
Wherewith I mention'd t' ye this gentleman;
And, therefore, since in his address t' Elvira
There was no other fault, but making it
Unknown to me, and that I see his thoughts
Are truly noble, honour thus engaged,
That ought to be forgot, and I to think
Myself most happy in such a son-in-law.
But where's Elvira?

DON F. She's there within, where I dare not appear
Before her, knowing now such guilt upon me.
If Blanca would employ her interest
And eloquence, perhaps she might prevail
To get her hither, when she shall have told her
What changes a few minutes' time have wrought.

BLAN. I never went on a more pleasing errand.
[*Exit* BLANCA.

FRAN. I am struck dumb with wonder. [*Exit.*

DON F. Now Blanca is away, I'll take this time
To spare her blushes, Julio, and tell you,
Though I have broke one marriage for Don Zancho,
You needs must give me leave to make another;
To which, unless I'm very much deceiv'd,
You'll find on neither part repugnancy.

DON J. I understand you; and I thank the gods
They did not make me understand the wrong,
Till they have made it none, since I observe
Don Zancho's looks joining in your desires.

DON Z. A heart so full of love, as mine for Blanca,
Does best express itself when it speaks least.

Digitized by Google

Enter DONNA BLANCA, DONNA ELVIRA, *and* FRANCISCA. ELVIRA *casts herself at her father's feet.*

ELV. Now that the justice of the gods at length
Hath clear'd me from suspicions derogatory
To th' honour of your blood, I hope a cloister
May expiate my fault as to a father.
DON P. Rise, child. The enclosure I condemn you to [*Raising her.*
Is Don Fernando's arms: give him your hand.
ELV. 'Tis yours, sir, to dispose of, I confess,
And if it be your will, I must submit;
But let him know, who could suspect Elvira,
She never could be his but by obedience.
DON F. I am thunderstruck.
[ELVIRA *giving him her hand.*
ELV. Be not dismay'd, Fernando,
Since I profess this a mere act of duty;
Another duty may Elvira move
To reinflame on better grounds her love.
DON J. [*ironically.*] Blanca, I fear you'll hardly be persuaded
To give yours to Don Zancho; but a brother
For once may play the tyrant. Give it him:
It must be so. [*They join hands.*
DON F. I now renounce old maxims: having you,
Elvira, I am sure the very best proves true.
CHI. Hold there, I beg you, sir: that will appear
By that time you have married been a year.
[*Exeunt.*

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE MARRIAGE NIGHT.

Digitized by Google

EDITION.

The Mariage Night. Written by the Lord Viscount Fawkland.

Scientia non habet Inimicum
Præter Ignorantiam.

London. Printed by W. G. for R. Crofts at the Crown in Chancery-Lane under Sergeants-Inne. 1664. 4°.

The "Marriage Night" was excluded from the second and third editions of Dodsley's collection. The punctuation of the old copy, and of the reprint of 1744, is very corrupt; but the text itself seems to be unusually free from errors.

Digitized by Google

DODSLEY'S PREFACE.

HENRY CARY, VISCOUNT FALKLAND, was the son of him who is commonly called the Great Lord Falkland. He was a person very eminent for his extraordinary parts and heroic spirit. When he was first elected to serve in Parliament, some of the members opposed his admission, urging that he had not sowed his wild oats. "Then it will be the best way," replied he, "to sow them in the House, where there are geese enough to pick them up." He died in 1643, being cut off in the prime of his years, as much missed when dead, says Langbaine, as beloved when living. I am informed from very good hands, that it was he who wrote the epilogue to Lord Rochester's "Valentinian." And I believe the same person wrote the copy of verses, which is prefixed to Sandys' tragedy, entitled, "Christ's Passion," translated, or rather imitated, from the Latin of Hugo Grotius.

Digitized by Google

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

THE KING.
DE BEREO, *a duke, brother to the king.*
DE CASTRO, DESSANDRO, } *counts, brothers.*
DE FLAME, *a count.*
PIERE, SAMPAYO, } *two lords.*
DE LOOME, LA GITTERNE, } *attendants to the duke.*
SILLIMAN, *steward to the duchess.*
Two Judges.

CLAUDILLA, *a duchess.*
CLEARA, *sister to De Flame.*
TORGUINA, DE PRATE, } *ladies to the duchess.*
Attendants.

Scene, Castile.

Digitized by Google

THE MARRIAGE NIGHT.

ACTUS PRIMUS, SCENA PRIMA.

Enter PIREZ *and* SAMPAYO.

PIR. Is't possible?
Dessandro quit from his command o' th' citadel?
So sharply too? Brushing times, my lord!
Pray, by virtue of what offence?
SAMP. It may be treason to ask their wisdoms that;
But the huge mountebank, the vulgar rout,
Quarrel'd with's religion; 'cause 'tis not in the
Smallest print: and the king——was to say nothing.
PIR. Good King! I could wish something;
And heartily, if I durst: Well, from grave hypocrisy
And beardless wisdom, good heaven deliver us!
Nothing in his great father's memory to hold him
Worthy of his place.
SAMP. That makes him taste it
To the extremity of sense and anger.
PIR. Let us but slight some gull; or his gay dress,
Whose clothes and folly are his sense of honour;
How will it conjure up his blood, and bend his brow?

Digitized by Google

And can Dessandro want a just and valiant anger
To feel the merits of so brave a father,
And his own too (kept at a noble height)
Rendered disgraced and sullied? He may believe
H' has deserv'd better, both in himself and father:
But how does his resolution take it?

SAMP. As fire and air compress'd when (struggling) they
Break forth in thunders; or the vexed wind, amongst
A grove of trees, spending his scorn and rage.

PIR. Men of his soul and constitution cannot
Play with their passions, and stroke 'em tame,
When so provok'd. The duke!

Enter DUKE DE BEREO, *passing over the stage*, DE CASTRO *whispering with him*, DE LOOME, LA GITTERNE, *and other Attendants.*

DUKE. Let him be confident of me, in something
More worthy of himself than the command
H' has lost; and bid him use my promise.

DE C. We are the creatures
Of your favour; and but own our lives
T' acknowledge it. [*Exeunt.*

PIR. Here's state embroidery!
But pray'e, what holiday things be they that spread
So in his train? I don't remember I left
Such faces in the court.

SAMP. The first of them
Stalks in a knighthood, like a boy
In a Dutch burgher's doublet; and 'tis as much
Too wide for him; he has travell'd, and speaks languages,
As a barber's boy plays o' th' gittern; and those gay clouts, sir,
Came out of's father's shop.

Digitized by Google

PIR. His remnants.
The other? That looks like the age to come,
Which must be worse than this.
SAMP. His fortune and industry
Has preferr'd him to be barber and pimp;
Two men's places, till of late our noblemen,
Growing frugal, do find one may do
Both the employments.
PIR. It is both thriving and genteel.
SAMP. Genteel indeed; for they have produc'd knights,
And made statesmen of broken citizens with the help
Of a wife. But he, whose youth and sorrow shows him
Like a fair day, set in a cloudy evening is——
PIR. The Lord de Castro—I know him: and methinks
Some sparks of his father, great Velasco's, character
Shines in this young man through all the darkness
Of his fate.
SAMP. That name alone has glory enough
To make him a brave presage to us.
The duke's father's character was deriv'd,
And circled in himself; and a full age
Of men shall rarely show another of
So much great and balanc'd man in't.
PIR. They are all court-fancies; pageants of state:
And want allowance both of brain and soul,
To make their blood and titles weight
SAMP. He was strangely
Shuffled to the block.
PIR. That blow did bleed Castile too weak,
And left us in a faint and sickly pang.
SAMP. The pulse, sir, of Castile beats in another temper,
Than when you left it.

Digitized by Google

PIR. I find it: The city wears a cap, and looks
As if all were not right there.
SAMP. Except their wives.
PIR. The court, methinks, has strangely chang'd
Complexion too.
SAMP. Those that deride us say the clergy
Has catch'd the falling-sickness: the court, a deep
Consumption; and that the commons have the spleen.
PIR. I know not what disease the court has; but the Lords
Look as if they had oversat themselves at play,
And lost odds, so scurvily—
SAMP. How does your lordship find
The ladies?
PIR. I ha' not been amongst 'em yet
To take up my arrears: only had the court-happiness
To kiss her hand, who in herself contracts them all
For grace and lustre, the widow-duchess Claudilla.
SAMP. Why, there my admiration leaves you: I grant her
A brave and courtly girl; has trim and dazzle,
Enough of white and red, to attract the eye,
Like an indifferent copy, flourish'd with golden trails.
But place your judgment nearer, it retreats,
And cries you mercy for the mistake. At distance,
She is a goodly landskip.
PIR. Alas, her blooming beauties
Yet languish and pine o'er her husband's hearse,
Like roses scatter'd from the morning's brow
Into the day's parch'd lap.
SAMP. Their spring will shine again; grow glorious
And fruitful in the arms of her De Flame;
It is my hearty wish to their affections;

Digitized by Google

That count does bear an honour'd character
From all that know him.
PIR. A brave young man; and one that is more honour
To his title, than it to him. But when
Must their hymeneal tapers flame, and she
Offer her turtle pantings at the altar,
Purpling the morn with blushes, as she goes;
And scatter such bright rays, as the sun may
Dress his beams with for that day's glory?
SAMP. After
He has deliver'd his sister to Dessandro's hand,
He will not defer those minutes long; and he thinks himself
Behind in some expression of their friendship,
Until the knot meet there.
PIR. Cleara is a lady
Of a sweet and honour'd fame.
SAMP. All other of her sex
Are dull and sullied imitations, pale glimmerings,
Set by her. Whate'er the modest fictions
Of sweet'ned pens has meant, she is their moral.
PIR. You speak like one that knows what virtue is,
And can love it.

Enter DE CASTRO *and* DESSANDRO *to them.*

DES. I thank the duke; he has a right soul.
But, prythee, no more of these sad consolations;
They hang upon my heart like pond'rous weights
At trembling wires; or like the dull labourings
Of that clock, which groan'd out our dear father's
Fatal minute.
DE C. I have done.
DES. I could chide this tame and phlegmy vapour
From my blood. Our passions melt into soft

Digitized by Google

Murmurs, like hollow springs:
The manhood of cold hinds would not be tempted
To this sense, but leap with rage into their eyes;
Brother, it would; and wake 'em into tempests.
A wretched fly would show its spleen.
DE C. This anger will but show men, where you bleed,
And keep the wound still green.
DES. The scar will stick for ever.
O, the dark hypocrisy and juggling of our times!
Great men are slaves to slaves; and we are theirs:
The law's a tame wolf cowards and fools
May stroke with giving hands: while he shall
Couchant lie, and wag the tail; but show
His fangs at you and I. A noble wish
Is dangerous: is't not, my lord?
PIR. What, Dessandro?
DES. The vulgar's a kennel of black-mouth'd dogs,
That worry men's deserts and fame: my curse
Fester in their temples!
DE C. Prythee, Dessandro, collect these scatter'd thoughts.
DES. I'll hollow them through all the world, and say't
Again. Worth and honour now are crimes, and giants
'Gainst the state. My lords, shall's be merry,
And talk something the hangman may thank
Us for?
PIR. Treason? I vow, Dessandro, I speak the worst
Ex tempore of any man living.
SAMP. I could mutter it well enough; but I'm to marry
A city widow, and buy a place at court.
PIR. When I have sold my land, we'll venture on

Digitized by Google

A merry catch, and ever subscribe your servant,
Noble Dessandro.

DES. I shall find a time and place to pay your lordship
The accompt of my engagements.

DE C. Brother, my attendance calls me to the king;
I'll wait upon your lordship, if y'are for the court.

PIR. Your lordship's servant thither. [*Exeunt.*

DES. So streams divide, and ruffle by their banks.
My brother's of a safe contracted bosom:
Can strangle his labouring rages in their thought;
When they do tug like poisons at my breast,
Until I give them air. But I'll observe,
And creep into men's souls: hug my dear anger
To myself, until it gnaw my entrails through,
That men may court my patience and discourse,
As now they shun it.
And when black night has stretch'd her gloomy limbs,
And laid her head upon some mountain-top,
Bound up in foggy mists, then keep my haunts
By some dull-groaning stream, with screeching owls
And bats; there pay my broken thoughts
Unto thy ghost, Velasco!——
Echo shall wake, and midnight, to help me curse their souls
That thrust thee to thy grave; whilst I will hang
About night's neck, until the moon do wake
To rescue her.

Enter the DUKE.

DUKE. Dessandro,
You must not be angry my power came short

Digitized by Google

Of my desires to serve you: we'll try some other way.
You see by what engines the times move;
The king refers all to his council; and though
They do not tie his hands, they hold 'em by a strange
Courtesy. I'm but a single looker-on: perhaps
They may take notice of me for his brother;
That is, when they please, too; but this
Came nearest to me; upon the engagement of my honour
To deny my friend, and one, whose single faith
Had been enough for all the kingdom's safety—
The holding of such a trifle as the citadel.

DES. It has recompens'd me in part to know, where
That close annoy lay which wounded me i' th' dark:
I shall now collect myself against it; and know,
My lord, where my poor life and powers are
To be prostrate. Could I enlarge them to my wish,
They might appear, sir, to your highness' use.

DUKE. I know how far you can, bravest man;
Your worth has taken fire here, where I will
Preserve it in a noble flame.
My greatest thirst of fame is my expression
To men of your merit, who cannot want
A friend, whilst I have power to be one:
But I am scanted and weak'ned in my desires,
Else fam'd Velasco had not yet slept in his dust
To please the common hangman; nor men of glorious
Parts live shrouded in obscure homes, like
Pamphlets out of date.

DES. You are the patron of our honoured actions,

Digitized by Google

And all their glory meets and circles in
Your fame.
DUKE. I will disengage you from this forc'd compliment:
It keeps me at too great a distance from that
Bosom, where I would lodge a friend, Dessandro:
I must take't unkindly too, that in the scroll
Of all your friends I stand dash'd out, a stranger
To your joys.
DES. My lord!
DUKE. But you shall not steal the day so: I'll be
One at the ceremony, though the bride tell me
In a blush, I came unwish'd-for.
DES. 'Tis but the busy voice that, like the nightmare,
Rides men, and can find strange shapes and prodigies
I' th' clouds. I must confess, Cleara has the
Engagement of all her virtues and a brother's on me.
When it concerns me nearer, it must not be a secret
To your highness, to whom all that's deriv'd
To my poor life and fortune is a just debt.
DUKE. You know the way unto a friend—if you can think
I have power enough to make me so.
DES. Sir, I was only showed to the world to be talk'd on:
Fortune (I thank her) has given me many knacks
To play with in her mood, but taken 'em away again scurvily,
To tell me I was not born to any real purpose;
And I wish nothing she can give me.
DUKE. She will acknowledge her mistake, and put

Digitized by Google

On her smiles to court your merits.
La Gitterne, is the king come from's sport?
[LA GITTERNE *waits.*
LA G. He dines abroad, my lord.
DUKE. Colonel, this day you shall bestow on me:
I owe the Duchess Claudilla a visit;
Make ready straight; we'll spend a dinner-time
There, and the afternoon at tennis. [*Exeunt.*

A SONG.

That done, CLAUDILLA *and* DE FLAME *discovered sitting in a rich couch; at each end a lady waiting.*

DE F. This does but find our melancholy out,
And cast it in a minute's trance; when one
Soft accent from Claudilla's voice leaves nought
That's earth about me. My soul's in her Elysium,
And every sense immortal, dilated into joys:
Heaven becomes attentive, and the soft winds
Put on their perfum'd wings to hover near those lips.
That blush does show the sparkles of some incensed thought!
My poor expressions rob ye; but I appeal
To this white hand for pardon.
CLAUD. Sir, my thoughts are all acknowledgments of that delight
I hear and see you with, what dress soe'er you please
To send your courtship in to try 'em;
We have outliv'd those arts and common charms,
And need not seek our hearts in scatter'd flames;
As those, whose lesson yet is at the hand or eye;

Digitized by Google

Our hearts have read Love's deep divinity
And all his amorous volumes over; we must write
Stories of our love, my lord.
DE F. And chaste ones, madam:
How glorious the frontispiece would show
With great Claudilla's name, tried in a true
Love's knot to her De Flame's! Though the
Great distance of your shining attributes both
Of blood and virtue, consider'd in the poverty of mine,
Would draw squint eyes and envy to my stars;
But speak your name great as the example of your
Goodness, and make it worth the imitation
Of all noble minds, that shall but read your love
And sweetness, which (most excellent of your sex)
Condescended unto me, who else had
Languish'd in a heap of ashes.
CLAUD. My lord, you have found an easy way into
My heart, and won me from myself, ere I
Could call my thoughts [forth] to resistance;
Such strength brought your deserts! But now
I hope, nay, can be confident (best sir), they are
Treasured in a breast, whose virtues will
Preserve them with themselves.
DE F. O madam!
CLAUD. It may be, some discourse that, when first
I entertain'd your love, I had not yet given
The world and my dead husband's earth a full
Accompt of sorrow, or paid his memory
A year's just rent of tears: but I appeal
To my own heart; and you, my lord, can say——
DE F. Your heart has been but too severe unto itself;
And I can say I have not seen a beam break

Digitized by Google

From those eyes, but through dark clouds and showers;
Or like the sun, drench'd in the swelling main;
Nor a look with the least comfort of a smile in't.
Nay, divinest madam, now you do but chide
Heaven in your tears, and cannot raise the dead.

CLAUD. True, sir.

DE F. Tears are but shallow murmurs of our grief.
I envy not his grave a tear, but owe all
Noble mention to't; yet, madam, I did hope
You had discharg'd the smart and cruelty of grief
From your soft breast, and would call your beauties
[Back] to their natural springs.
Look on yourself, rare lady, in this change:
With what high flame and rapture it becomes you:
So breaks the morning forth of a crystal cloud,
And so the sun ascends his glittering chair,
And from his burnish'd locks shakes day about.
The summer puts not on more delights and various
Glory, than shines in bright Claudilla;
And shall the grave exhaust their pride
And youth?

Enter TORGUINA.

TOR. Madam, the king's brother gives you a visit.

DE F. Who's with him?

TOR. The colonel your lordship calls friend.

DE F. Dessandro?

CLAUD. Let's meet 'em, sir. [*Exeunt.*

Digitized by Google

ACTUS SECUNDUS, SCENA PRIMA.

Enter the DUKE, DUCHESS, CLEARA, DE FLAME, DESSANDRA, *Attendants.*

DUKE. I'm in arrears yet unto your grace.
CLAUD. A widow's entertainment, sir, you please to honour.
DUKE. I wish the hours but short, that bring the night
You are to lose that name in; and then, to what
Length your own desires would spin 'em,
Widow! Madam, there's disconsonancy in
The name, methinks. Claudilla widow!
Duchess, and still widow (like a cypress
Cast o'er a bed of lilies) darkens your other titles:
'Tis a weed in your garden, and will spoil the youth
And beauty it grows nigh: a word of mortality
Or a *memento mori* to all young ladies,
And a passing-bell to old ones. Indeed, it is
A mere privation; and all widows are in
The state of outlaws, till married again.
CLAUD. Your highness holds a merry opinion of us
Poor widows.
DE F. I say virgins are the ore: widows,
The gold tried and refin'd.
DUKE. A fair young lady and widow is
A rich piece of stuff rumpled: an old one's
A blotting-paper a man shall never
Write anything on—she sinks so.
Dessandro, your comment.
DE F. Friend, you are dull o' th' sudden.
CLE. He is not well.
CLAUD. Not well, sir?

Digitized by Google

DES. Not well, madam.
DUKE. Dull! Shall's to tennis? I have some pistolets
Will pay your borrow'd time, Dessandro.
DES. Your pardon, sir: I am unfit to wait on you.
My life hangs in a dew upon me;
And I have drunk poison.
DE F. Ha!
A physician with all speed! Dessandro!
CLE. Dear sir!
DES. Cleara! Lend me thy hand: so—
I'm struck upon a rock. [*Swoons.*
CLE. He's dead; I shall not overtake him.
DUKE. Look to the lady.
CLAUD. He swells like a stopp'd torrent or a teeming cloud;
Have I no servants there? [*Carry him off.*
DE F. What a sudden storm is fallen?
DUKE. How fares the lady?
CLAUD. Madam!
CLE. As you are tender-natur'd, let no hand
Close his eyes but mine: I am come back
Thus far to take my farewell on his cold lip.
[DE FLAME *returns.*
DE F. Sister, let thy warm blood flow back:
Thy Dessandro lives, my girl!
CLE. O, may I not see him?
DE F. You shall. [*Exeunt.*
DUKE. Give me leave to make this opportunity happy
On your hand. How! Not vouchsafe it?
[DUCHESS *goes off.*
What a tyranny shot from her scornful eye!
Where have I lost myself and her?
There's a cross and peevish genius haunts my hopes;

Digitized by Google

A black and envious cloud; and I must get above it.
Not kiss your hand? Is your blood surfeited? I'll quit
This scorn; indeed I will, coy madam!
Thou, that are lord of my proud horoscope;
Great soul of mysteries, kindle my brain
With thy immortal fires!
That if I fall, my name may rise divine:
So Cæsar's glory set, and so set mine! [*Exit.*

Enter SILLIMAN, *a bottle tied in a riband to his pocket.*

SIL. Brave canary, intelligent canary,
That does refresh our weak and mortal bodies!
I will have thee canonis'd Saint Canary at
My own charge, and call my eldest son
Canary. Yet for a man to love thee at
His own cost is damnable, very damnable;
And I defy it.
And Siss is the blithest lass in our town,
For she sells ale by the pound and the dozen;
Ale! Hang ale!

Enter a MESSENGER.

MES. By your worship's leave, I would speak with
Signior Silliman, the Duchess's steward, an't like ye.
SIL. Wou'd you speak with Signior Silliman, an't like ye?
MES. Please God and your worship, an't like ye.
SIL. In what language wou'd you speak with him, hum?

Digitized by Google

MES. Yes, verily, I would speak with him, an't like ye.

SIL. At what posture?

MES. Marry, from a friend, an't like ye.

SIL. Very good, my friend. Didst ever say thy [*Drinks.*

Prayers in the canary tongue?

MES. My prayers, an't like ye? Your worship's dispos'd

To be merry: I have a wife and seven small

Children, an't like ye, to wind and turn as they say,

Simple as your worship sees me here, an't like ye.

SIL. Pox o' wives; I'll not give a gazet for thy wife;

She's tough, and too much powder'd. Fetch me

Thy daughter, thy youngest daughter, sirrah!

If the creature be a virgin, and desirable:

Look ye! there's money to buy her clean linen.

I'll have a bath of rich canary and Venus' milk;

Where we will bathe and swim together, like

So many swans, and then be call'd Signior

Jupiter Sillimano. But is she man's meat?

I have a tender appetite, and can scarcely digest

One in her teens.

MES. Does your worship think I wou'd be a Judas, an't like ye?

She's as neat a girl, and as tight at her business

As the back of your hand, an't like ye; but heaven

Bless ye, and cry ye mercy, if you be his worship,

Here's a letter from the Lady de Prate, an't like ye.

SIL. The Lady de Prate (mark me, sirrah) is a

Noble lady; we say so—— [*Reads a letter.*

I never knew what bondage was till now;
I fear the gilded heart you sent me was

Digitized by Google

Enchanted—(O, O)—*I long to see you*—
(Hum—hum)—*therefore let me have the happiness*
To know the place and time—(even so)—*as*
You love her, that blushes to write this——

Yes, yes, I'll enchant ye! I'll time and place ye!
Surely, there's something more about me, than I can
Perceive. Grant that I may bear my fate
Discreetly! *I never knew what bondage was* [*Reads.*
Till now. Well; 'tis heaven's goodness! For what am I,
Silly wretch, to such a lady, as she that writes so
Pitifully unto me? It wou'd overcome e'en a heart
Of flint: Good gentlewoman! [*Weeps.*
As you love her, that blushes to write this— [*Reads.*
Hum—yes, yes; she knows I love her: it
Will work—I can't contain my good-nature.
[*Drinks and weeps.*

Enter LA GITTERNE *and* DE LOOME.

DE L. Here he is; and stands like a map of
Sundry countries. [*Aside.*
LA G. One wou'd take him for some foreign beast,
And that fellow to show him. How the gander
Ruffles and prunes himself, as if he would
Tread the goose by him!
DE L. 'Tis a pure goat!
LA G. And will clamber a pyramid in scent of's female.
DE L. The wenches swear, he kisses like a giant still;
And will ride his heats as cleanly as a dieted
Gelding. Let's fall in. Signior Silliman!
My best wishes kiss your hand.

Digitized by Google

LA G. Continue me worthy of the title of your servant, sir.

SIL. I am very glad to see you well; and hope you are
In good health and sound, gentlemen.

LA G. And when shall's draw cuts again for a Wench, signior, ha?

SIL. Your pleasure [is] to say so.

DE L. The slave's rose-drunk, o' my life.

SIL. Please you to take notice of my worthy friend here.

DE L. Your admirer, sir. [*Salutes* MESSENGER.

LA G. Slave to your sedan, sir.

MES. God bless the good duchess, and all that love the
King, I say, gentlemen, an't like ye.

DE L. Pray, sir, what news abroad, or at court?

MES. News, quotha! Indeed, sir, the truth is I am a
Shoemaker by my trade; my name is Latchet,
And I work to some ladies in the house here,
Though I say't myself; and yet the times were
Never harder, nor leather dearer.

DE L. This winter will make amends;
You shall have horse-hides cheap, horsehides dog-cheap.

LATCH. Cheap, quotha! Why, sir, I'll tell you, (for you
Look like a very honest gentleman), I am put to
Find a pike myself; and must, the parish swears,
Or lose all the shoes in my shop.

DE L. 'Tis very brave! Why, you look like a champion;
And have a face the parish may confide in.

LATCH. Fide, quotha! sir; be judge yourself, if ever
You knew the like. I have been at the trade

Digitized by Google

This forty years, off and on; and those children's
Shoes, I have sold for sixpence or a groat upon some
Occasion, we now sell for twelvepence, as they say.
DE L. Then the misery is, you get the more.
LATCH. More, quotha! Pray, sir, a word. You are a
Courtier, if I may be so bold. They say we must
All be fain to shut up shop, and mortgage
Our wives to the soldiers. D'ye hear any
Such talk, sir?
DE L. Some buzzing: but the blades will not accept 'em
Without special articles and a flock of money and
Plate, to keep the babies they shall beget valiant.
LATCH. Valiant, quoth-a! Truly, sir, I'll tell ye,
On the truth of a poor man, my Lady de Prate's foot
Is but of the sixes; and yet we pay five pistoles
A dicker.
SIL. My lady's foot but o' the sixes? you lie, sirrah!
By Saint Hugh! there's never a lady i' th' land has a
Prettier foot and leg; if you ha' not spoil'd 'em
With your calf's-skin, sirrah.
LA G. Why, the sixes is a good handsome size for a lady.
LATCH. Lady, quotha! my life for her's, there's few ladies
I' the court go more upright, nor pay better:
I'll say that.
SIL. You say that? foh! I scorn to wear an inch
Of leather thy nasty flesh shall handle.
DE L. O, your worthy friend, signior; and an elder in's parish;

Digitized by Google

A pikeman too for the republic. Come, come,
He shall be shoemaker to us all. Canst trust?

LATCH. Trust, quotha! My name's Latchet, sir. I
Serv'd eleven years to my vocation, before I
Could be free, and have drunk many a good bowl
Of beer i' th' duchess's cellar since that.

DE L. I like a man can answer so punctually
To a thing.

LATCH. Thing, quotha! it is our trade, sir.

DE L. Spoke like the warden of the company!
[*Exeunt.*

Enter CLAUDILLA, *and* DESSANDRO *in a nightgown.*

CLAUD. I am at extremity of wonder.

DES. The story may deserve it, lady; when you shall
Cast your thoughts upon the man it treats on;
The circumstances and progress of my love:
Nay, it may raise your anger higher than your wonder;
And work the modest pantings of your breast
Into a hectic rage. I saw this tempest
Gather'd in a cloud, dismal and black, ready to break
Its womb in storms upon me; and I have cast
My soul on every frown and horror you can arm
Your passion with. I have held conflict with the wilder
Guilt and tremblings of my blood to rescue it; but
Heaven and my angry fate has thrown me grovelling
At your feet; and I want soul to break the charm.

CLAUD. This is a strange mystery, to betray my virtue
With your own; and I shall sin to hear it.

Digitized by Google

DES. If pity be a sin, lock up those beauties
From the view of men; or they will damn all the
Eyes that look upon you.
CLAUD. Has your blood lost all the virtue it
should inherit?
And think you by this treacherous siege to take
My honour in? Let me shun you, or you will
Talk me leprous.
DES. Do, madam.
Tear up the wounds your eyes have made——
I'll keep them bleeding sacrifices to your cruelty.
And when cold Death has cast his gloomy shade
O'er this dust, perhaps you may bestow one gentle
Sigh to hallow it: when you shall know
The height of my desires was but to die worthy
Of your pardon, without the ambition of a bolder
thought:
And still had scorch'd and smother'd here without
A tongue, only to beg your mercy to my grave.
CLAUD. Play not yourself into a shame will rust
your brightest
Worths, and hide your dust in curses and black
fame:
I now shall think your valour flatter'd, that can
Sink it to such effeminate and lovesick crafts,
For our stale women to mollify the usher with.
Dessandro has a fame, high and active as the voice
It flies on; and could you wander from your
Religious self in such a dream as this?
Cleara's virtue has an interest near your heart,
Should wake you to your first man again.
DES. Cleara still is here in the first sculpture of
Her virtues; and I their honourer.
CLAUD. No more!——
My grief and shame are passionate, to find
So much bad man got near your heart; and shows
This sick complexion in your honour, more

Digitized by Google

Tainted than the face of your imposture.——
You have play'd the excellent counterfeit, and your skill
Does make you proud: you cannot blush— [*Exit.*
DES. She's gone;—
A star shot from her eye, and light'ned through
My blood. I must provide for thunder and
Thy revenge, De Flame, as horrid as thought can
Shape it.

Enter CLEARA.

CLE. Sir!
DES. Proud love, I'll meet thee with burning sighs
And bleeding turtles at thy shrine. [*Aside.*
CLE. This is too bold a hazard for your health,
Which yet sits wan and troubled on your cheek.
DES. Madam!
CLE. Indeed, I'll chide ye. [*Aside.*
DES. O, cry ye mercy!
Some retired meditations.
CLE. I shall observe 'em;
Let me but leave you with the joy to know
I stand not in the hazard of that frown.
DES. We'll kiss next time.
CLE. Sir!
DES. Or never.
CLE. Ha! d'ye know me?
DES. So well, methinks we should not part so soon:
Our hearts have been more ceremonious, and hung
In panting sighs upon our lips, to bid adieu.
One kiss must now sum up all; and seal their
General release. I know Cleara more constant
To her virtue and brave mind, than to ask heaven
Idle questions. 'Tis fate, not will. [*Exit.*
CLE. So.

Digitized by Google

I feel thy marble hand lie here: 'Tis cold, and heavy!
How my poor heart throbs under it, and struggles to
Find air! not one kind sigh lend thee a gale
For yonder haven! It's gone! quite vanish'd!
Beshrew me, it was a most horrible apparition!
I wou'd not see it again
In such a cruel look for all my hopes;
Yet it held me gently by the hand, and left a warm farewell there,
As my Dessandro us'd. As my Dessandro, said I?
O, how fain my hopes would mock my apprehension;
And that my sorrow!——
I'll woo thy pity with my groans, kind earth!
And lay my throbbing breast to thine!
Until I am dissolv'd into a spring,
Whose murmurs shall eternally repeat
This minute's story.

Enter DE FLAME.

DE F. Ha!
Cleara, drown'd in her own tears? Sister! Cleara!
CLE. I had a gentle slumber; and all the world (Methought) was in a midnight calm.
DE F. Dear girl,
Clear up those sad eyes and my cold doubts.
Prythee, tell me, is our Dessandro dead?
CLE. Heaven defend!
DE F. No! what then, in all the volumes of black destiny
And nature, can throw you into this posture?
Unkind Cleara, why dost dissemble it? I see him
Breathless on thy cheek, and lost.
CLE. Lost for ever.

Digitized by Google

DE F. My fears did prompt me so. For ever!
There's horror and amazement in the thought.
See, Cleara, my eyes can overtake thee.
Gone at so short a farewell, friend? Death,
Thou art the murderer of all our joys and hopes.
CLE. Sir, Dessandro's well, very well; we parted
Even but now.
DE F. What!
CLE. O brother, I have lost a jewel that he gave me;
I shall vex my eyes out.
DE F. Beshrew this serious folly; you have vex'd my
Blood into a sullen fit.
CLE. You shall not chide me;
Tell me, didst ever in thy life meet with a grief
That made thy poor heart sick, and did divide
Thy sleeps and hours into groans and sighs?
DE F. Never, [I] thank my indifferent fate.
CLE. Nor in the legend of some injur'd maid,
That made thine eye to pause, and with a tear
Bedew it?
DE F. I cannot untie riddled knots, Cleara.
CLE. Come, I'll but dry mine eyes, and tell you a story,
That shall deserve a groan. [*Exeunt.*

ACTUS TERTIUS. SCENA PRIMA.

Enter DE CASTRO *and* DESSANDRO.

DES. Tush! they had only tongue
And malice; and that great zeal they
Seem'd to owe to Rome was unto themselves

Digitized by Google

And their own estates. What were they but wranglers
In schools and law? and studied words to make men
Guilty. They liv'd at ease; and slept in purples and
Warm furs; but bold-minded Catiline threat'ned
Their wise sleeps.
DE C. There was too much attempt and fact in't.
DES. 'Twas fact then to look sour on a gown-man:
They were mere citizens, jealous of their wives
And daughters—that condemn'd 'em too!
De Castro, there's a lethargy in our blood;
We sleep and dream away our lives. If such
Wore purple for well-talking, what shall he merit,
That cures the wounds and smart his country groans with?
DE C. The people shall enshrine his name with reverence;
And fill their temples with his statues. 'Tis
The great end we are all born to.
DES. Which can't be, whilst by-respect shall closely
Wound the bosom of our laws and freedom:
For what was't less, that took our father's life?
DE C. In whose blow the heads of all brave men were
Threat'ned.
DES. Then, if we dare not do a general good,
Yet let us secure our own dear lives and honours.
DE C. The State is full of dangerous whispers.
DES. There's an imposthume swells it.
DE C. Wou'd 'twere lanc'd!
DES. Spoken with the soul of Cassius! We have the cure,
And may do it with a little stir. But then

Digitized by Google

We must deal like true physicians of state;
And where we find it ulcer'd (though in ourselves,
Friends and allies), not lay soft effeminate hands on't.
Nature has made us nearest to ourselves:
And I would pay the last warm drop of blood
From all these veins, to see the hopes and honours of our blood
(That's now benighted in our father's fate)
Dawn on De Castro's youth again.
DE C. No, Dessandro; these hopes are lost upon a high
And angry sea; and I must see fools and stale
Parasites (whose progeny ne'er bled one drop, nor had
A valiant thought to serve their country) begin
A spurious issue on my birthright, that will on tiptoes,
Collossus-like, bestride us, and grasp our fate.
DES. Take me into thy bosom, brave man; we meet
Like amorous streams, and as we ought;
Our honour, life and fortunes have but one heart.
Give me thy hand, De Castro. This sword
[*Draws.*
Our father hath oft made glorious in the blood
Of De Castro's foes; and I'll not doubt,
How much it prompts thy valiant soul.
O brother, tears, and some sad discourse,
Is all that we have paid him yet. Strangers
Can be far braver in their sense unto his fame.
The tears we ought to shed ought to be blood, De Castro!
Blood, warm from their veins, that made us weep
In streams, and mingle it with the dust of vulgar
Feet, as they did his. Swear by all the glorious acts

Digitized by Google

Of our great ancestry, their hallowed urns,
Our father's injur'd memory, and all
The hopes and honour we derive from them,
To pay his blood a sad account in some
Revenge, worthy his ghost and our bold hands.
DE C. All which religiously I vow to.
DES. And I. So now we are brothers by as strong
Divinity as nature. I'll not break open the
Design, till we shall hear't confirm'd by higher warrant:
Anon meet at the Duchess-Dowager's.
DE C. Claudilla's?
DES. Yes; where you shall hear something worthy the
Encouragement of our father's spirit in thee.
I am now to wait upon the duke: he
That keeps us what we are.
DE C. The duke!——I have the game in view,
And now discern what I must pay him for my place.
DES. You are full of thoughts, my lord!
DE C. Brother, our lives are on the cast; but 'tis not that
Does interpose 'em. There's something in my fears
Still presents Cleara. Take heed, Dessandro;
A virgin's tears leave sad and fatal prints.
DES. Your wishes are a brother's; but those dreams
Chill not my sleeps. Think on that concerns us
Near, and be active.
DE C. I shall not fail ye. Farewell!
[*Exit* DE CASTRO.

Enter PIREZ.

PIR. Colonel Dessandro!

Digitized by Google

DES. Your lordship's pardon: Which way walk you?

PIR. As you please to dispose me; my business
Now designs it so: 'Tis there, in short.

[*Gives a paper, which* DESSANDRO *reads.*

I love this gallant mastery of a man's self:
I look'd his temper would have flam'd about my ears.
Not a sparkle in his brow, nor the least change of blood.
Strange! I have seen him ruffl'd into a storm,
And all fury: now, not a frown nor smile!

DES. De Flame? Well,
My lord, this is a down-flat challenge.

PIR. I brought it for one.

DES. I accept it, with thanks to your lordship, and shall be
Ready to serve you in any power I have.

PIR. 'Tis not worth it, colonel.

DES. The Lord de Flame's angry, it seems, that Fortune should
Give me right without his hand in't; he has turn'd his style
High and strangely on me: But I shall coolly respite
That, till we have room to argue it. That he is
Far more worthy his expectations in the duchess, I can
Confess: that's no assent, sir, to my quarrel, nor yet
A law to her. For those, whom her thoughts please
To think most worthy, are so to her.

PIR. But does not bind the opinion of another.

DES. Nor that opinion her freedom.

PIR. Yet there be rules in virtue, from which all noble
Judgments should take their level, even in love itself.

Digitized by Google

DES. If it be thought she's too partial in her grace
To me, I shall dispute it, as 'tis question'd.
PIR. I come not to add exceptions, or to make any.
DES. I stand not in so cheap a rank, but that her
Favour may make my services as meritorious
As his lordship's, and can engage as much blood and
Fame for't.
PIR. You know him of a noble breast, and one
That will not flatter weak pretences into truths;
Nor let 'em work with such impressions on his soul,
Did not his honour bleed in't. Sir, I come,
As one that ever honour'd your great parts,
And wish that you could think on't o'er again.
Think how black you must expect that morn to rise
Upon your wishes, when you lead her to the altar;
Where the faint lights with blue and ghastly flames
Will receive ye; and all the things of holy ceremony
Present pale glimmerings to your eyes, to fright your bride
Back unto her first vows. And then, methinks,
Each tear and groan the fair Cleara sends
To overtake ye, should show a speaking fury
To untwine your trembling hands.
DES. No; nor all the squadrons hell can spare
To aid them—though her brother led them on,
And you brought up the rear!
PIR. Sir!
DES. Pish! the meanest thought Claudilla
Pleases to bestow here (under this humble guard)
Must be without the affright (my lord) of all the
Dangers in his muster, stare they like giants
On me, and in armies. As for Cleara,
If she held flattering glasses to her thoughts

Digitized by Google

Which render'd 'em wide and airy, they must not forfeit
Me. You may deserve her better. I'll not start, sir,
A scruple from his demands and yours. Expect it,
And so farewell. [*Going off.*

PIR. Farewell.——The time?

DES. I shall think on't.

PIR. Shall? It must not so tamely be thought on.

DES. How?

PIR. I spoke it, sir.

DES. Are you sent to own the quarrel?

PIR. No; but look on't with so much soul, as I think't
An honour to wear a sword in't.

DES. Go, go hang it in your mistress's chamber!
It stinks, sir, of perfume.

PIR. It may, sir (for destiny has many ways to the wood [1]),
Cut your throat; and then I'll give't your footboy.

DES. My throat, Pirez! that saucy thought has
Ruin'd thee. [*Fight.*

Enter SAMPAYO *and* DE LOOME.

SAMP. Hold, hold, colonel.

DE L. My lord, y'are hurt. [*To* PIREZ.

PIR. I must owe him this for't.

DES. Canst talk yet?

SAMP. Command your passion; see how the common herd
Come gazing in. Do not become their talk
And wonder. Noble Dessandro! put up, my lord!
Thank ye. [*They part.*

[1] [The common saying is, "There are more ways to the wood than one."]

Digitized by Google

DE L. Sir, my lord duke sent me to tell you
He expects your company.
DES. I wait on him. [To PIREZ.] Bid the ladies tear
Their clean smocks to wrap you in.
PIR. Insolent man! [*Offers to fight.*
SAMP. Again! [*Exeunt.*

Enter three TOWNSMEN, *as the Watch.*

1ST T. Was not I about to tell you so? They would be afraid of true men, when we came.

2D T. By'r lady; but that mun not serve their turns; for we must know flatly which was plantan and which defendam,[1] or we shall discharge but a sorry conscience to the king's justice.

1ST T. I'll take my oath upon the corporal Bible, I saw two glittering swords run a tilt, and two to that, if need be.

2D T. Neighbours, I cannot tell; we are old men, or should be at least; some of us have lived threescore years and upwards in a parish, as they say; I name nobody; and therefore it is good to be sure, and make all our tales *bonum fidrum:* for we are not all one man's children. And yet, if I be not mistaken, I am sure I saw three more, and glittering ones indeed, as you call them. God bless every good man and woman from the like! They e'en yearned my heart; and yet, by my fay, I am a hundred and two, come the time.

3D T. You talk like sucking infants. Neighbours, I'll be sworn, if I were to take my oath before the best man living, high or low, there was twenty drawn swords, little and great. I'm sure, I might ha' seen 'em, like a fool, had I been worth my head, but my little boy Jack did.

[1] [Plaintiff and defendant.]

Digitized by Google

1ST T. La, there; and that same's a murrain wise boy, if you mark him, and will see a thing, I warrant you, as soon as the wisest of us all, were he twice as old again.

3D T. I could ha' seen too at his bigness, for all I'm lame now, God help us! You remember the Powder Plot?

2D T. Powder Plot, quotha! I shall not forget it, while the world stands.

1ST T. Nor I, were I to die a thousand deaths.

3D T. That very day was I working in our garret.

2D T. Say you so?

1ST T. Nay, neighbours, beshrew me, this may be true; for I have known this man here able to do as tight a day's work by noon, as the tallest fellow the king keeps (God bless him!) take him from top to toe.

3D T. All's one for that. Mark me! there has not been a glass window there time out of mind: since I came nor after; and I tell you truly (I'm a false liar else) I smelt the powder as hot as if it had been done the next day.

1ST T. See, see, the wind! the wind, neighbours, is much; God bless us!

3D T. Go to; I am no made fool, though a born fool, my masters. True, the wind may be something, as you say. But if there had not been something else, I would not give a fart for't. I did not work at court with a master-carpenter for nothing, my boys; and see the king's grace fasting and full, as I did, to a hairsbreadth, as they say. Let me alone for casting my cards, give me but ground enough; and yet I can neither write nor read, heaven make me thankful!

2D T. Heaven make us all thankful! I have seen the king too in my prime, and gave him a beck

Digitized by Google

upon his milk-white steed; as near as one should say, what's this? and all his royal lords and ladies sporting.

1ST T. Ay, ay, those were the days (peace be with 'em!) a poor man's tale might be heard at court. There are some lords and ladies now were lousy then.

3D T. Go thy ways, by the rood! Nay, he'll have his old talk, for all the world, up and down.

1ST T. It was ever my condition; I care not who knows it; and yet I never scathed the least sucking child that begs his bread; but little does another man know where the king's shoe wrings him, but those that wear it, as my mother would often say; and she lived long enough to know it.

3D T. Nay, that's certain; the king's but a man, as we three are; no more is the queen, if you go to that. Did you never hear of my uncle's observations? He's but a poor knave (as they call him), but such a knave as cares neither for king nor kæsar, the least on 'em.

1ST T. Then he may be hanged, neighbour Palmer.

3D T. If he be, he's not the first that has been hanged for treason, I hope. [*Exeunt.*

Enter the DUKE *and* CLAUDILLA.

DUKE. That frown was shot with pretty tyranny
From your brow; but this kiss shall sacrifice
Me to my Claudilla's bosom.

CLAUD. You'll sully your honour in't; widows are but rumpled stuff.

DUKE. That again! By all my hopes and by thyself, the next and greatest—

CLAUD. Your brother's crown's betwixt us.

DUKE. I did [that] but to sharp De Flame into some
Expression of his wit and love.

Digitized by Google

CLAUD. Alas! he sighs all.
DUKE. And, like some crude chaplain, spits most
Of his mind.
CLAUD. Yet the tame dove can tire me sometimes
With penn'd speeches, when we're alone, and flatter.
I'm resolv'd to bestow him on my woman.
DUKE. Now he can come to hand. Ha, ha, thinking men never love heartily, unless they be dank powder.
CLAUD. His courtship is like thick embroidery upon
Slight stuff. I must confess, I never
Lov'd the man, only as a rich gown out of
Fashion, for a day's change sometimes at home,
When I take physic.
DUKE. You may wear him as you please, and to what
Purpose; his honest nature was meant you so;
But Dessandro is the man of men (I must confess),
That I could wish most near you now.
CLAUD. Dessandro!
DUKE. And suddenly, before your honour blush too palpably:
I have discovered him and his devotions.
CLAUD. Then your brains were in his plot.
DUKE. 'Twas his own.
CLAUD. Stol'n from some romance or play! but
For De Flame——
DUKE. One wheel will move another to the period.
CLAUD. Methinks, his soft and easy spirit should be
The fitter engine, and more pliant to your aim.
DUKE. He has too much of Venus in his mixture; all his

Digitized by Google

Desires would be at home still in the circle of those
Eyes: the other is all fire, and thinks that fame
Too cheap, that's found so near; and there will
Want such men abroad.

CLAUD. But where's my honour, duke?

DUKE. Lock'd in my heart and cares: the king must die,
Claudilla, to smoothe the way, and lift us to our wishes.

CLAUD. That still is talk'd on.

DUKE. His last glass is now turn'd, and runs apace.
He gives thee to Dessandro, and is your guest; and
That night receives eternal thanks for't. Then
(My fair) Dessandro cannot want lustre and honour for
Your bed, nor thy commands, what all Castile can give.

CLAUD. I understand not, sir.

DUKE. Thou shalt in time. O my Claudilla! my best and nearest
Joy, our loves have been entire as a flame: one centre
To our thoughts and wishes; and crown our bosoms with
Delight and safety. But they are come.

Enter DE CASTRO *and* DESSANDRO.

CLAUD. I have not known so little of his fame
To be a stranger to his worth. Sir, I honour it:
Nor am I so proud and dark in my opinion,
To think I stand upon myself, but stoop in
Honour to one of his deserts and blood. This is
The way, my lord, I ever summ'd up man, and set
His titles down but for cyphers.

DE C. Observe. [*Aside.*

Digitized by Google

DUKE. Which will most clearly show his merits, and heighten
Them in value to you; for, madam, look on him
In the spring of his deserts; and you'll say, titles
Are but narrow spheres; and if honoured actions
Be the soul and breath, he's then above them,
And stands in the first rank of men.

DES. I shall want life to pay this debt. [*Aside.*

CLAUD. But, with your grace's favour, I must be tender here:
For I stand a tall mark to voice and censure;
And need not tell your highness, with what strong
Expectation the Count de Flame hath long
Time visited me.

DUKE. If you will stand engaged, madam,
I am silent.

CLAUD. No, sir—but——

DUKE. You expect honour and fortune to your bed:
I know Castile owns not a subject (I'll not
Except myself; and had I another's freedom, I should
Not speak my wishes in a second person) that
Looks not with ambition on you: but, madam, weigh
Them all; take but off their grains of fortune,
He shall hoist them into the air; and to my
Wish he's come. Dessandro, your name was
Mentioned—happily, I hope. Let me present
His value to your grace's hand; and to a sister,
Madam, I would say, her bosom.

DE C. You purchase our poor lives too highly, sir.

DUKE. I would have rich jewels set to their worth;
And shall be proud to give any advantage unto his.
The Duchess shall not slight me in't: I will be

Digitized by Google

Heard against the proudest courtship that shall
Charm her. Come, my lord, what sport will you
Win some ducats at?

DE C. I will lose some at any your grace pleases.

DUKE. My brother has got a fortunate hand of late
'Gainst all the court: I cannot rise at even terms
From him.

DE C. I saw him draw deep from your grace last night.

DUKE. Two thousand ducats; but I expect 'em with interest again.

DES. I cannot pawn myself to the unworthy ends
Of flattery and compliment; but this honour
Outbids the value of a thousand lives:
What this poor glimpse of expression can show me in;
Saints are not more unfeigned in their prayers,
Than I to serve you.

CLAUD. I shall not doubt, how much I may be indebted
To your noble wishes; but let me add, sir, he that
Lays out for me without my warrant, shall scarcely
Put it on my account for thanks—much less, debt.

DES. Not good devotions!

CLAUD. Them I desire, and shall repay.

DES. Then pay back mine.

CLAUD. I'm not to learn my prayers, sir.

DES. Teach me yours, that I may turn the virtue
Of their charms back to your bosom.

CLAUD. Colonel, mine would hardly please you; I never pray for wars.

DUKE. You have back-friends, my lord?

DE C. That some malignant cloud does interpose
The king's cheerful favour, I am most sensible.

Digitized by Google

DUKE. It wou'd spread to me too, if they durst.
DE C. Had they but so much virtue left, they durst
Own their names by, I should make pale envy blush.
DUKE. Come, we'll to cards, and leave them to parl. [*Exeunt.*
DES. Madam, but mean it in a smile.
CLAUD. What!
DES. Love.
CLAUD. Fie!
DES. Yet stay; the air has busy wings. But give
The thought consent, and I will take it in soft
Whispers from your lip.
CLAUD. You will?
DES. I feel it creep in flames through all my blood!

Enter DE FLAME.

CLAUD. Sir, the Count de Flame!
DES. With a black evening in his face!
DE F. O my faithful Achilles, I came
To give you joy!
CLAUD. Who! me, sir?
DE F. My virtuous friend and you.
CLAUD. Of what?
DE F. Of your entertainment under him. Y' have a brave commander,
And he a—I cannot be angry enough to tell you what.
CLAUD. I begin to doubt his wits; he looks so ghastly.
DE F. Yes, I see a devil in those eyes, that makes my hair
Stare upward. False woman, my love durst scarce
Doubt before, what now I find and tremble at.

Digitized by Google

But heaven has wrath in ambush and scorpion-stings!
CLAUD. For what, my lord?
DE F. Duchess, thy perjury and warm engagements
To this, this huge impostor!
CLAUD. Sir, he has crack'd his brains with poetry;
Pray, forgive him——
DES. Count, you know what privilege this roof can give
You on my anger, or else I should make your frenzy
Tongueless. Don't requite it barbarously on her,
That gives you leave to live by it. Gather your
Scatter'd wits up; go home, sir, and repent.
DE F. Privilege!
I'll meet thee in a ring of flames, or on the tempest
Of some billow, upon whose back the raging north wind strides:
Yet I'd not ha' thee lose one spark of thy full man in noise
And air; that when next we greet, I may find thee worthy
My revenge. This frailty now protects thee.
CLAUD. Uncivil man, know the way back, or I shall
Let that justice loose upon you you deserve.
DE F. Your centaur there, you mean; he must
Stare bigger to move a hair of mine.
CLAUD. You sha' not stir, sir; as you love me, do not:
Let him die mad.
DE F. Do kiss him, and clap his cheek.

Digitized by Google

CLAUD. And circle him in my arms from your pale envy.
Does that make you foam? Look ye—
[*Kisses* DESSANDRO.
DE F. He shall not blossom there.
CLAUD. He shall, though thou dost bribe the Furies
With thy soul.
DES. Madam, your commands will hold me, till I scorch away!
I am in flames and torment, and there's not so much
Mercy under heaven, but your own, would let him use
That tongue a minute longer. Thou has seen this
Sword reeking from hilt to point, and sweating
Showers of blood o'er thy head; whilst I bestrid thy
Life, and rescu'd it 'gainst many gallant foes:
And durst thou tempt it to thine own throat now?
Prythee, begone; and let us meet no more.
There's something in thy youth I still can love,
And will forget to call thee to account for this.
Be wise unto thyself, and ask this lady pardon.
DE F. O my blood! Must I bear this! I am
More cold than marble, sure!
CLAUD. Within there! Where's his grace?

Enter SERVANT.

SERV. At cards, madam.
DE F. O, cry you mercy! your bak'd meats sha' not cool for me;
I only wish that they may choke ye. That paper, sir,
I sent, wou'd be worth your noble answer.
DES. 'Tis there again, and has stopp'd the use I took it for.

Digitized by Google

DE F. Ha! I'll make thy name a boy's play,
And kill thee on the threshold of thy door.
DES. Go, go, take your rest! When you are
Recovered, I may own you.
DE F. Thou hast not blood enough to answer
this. [*Exeunt.*

Enter PIREZ *and* SAMPAYO.

SAMP. You tell me strange ones.
PIR. But true ones.
SAMP. Nice windings!
PIR. This duke can strangely back his purposes,
Where they like him. 'Tis a fair lift
To Dessandro's fortune; his stars shin'd.
SAMP. True; she has a spacious fortune; but I
shall
Tell your lordship what perhaps you know not.
PIR. You may.
SAMP. She has no blood. From her first, an
honest
Tradesman's wife, who left her very rich and
Handsome, the duke (as he still keeps a
Kennel for that purpose) had her presented
To him for his game; remov'd her from the
Cuckoo's nest into another sphere; but with all
Caution and private sleight; and you must
Imagine, now she spreads a larger wing;
Stirs not abroad, but studded like the night
With flames; and at length becomes the court's
Discourse and wonder; but still keeps[1] the
Country her retiring place.
PIR. Unknown!
SAMP. Or unsuspected, as the duke's instru-
ments dealt it;

[1] [Old copy, *kept.*]

Digitized by Google

And the young Henrique being in those parts
With our king's brother for sport, casually (as 'twas plotted)
Visits her house, falls in love, and marries her. This
Is the epitome.

PIR. I hope the Duke Bereo had no dull hand in't.

SAMP. 'Tis thought (only by me, sir,) [he] keeps his
Acquaintance to this day.

PIR. It must be fatally answer'd somewhere;
Heaven has a justice.

SAMP. The preparation makes huge noise.

PIR. 'Tis well the king's a guest; their triumph
Might miscarry else.

SAMP. The king gives her in church. Methinks
The Count de Flame must needs be all a-flame at it:
And I believe, sir, your affront bleeds freshly in him.

PIR. It must be put to an account somewhere.

SAMP. To return his challenge and honour with such a scorn
Must work such a spirit to high extremes.

PIR. The saddest story is his sister.

SAMP. A rose new-blown, and flung aside to wither in
Her sweets! Poor innocence! that has much chang'd
My opinion of Dessandro.

PIR. His resolution and ambition are like vast trees,
Whose spreading tops hide their own roots
From the kind sun.

SAMP. Let out unto so vast a pride, as shades all his natural

Digitized by Google

Virtues, or makes 'em grow up rank and sour.
The event will tell us all.

PIR. I wish it without blood. Your lordship's for the solemnity?

SAMP. My attendance ties me to his majesty's person.

PIR. My best wishes to your lordship. [*Exeunt.*

ACTUS QUARTUS, SCENA PRIMA.

Loud Music.

Enter the KING, CARDINAL, DUKE, DUCHESS, DESSANDRO, DE CASTRO, SAMPAYO, *ladies bearing up her train, voices, lutes: they pass over.*

Manent DE LOOME *and* LA GITTERNE.

DE L. So by this time the confines ring
Of our great solemnity.

LA G. She became his hand bravely, and with so skilful a brow,
As if the first fruits of her honour were to be gathered yet.

DE L. Our duke will lick his lips at this night's sport.

LA G. And wind her up for him, 'twill go hard else.

DE L. That shall not hinder our sport, I hope.

LA G. Expect the steward and his bottles; I'll warrant you.

DE L. The ladies too! we shall not tickle heartily else.

LA G. Where are the great ones bedded?

DE L. I' th' old place.

LA G. I' th' corner lobby?

Digitized by Google

Enter DE FLAME *and* CLEARA *disguised.*

DE F. You belong to the Duke de Bereo, sir?
DE L. Who told you so?
DE F. A friend that wou'd commend me with a poor suit
Unto you, sir, if you be Signior de Loome.
DE L. But this is no year for suit, sir.
DE F. Mine brings thanks ready-told, sir; look ye:
All double pistoles, signior.
DE L. Sir, I shall try my power, and be ready in any
Service t' ye, for my friend's sake.
DE F. D' ye know who 'tis?
DE L. Hum! no matter; I'll undertake your business.
DE F. Sir, can you please to pardon some light gold?
DE L. You shall find me a gentleman in anything for my friend's sake.
DE F. Nay, sir, it weighs a hundred pound at all, peradventures.
DE L. And I'll tell you one thing of myself, sir, more than
Perhaps my friend rememb'red: I am very honest, where
I take; and every man is not to be trusted in matters
Of such consequence. A very fair purse, I assure you!
DE F. Nest and birds are all your own.
DE L. Your business is done, believ't, sir; please you to kiss
The king's hand into the bargain?
DE F. At fitter opportunity, let me be ambitious of your

Digitized by Google

Offer: but I shall woo your courtesy to be only a Looker on now.

DE L. Anything, sir, you can make worthy your request. Nay—I hope, you do not wish me [to] forfeit good manners—as I'm virtuous.

[*Compliment for the door.*

DE F. I am a stranger to the way. Gentlemen, know yourselves, I beseech you.

LA G. To obey you, signior.

DE L. Sir, you need not speak on't to this man:

He's but my lord's barber. Since you command it so—

[*Exeunt* DE LOOME *and* LA GITTERNE.

DE F. Light, light, revenge! heave up thy gloomy tapers!

That thou may'st see thy smeared altar shine
In blood. Come, my Cleara! my better soul!
Whose gallant mind will leave thy name
In the first place of women, and raise thee temples.
Bravest of thy sex, I could expire on thy cheek,
And pay thee reverence, my most excellent sister.

CLE. Just heaven and your brave virtue (my dearest brother)
Has waken'd my dull breast and trembling sex:
I do not feel one pale or coward thought;
But all [are] high and active to my wish.

DE F. I see it lovely in thy brow: like the gleaming
Dawnings of the morn, when day first kindles;
Yet our presage is fair.

Enter DUKE, *whispering with* DE CASTRO.

CLE. The Duke!

DE F. Now, innocence, guard thyself! the wolf is up:

Digitized by Google

See, how mischief teems and quickens on their brow:
Some black thing is spawning: night must be midwife to't:
If we stay, my poniard will break loose. [*Exeunt.*

DUKE. Who's that?

DE C. Some of the duchess's servants, I believe, sir.

DUKE. Your hand will lay a new foundation to a kingdom;
And I am busy how to divide it with thee, when
We can call it ours.

DE C. 'Tis his last night with mankind; the poison, sir,
Will do't so subtlely: whilst he but holds the
Knife, the least warmth attracts, and so dispreads
Itself through his blood and spirits. Not any
Struggling for't with nature; his life steals from
Him in a gentle slumber.

DUKE. Grow in my bosom, till you spread to the first honours
Of your wish. My fortune is too narrow for your
Merits, to whom I owe it and all my power, brave friend. [*Exeunt.*

Enter STEWARD, BUTLER, COOK, *and* MAIDS.

STEW. Come, my masters: the great ones shall not
Have all to themselves: we'll have a civil
Bout or two to get us a stomach to bedward,
My sweethearts.

COOK. Noble master steward!

BUT. Brave master steward!

Digitized by Google

COOK. The fire of my respects shall ne'er go out unto you.
BUT. Nor mine be quench'd.
STEW. Here, cook, here's a bit for you to lick your lips at:
And here's a clean napery for you, butler.
[*Gives each a wench.*
Take it. [*A dance.*
STEW. So, so; I am almost spent; every man to his function. [*Exeunt.*

Enter KING, CARDINAL, DESSANDRO, DUKE, DUCHESS, *attendants.*

KING. The night begins to frown at our uncivil stay;
And Hymen's tapers do burn out apace:
Good night; you shall not stir a foot, Dessandro.
DUKE. All the wishes of a bridal bed crown your wishes and embraces!
CARD. And all the blessings of true joy.
DUKE. To bed, to bed! [*Exeunt.*

Enter DE LOOME, DE FLAME, *and* CLEARA.

DE L. You are as melancholy as [the] day, when sun sets:
I hope you do not doubt my promise?
DE F. No.
DE L. Ye sha' not: I'll not leave you, till the grant be yours.
Be confidant; and that's more than a courtier is bound
To by his oath. Sir, where are you? Why, you were
Living but e'en now; could speak—had sense, too:
Ha' you seen anything against nature or stomach?

Digitized by Google

Hum! sweetheart, has thy master any fits o' th' mother [*To* CLEARA.
Or falling-sickness? Pretty knave! 'tis pity
This face was made for breeches.

DE F. Ha!

DE L. I am glad you are come to yourself again.

DE F. You are pleasant.

DE L. I would ha' you so: I have provided some mirth
And good company for you. Please you, but spare an
Idle hour from your sleep, we'll allow 't again in
The total of your business (I must not lose his
Money). If you can smile, you shall not want a
Subject: Besides, we shall have the wit of a
Handsome lady or two, and hear their voices.

Enter STEWARD, *and a man with bottles.*

Look ye, sir, here's the *imprimis* of the house:
Master steward himself, whose company may be worth
Your observation. Signior Silliman, this gentleman
Is a friend of my lord duke's: pray, let him know he's welcome.

STEW. I am but the duchess's poor steward, sir, but my
Place is at your command, sir. You shall not have
Me claim kindred of her for all that; yet
Sir Thomas de Loome here can say something,
If he please, sir.

DE F. Thank ye, sir.

STEW. Look ye, Sir Thomas, I never fail; here be the

Digitized by Google

Perquisites of life and good company. There's that
Will elevate voices. Come, disburthen thyself in
That lobby, my honest rational camel!
Is this gentleman dumb? He can say nothing but
Thank you, sir.

DE L. I fear he's planetstruck.

STEW. 'Tis great pity; yet he makes very gentle signs.

DE F. I'm got into a dark and slippery labyrinth, and
Grope but by a spark; whilst every pause is fatal.
No. It had miscarried; and the king's presence
Was a sacred guard: now, to break in upon them were
To betray our lives to nothing. Sure, heaven will not
Lose the glory of such a justice, and by a hand so
Justly engaged.

Enter LA GITTERNE, TORGUINA, *and* LA PRATE.

DE L. The ladies! Good girls, this deserves a double
Thanks. Here's a gentleman, whose merits may
Invite him to your acquaintance, ladies.

TOR. I shall ever study that due honour, by all the
Ambitiousness of your humble servant, sir.

LA P. You may please to pardon her, whose demerits
Make her modest in her expressions to honour
You, noble sir.

DE F. You engage a poor life to your virtue.

DE L. What, ladies, have you put 'em together for a brave boy to-night?

LA P. That's as the dice run, sir.

LA G. The colonel will find a piece of service on't to-night.

Digitized by Google

LA P. If he put her to the worst, 'twill be worth her pardon, being so tried a soldier.

TOR. If his valour should be shortbreath'd, a retreat may be honourable sometimes.

LA P. If he fight not flat coward, and make it in policy.

TOR. Sir, we have read over Aristotle's *Politics* and Polybius to that purpose.

LA P. Who calls policy the very breath of all war.

TOR. And so, by your ladyship's good licence, in all battalions, leaguers, skirmishes, sieges, invasions, parleys, treaties, truces, and other cessations.

DE F. Excellent ladies!

DE L. For the theoric.

LA P. We can say something to the practic too, signior.

TOR. Both concerning your postures and motions, as
Which may be necessary for service: her ladyship has
Written a small tract for her private experience,
To show how they may be reduced, and a man
Exercis'd with far less trouble, but with as much
Activity and proportion of comfort.

LA P. For body and service, madam?

TOR. I mean so: I warrant you this gentleman Understands me.

DE F. And will not your goodness bestow it on the public?
It would rank your name amongst the illustrious
Benefactors of the general cause.

LA P. I know not what I may, sir, when the press is fit
For a woman of quality. Is this gentleman a soldier?

DE F. That ambition has grown with me from the
Cradle, madam.

Digitized by Google

LA P. I shall render myself with more endearment to
Your worth, and ever subscribe to soldiers as the bravest men.
DE L. The duchess, I hope, will be of your opinion;
But, madam, had I the use of that key for an
Hour or two, I would take some notes in shorthand
Behind the hangings.
LA P. You wou'd?
DE L. Yes, indeed, my precious wit, I shou'd.
DE F. That key!
TOR. Signior, pleaseth you to think our humble
Invitation worthy the grant of your society.
DE F. I could wish the trouble of ten lives more, to be
Accepted in your command, fairest of ladies,
LA P. Were all our days multiplied into years, and
Those years to lives, 'twere but a span of time
To study our thanks in.—— *Exeunt.*

Manent SILLIMAN *and* LA PRATE.

SIL. Madam! lady!
I never knew what bandage was until now:
I fear the golden heart you sent me was
Enchanted: I long to see you.——
LA P. What d'ye mean, sir?
SIL. Ha, ha, ha! hum! nothing, madam, but there
Be them that love a good nature with all their heart;
That have four hundred pounds a year, and money
In their purse to be knighted, if need be.
LA P. Wit and opportunity assist me!
The thing will make an excellent husband for the

Digitized by Google

Times; and four hundred pounds a year is a
Considerable fortune to boot. I must take him at
His bond, or perhaps die in the list of stale chambermaids:
A court-plague for a misspent youth and service.

SIL. I am a gentleman already, else the heralds took my
Money for nothing: and methinks, madam, you
And I might——

LA P. What, signior?

SIL. Be as wise as our forefathers.

LA P. You and I?

SIL. Yes, what say ye to *you and I*? Is not *you and I*
Good Spanish? Why, madam, I am able to warm
My own sheets, and get children without the help of
A doctor; and can kiss as warm and close:
And you shall swear my breath is sweet.

LA P. Y'are merry, sir, beyond my apprehension.

SIL. Pardon me, lady, if I be: I mean no harm,
I protest.

LA P. Very witty!

SIL. I am what I am: but I was never beholden to any
Living thing for thus much wit: I might
Have been an arrant younger brother, but for my mother——
Thereby hangs a tale, madam, and yet I cou'd ha' danc'd
My cinque pace in Greek at a dozen. Alpha,
Beta, Gamma, Delta, cost me five shillings:
Can you believe me, lady? By this light, you shall
Wear this diamond! There; sha't, sha't ha't:
Sha't, sha't, sha't ha't.

LA P. There is such sorcery in your words!

SIL. No, no, no; troth, love me: come, thou shalt;

Digitized by Google

By this——nay, never sigh, my dear; they are
All orient, sweet wench: Thou art worth all Spain
For a good disposition——

LA P. You will undo me, master steward.

SIL. Pish! who? I undo thee? my life! thou dost wrong
Me: canst find in thy heart to think so? away, away.

LA P. But is this profession honourable, sir?

SIL. I scorn to deal upon dishonourable terms. Do I
Kiss like a man that would propound dishonourable
Conditions?

LA P. Men are so nice and cunning!

SIL. Do'st think me a Jew; swear me to anything.

LA P. Well, you have taken a poor heart at advantage; and make me blush to confess it.

SIL. Kiss me; here's my hand, till death us do part:
Thine more than mine own, Signior Bouche
Ouverte Sillimano: seal'd and deliver'd; but
I hope, lady, there is no quit-rent to be paid out of this copyhold.

LA P. Not for your life, sir.

SIL. Lawful possession then, and thou'rt mine own. [*Exeunt.*

Enter DE FLAME *and* CLEARA.

DE F. So, let 'em drench their souls in laughter: kindle
Thy noble heart into a flame, my sister!
Fate cannot give nor we ask more unto
Our cause: all things conspire and prompt us to't.
Just and divine revenge!

Digitized by Google

I'll strew thy midnight haunts with cypress wreaths,
And wear thee in rich medals. Propitious goddess!
This night thy wan and meagre cheek shall blush,
And smile with warm and wanton blood. Night grows heavy-ey'd,
And drops her slumbering head in her dark bosom:
And now their rage and lust will make them ripe
To bleed. Let us embrace, and interchange
A sigh or two, Cleara: whate'er become of me,
Thou wilt wear chaplets in Elysium.

CLE. My hopes and joys are yours, dear sir, and heaven,
I hope, will not divide them.

[*Unlocks the door, and discovers them.*

DE F. See, what a modest blush
Sleep has cast o'er their guilt!

CLE. Here is a look
Tyrants would bashfully gaze at, and fear
To think it mortal. Glorious hypocrisy!
Virtue is at wonder in herself, and looks pale,
To own what she has given.

DE F. I should mock heaven's justice, to let 'em dream
Their souls away in such a calm: we'll startle
Them into horror of their sin, and then
Let 'em see the vengeance they deserve.

CLE. Ye chaster powers, to whom I and my virginity
Groan, may every drop breathe incense to your justice?
Whilst thus I break their springs open.

[*Stabs* CLAUDILLA.

CLAUD. O Dessandro! O, whose hand's that?

CLE. Cleara's, Cleara's! carry that name in thy last breath
Down to the shades of lust and perjury.

DE F. So quick and brave, Cleara?

Digitized by Google

CLAUD. O! [*Expirat.*

DES. Cleara! madam, madam! your sleeps are troubled——
Who's there? De Flame!

DE F. Raise not thy voice an accent: if thou dost, by my eternal hopes and soul! this strikes it back unto thy heart. See'st thou revenge sit pale upon the point? 'Tis steeled with virgin's curses, and shall fly like lightning through thy blood; and it is a justice thy vast pride hath lost thee to.

DES. O, what hast thou done?
A deed that flinty Scythians and curl'd Ethiops
Would hide their eyes from.

DE F. Our revenge shall wear a glorious title. Know'st
Thou that injur'd face? It is Cleara's, injur'd Cleara's.

DES. Cleara!

DE F. What see'st thou on that brow?

DES. Murder!

DE F. Horror and guilt unto thy soul.

DES. I'll not be tamely butcher'd, coward. Without there!
Help, help, help!

DE F. Whirlwinds and earthquakes cannot do it.
Think on thy sin.

CLE. Thy perjury.

DE F. Thy lust. [CLEARA *stabs at him.*

DES. Cleara! O, thou hast a skilful hand in
Murder. Help, help! murder!

DE F. So falls a wretched statue from its haughty station, when Fate would make it ominous and fright a state. What a thick cloud steams from his tainted blood! The air shrinks back, and with dull wings fans it from heaven.

Digitized by Google

Enter DE LOOME, LA GITTERNE, TORGUINA, *&c.*

TOR. Murder, murder! 'twas his voice.
DE L. It was his voice.
TOR. The key?
LA G. Gone!
TOR. Cut from my side! I'm betray'd!
DE L. Look, search the room: where's the stranger?
LA G. The door is fast. [*Knocks.*
DE F. You may come in: make up your wonder there. [*Opens the door.*
TOR. My lady murder'd!
DE L. You have astonish'd heaven.
TOR. And pull'd eternal curses on your head.
DE F. They'll fall like brittle shafts upon my shield.
CLE. Unjust Dessandro! yet on thy lip I'll
Tender my last vows, that the world may tell
I loved thee dead—and this—and this——
[*Kisses him, then stabs herself.*
DE F. Hold, hold that cruel hand! Cleara! sister!
DE L. Cleara! This is a horrid scene, my lord.
DE F. 'Twould not be worth my name, did it not strike
Amazement through your souls, and leave a paleness
On his cheek that hears it. But here, here I
Could melt, transfuse my brains through my sad eyes,
Till they wept blood, and dropp'd their jelly forth:
She was a jewel too rich for our dull orb.

Enter more servants.

You need not multiply your fears; I am
Too proud of my revenge to start from it:

Digitized by Google

Let the law frown, and fall in tempests on me.
Cowards repent,
When valiant blood ne'er pales at the event.
[*Exeunt.*

ACTUS QUINTUS, SCENA PRIMA.

Enter PIREZ *and* DE LOOME.

DE L. A sad court indeed, my lord.

PIR. As sad a kingdom! Where the news is spread, men that hear it stand struck, as if their own passing-bells did call unto them.

DE L. Kings' glasses are as brittle as their meanest subjects', their footings as slippery and uncertain. He was a brave prince, and his life will be memorable in Castile.

PIR. His death is much admired for the sudden strangeness of it. What opinion give the physicians on't?

DE L. They've a hard name for't, if I could think on't.

PIR. Not suspicion of poison?

DE L. How, my lord! by whom would you suspect it?

PIR. Nay, I dare suspect none, nor don't; but such quirks of state I have read of in the days of old.

DE L. I never saw him discount a day with more content and freedom; his very thoughts were hearty.

PIR. 'Twas a fatal one, and will give a sad discourse to our posterity, and leave it on record in bleeding characters.

DE L. The count's resolution had too much blood and cruelty in't.

Digitized by Google

PIR. Dessandro urged as much as mortal sense could groan with.

DE L. I now call to mind, still as he spake and glanced upon Cleara's face, I had strange startlings in me.

PIR. As the times have.

DE L. The times, my lord? for what?

PIR. The king's death, sir.

DE L. Why, my lord, the times are not of the worst presage, though that may cloud them a little.

PIR. I am no Booker, sir, nor Lilly to prognosticate what seven years may travail with; but I could wish the price of knaves may fall.

DE L. Your lordship's virtues command not a more humble and observant creature. [*Exit.*

PIR. This fellow must be muzzled.

Enter SAMPAYO.

SAMP. Who's that?

PIR. The duke's thing, his trifle-broker.

SAMP. The king's now.

PIR. Castile did never hear more news, I fear.

SAMP. We shall now see the fine turns and games of the state.

PIR. When fools and knaves chase trump.

SAMP. Now heads and points will be the sport.

PIR. The king will have the heads then, I believe.

SAMP. Observe 'em.

PIR. So near?

Enter BEREO, *nobles soliciting him with papers.*

ALL. Heavens bless your majesty! Heavens keep your majesty! [*Within.*

Please you hear your most faithful subjects?

Digitized by Google

DUKE. Who are they, that bark so?

DE L. A rout of porters, prentices, and sailors' wives, with such a spawn, who are modest petitioners your majesty would give 'em leave to govern you in some matters of state, and humbly pray to be admitted of your privy council. Here's another, sir, from the most reverend bags of the city to purchase all the churches of your majesty for warehouses; and this, sir, from the corporation of weavers, cobblers, and feltmakers: that you would please to give 'em leave to fire all universities and schools of learning, that the profane might better see the truth.

DUKE. No more. Their stinking breath will stifle me! Keep back their clamour. Wealth and ease have made the rascals wanton, and profane their allegiance. My lord [*De Castro kneels*], you need not kneel in a cause, that equally concerns us with you; and the groans of your brother's wounds echo unto our sleeps. Our honour and the laws bleed in them, until a justice stop their issues, which our own care shall take a speedy account of. Sampayo! [*Whispers.*

SAMP. I shall, my lord. [*Exit.*

DUKE. O my lords, we are circled in a tide of grief,
Where every billow threatens a grave: but in your loves
Our hope takes new life, which we as zealously
Shall sacrifice again to you and yours.
Let me be beholden t' you for a minute's conference
With my own sad thoughts. [*Exeunt.*
So take breath, my hopes.
Whilst we with pride look upon the world behind us,
And then survey the glory of our progress
And success, the print of every step is glorious,

Digitized by Google

And methinks we stand like Rome herself, in midst
Of all her triumphs, when her threat'ned head
Lean'd on the spangled breast of heaven, and
Jostled with the gods; from whose imperious frown
The world took all her laws and dooms. Yet her
Vast story shall look pale to mine; and time
Begin his great example here.
Castile, thou now shalt blush for thy neglect:
I'll print thy scorns on thy own brow, till my revenge
Look lovely as did Rome's, in her bright flames,
To Nero; and Nature shall repent, that she
Mistook the man Fortune meant thine. Then up,
My soul, and from thy glorious stand see
Thy proud hopes and wishes court thee! Thou hast
Been bashful yet, and hid in blushes. Make
Room for thy more spacious thoughts, and let
The petty world know this: all things
Depend upon the breath of gods and kings.

[*Exit.*

Enter two OFFICERS.

1ST OFF. There, there! Lay that in the place; so, so; here, help to spread this carpet. Quick, quick!

2D OFF. Will our new king be here to give the forked herd an oration?

1ST OFF. An halter! Thou dost so fumble! But what's the general voice of the king's death? Here's the mourning for that bar.

2D OFF. Marry, some think he died against his will; and others, that his brother—Where stands this?—will bury him very royally——

1ST OFF. Hum! and others think if thou wert

Digitized by Google

hanged, when 'tis thy due, there would be quickly a knave less. Despatch, despatch! I hear them coming.

Enter JUDGES, *the two Ladies*, DE LOOME, LA GITTERNE, *and others*. DE FLAME *stands at the bar.*

OFF. Pray, by your leave; make way; give back there! For shame, sir; you press so hard upon the judges, they scarce have liberty to breathe. Clear the bar; peace!

1ST JUDGE. My lord, here's none but knows you, and I believe do grieve to see you stand thus, and for a fact of such a bloody nature. A gentleman of your fair hopes and fortunes, blood and spirit, and other excellent parts, all cast upon untimely hazards by such an act (as indeed I know not how to name it). You needs must, therefore, be worthy our grief; and I presume you are not now to know the laws and customs of this your country, with what religious care they look unto the safety of our lives and our estates, and with what strictness on perpetrations of such a dye——

2D JUDGE. Especially, where innocent blood is shed; and therefore we, being but the tongues of the law (my lord), may hope you will interpret the justice of it clearly from our mouths.

DE F. Please you, most reverend lords, is there aught else but this I am to stand accused for?

2D JUDGE. Not that we know.

DE F. Then, my good lords, you need not labour much to find out circumstances to condemn me; nor do I wish or think, my lords, to satisfy the law by talking in my own defence. Nor will I brand myself with such a fear, much

Digitized by Google

less hope, as to bespeak a melting tear. That were to wish the act undone, and rob my justice of a glory I would be torn to atoms for. No, I come to meet the law; and if your wisdoms can contract the spacious volumes of it into one doom, I shall not startle, or divide my breast. My resolution was above it, when first I undertook to be my own law and judge.

1ST JUDGE. I grieve to hear this language from you: it takes much from the man that you have seemed, my lord; stain not your noble and religious fame with such an atheism.

2D JUDGE. Look back into the deed, my lord. See, what a tide of blood pursues you, and breaks upon your soul in angry seas.

DE F. Look back to our fame, grave lords, the blood and honour of our family; nor think it my vainglory to urge it here, since the cause does. There has not yet, in all the ages it hath served the state, one stain fallen on our escutcheon; and although, my lords, these honours are derived to us in a vast circle of time and blood, the passage must be still through our veins, and so are treasured here as heat in fire; so as the least taint in us reflects a blush on the first virtue of our great ancestors. And what has man called sacred but his honour? That dwells not in the smiles of Fortune; nor can she place the fool or coward in that rank. And can your wisdoms think ours so cheap, as to become the scorn of such?

2D JUDGE. My lord, 'twould better satisfy all those that know you to hear your grief than passion.

DE F. O, cry ye mercy! He was your lordship's kinsman; yet I will add, he basely did betray a love and innocence more noble than a thousand of their lives. Poor Cleara! perjured

Digitized by Google

his faith and honour, and quite dissolved their holy ties in the lascivious arms of her, whose name shall not take honour from my breath.

2D JUDGE. We spend time; pray, give those ladies leave to speak.

Enter DE CASTRO.

DE C. My lords, the king is come to sit amongst ye.

OFF. Stand back there, ho! you, Goodman Roundhead, you'd best breathe in the king's face: pull back your horns, sir!—D' you mutter? Take that, and crowd further. The rogues are as hollow as a vault, and sound like one with a blow.

Enter BEREO, DE CASTRO, *attendants; at the other door, the* KING *himself.*

[*Within.*] The king, the king! Whoo?

1ST JUDGE. What's the matter?

DUKE. De Castro, is this a mask or apparition?

KING. Seize on the traitor!

DUKE. Ha!

KING. Hence, monstrous thing!

DUKE. Traitor!

KING. Yes; and a foul one. My lords, suspend
Your wonder. We thank ye. Prodigy to thy blood,
We have given you leave to wanton in your guilt
And see at what mighty impiety it would reach;
To fasten you the surer in your toil.
Take your places. Durst thou derive the glory
Of our grandsires to thyself, whilst with unnatural hands

Digitized by Google

Thou tear'st their graves up; mingling blood and shame
With their bless'd dust? Have we not shar'd our kingdom with thee:
Let thee into our heart nearer than nature,
If possible? And could all this beget
No better thanks than poison? The very thought
Unnerves my joints.

DUKE. Treason? Who dares avow it, sir,
Or charge the least stain upon my loyal bosom,
And make it good? I challenge all mankind,
And envy from the nether hells; 'tis but
Some engine to betray me to you.

DE C. I did but quit a sin,
Which would have betray'd us both eternally,
And bore so sad a shape of horror,
As it affrighted all within me, and, like a frenzy,
Held me, till I had purged it from my bosom.

DUKE. Had thy revenge no other way but this,
To undermine the virtue of nature against itself?
My lords, there's forgery in't, poison, and treason!
It did amaze my innocence. Sounds, that my blood
Do shiver at. And did not I see his father's treason
Blush yet upon his brow, I should not think
Castile infected with the thought.

1ST JUDGE. My Lord De Castro,
What proof or circumstance have you to urge
This clearer to his highness?

DUKE. Grave patriots of the law,
Give me your leave in this, that would blemish
The honour of my fame for ever. Let him produce but any
That may accuse me to your reverend judgments,
And Bereo will lay down his head to the block.
But I know your wisdoms will discern a plot in't:

Digitized by Google

And how far he stands incompetent against me
In faith and honour.
KING. What say you, my lord?
DE C. Sir, what I have told your Majesty—my life
Shall make good on my torture: my brother being dead,
Heaven only and my conscience can clear it:
And to quit my innocence of malice, your own conscience
Must tell you, my lord, that when first you used my brother
To ensnare me, and press'd it in the duchess's garden,
How much I argued to divert you; but then—
DUKE. My lords, I desire justice and reparation
On the villain.
2D JUDGE. My Lord De Castro,
The king has pleased to give us your relation,
In which (though the least tenderness cannot be
Impertinent to his sacred safety) there's nothing
That can raise the law to any argument, which may reach
The Duke, scarce as a peer, which looks upon him
As the second man in whom all our safeties and hopes are stor'd:
Not to be touch'd with every jealousy,
But at a high and reverend form of proof.
DUKE. Let me appeal unto yourself, dread sir;
Which of my actions or services of state
Can be suspected? And do you not perceive
That where his father left, his treason would begin?
DE C. Help me, dear truth, or else I shall suffer
For my loyalty. Great sir, be pleased——
DUKE. That most judicious judge has well observ'd,

Digitized by Google

There is an envy in his soul would reach
From you to your succession, and leave the character
Of his father's treason on it in blood and ruin.
Wretched man, trust me, I grieve for thy slide from piety;
And when I look upon the love and pity
I have cast away on such a thing, I repent
My easy faith. Good heaven! what will men fall to?

KING. Take the Count unto the citadel, and let none
Be admitted to him upon peril—

[*Exeunt with* DE CASTRO.

Brother, they were no easy insinuations
That did engage our fears to this: but such
As nam'd a higher proof and circumstance.
And, we confess, it struck our nature with some passionate strugglings:
Not that the wish of our ambition is fix'd here,
And would revive a term of years
To rob ye of one minute's glorious trouble:
Yet, my lord, if our laws take care
To preserve the meanest subject's life, our own
Ought not to be look'd on with less providence:
And fears are happy cautions many times.
But mine retire.
Let our desires meet, and reconcile me to your arms—— [*Embrace.*
His merit shall find the justice it has scandall'd,
If it stand guilty.

DUKE. If, my lord? Can yet that scruple stay behind?

Returns with DE CASTRO *and* DESSANDRO. *A physician and chirurgeon, &c.*

DE C. See, royal sir, I have met a miracle,

[*They kneel.*

Digitized by Google

That heaven has preserv'd and sent to guard your
Sacred highness and the truth.

DE F. Dessandro risen from the dead?

KING. Dessandro!

DES. The vilest wretch alive, who throws himself
At your feet in tears of blood, and so much
Horrid guilt as calls for all the wrath of
This and the other world: not daring to
Lift my hopes to any pardon. O sir!
'Twas he (back'd by that bad Prince and other giddy
Hopes) that would have seduc'd my brother to
That act against your sacred life.

KING. Would it went no further? Duke de Bereo,
Can now your brow change colour?

DUKE. 'Tis all imposture.

KING. Fie, fie; don't glory against heaven, that hath
Left thy sin to subterfuge.

DUKE. You would not fright me from myself?

KING. Well; our guard!

DOCT. May it please— [*Kneels.*

KING. Rise. What would you say, sir?

DOCT. Under your gracious licence this. We found our princely lady and the lady Cleara cold in their clodded gore: this Colonel so spent in expense of blood, as we could not say alive; for that half spark of heat left in his veins was then e'en going out. Our care having preserved and kindled it to life again, after his shattered faculties could pant and breathe, he called for pen and ink, and caused us to write what is there contained.

[*Gives a paper.*

DES. Of too much truth; and I blush for those few
Drops of blood I have left to expiate.

Digitized by Google

DUKE. I am betrayed and lost!
Could'st be in love with that saint life, for one
Poor minute's smile, to betray it to ignominy and law?
I could trample on thy skull, until thy reeking
Brain sparkled about the dust. See how busily
They contract their dusky brows! Consult things
Safely, and let some reverend statute be ordained
In honour of all cowards. [*Aside.*] De Castro! for this good
Service know, 'twas I that laid thy father's head
Upon the block: complotted with the Portuguese
To make him guilty to the King: and envying that
He spread with so much shadow in the state, by a close
Faction rend'red him odious to the people: an engine,
I knew could not fail. I hurried thee to the Duchess's
Wanton bed, Dessandro, knowing De Flame's high
Blood would quit the debt I owed thee——
DES. He's proud all mischief can call him patron.
DUKE. Nor had I shar'd the pleasure of a kiss to you
Or him, but that our purpose needs would have it so.
DE F. Sir!
DUKE. The language is plain and true.
DE F. Then Claudilla was your court-mistress, Duke?—
'Twere profanation to say whore!
DUKE. Young lord, I can forgive that language
In a suffering man.
DE F. Forgive it!
DUKE. Forgive it; and had De Flame himself

Digitized by Google

Enjoy'd her bed, and reap'd the scatter'd minutes
Of our love, he must have found another gloss more
Safe and honourable.

DE F. Must! What saw you in me did promise
So tame a thing, as to feed on your high scraps?
Glorious mischief!

DES. My lord, I beg your mercy; and to deserve it
Will weep the remnant of this unworthy life
Unto Cleara's name.

DE F. All mankind has my peaceful wish, but this
Black speckled serpent, whose load doth make
The earth to groan and sweat.

DUKE. My fair Claudilla, methinks I see thee
Lovely in that ghastly trim of death, while
Yet thy soul was struggling through thy cruel
Wounds.

DE F. The day begins to frown and creep into
Eternal night: we'll bed together in one grave, Cleara.
Castile shall hide us in a golden heap, and name me
With her patriots for taking this foul monster
From her bosom.

DUKE. I'll find thee in the myrtle groves below,
And leave a story that shall tell the world,
How much I lov'd thee. [*They stab each other.*

KING. Desperate atheists!

DUKE. You were beforehand, sir.

DE F. You've overtaken me: the world is hid in a
Cloud, and shrinks to chaos. O, whither
Must I wander in this mist? So, so—
I feel thee glide away, and leave me sunk
Upon a quicksand. [*Expirat.*

Digitized by Google

KING. What a thirst of blood burnt up their hearts,
That they must quench it in their own?
DUKE. Hast thou not air enough, my panting soul?
O, what a stitch is coming! [*Expirat.*
KING. Wou'd thou had'st better lov'd thyself and us:
For while thou priz'd the honour of that blood,
We priz'd thee with it. O ambition!
The grandame of all sin, that strikes at stars
With an undaunted brow, whilst thus thy feet
Slide to the nether hell! Like some vast stream,
That takes into its womb all springs that neighbour by it,
And would proudly carry all their currents in its own:
Swells o'er its banks, and wantons like a tyrant.
Take hence the sight: it stirs our indignation.
[*Exeunt cum corporibus.*
OMNES. Long live the great and good King of Castile!
KING. We thank ye, and just heaven which hath (unto wonder)
Unknotted all these mischiefs, and kept us safe:
And because we do not love to use the laws
In their extremity, or execute with blood,
Where we can moderate without; but chiefly,
Dessandro, to endear ye more to heaven
In your acknowledgment, we do enjoin you
To some religious house of Orders, there
By an humble life to expiate your guilt.
DES. Upon my knees I do acknowledge
Your God-like mercy.
KING. De Castro
Our thanks shall make your loyalty

Digitized by Google

Exemplary to all times: nor wish we to live
longer
Than to gain the faith of all; that we may find
Ourself and title most secure, and greatest
In your loves; which gives us more
Than giddy fortune can——

This is our fate, and to the wise is known;
All goods without us are not (sure) our own.

In tenui labor est; at tenuis non gloria.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE ADVENTURES OF FIVE HOURS.

Digitized by Google

EDITIONS.

The Adventures of Five Hours. A Tragi-Comedy.—Non ego Ventoso Plebis suffragia venor. *Horat.* F°. 21°, 1662. *Imprimatur, John Birkenhead. London. Printed for Henry Herringman, at the Anchor in the Lower Walk of the New Exchange,* 1663. *fol.*[1]

The Adventures of Five Houres: a Tragi-Comedy. As it is acted at His Royal Highness the Duke of York's Theatre. The third impression. Revised and corrected by the author, Sir Samuel Tuke, Kt. and Bart. Nonumque prematur in Annum. *Horat. de Art Poet. London: Printed by T. N. for Henry Herringman, at the sign of the Blew Anchor, on the Lower Walk of the New Exchange.* 1671. 4°.[2]

---

[1] The title of the copy of 1664 is precisely the same as that of the first edition. It is in 4to.

[2] There was a fourth impression in 1704.

Digitized by Google

PREFACE.

Sir Samuel Tuke, of Temple Cressy, in the county of Essex, was a colonel of horse in the king's army, and served against the Parliament, as long as the affairs of his master had any prospect of success. He was very active in that rising in the county of Essex which ended fatally to some of the chief actors in it. From the prologue to the present play, spoken at court, it appears that he intended to retire from business soon after the Restoration, but was diverted from that design for some time by his Majesty's recommending him to adapt a Spanish play[1] to the English stage, which he executed with some degree of success. On the 31st March,[2] 1664, he was created a baronet. He married Mary, the daughter of Edward Sheldon, a lady who was one of the dressers to Queen Mary, and probably a Roman Catholic, of which persuasion our author seems also to have been.[3] He died at Somerset House, on the 26th of January 1673, and was buried in the vault

---

[1] [By Calderon. It is supposed that the Earl of Bristol, author of "Elvira," assisted Tuke.—See Halliwell's "Dictionary of Old Plays," 1860, in v. Halliwell there quotes a passage from Evelyn's "Diary," where Evelyn, by a slip of the pen, speaks of Sir *George* Tuke, an oversight which is left uncorrected.]

[2] Heylin's "Help to History."

[3] Wood's "Ath.," vol. ii. p. 802.

Digitized by Google

under the chapel there. Langbaine, by mistake, says he was alive at the time he (Langbaine) published his "Lives of the Dramatic Poets."

Sir Samuel did not escape the censure of his brother poets.[1] One of them, speaking of Cowley, says he

> Writ verses unjustly in praise of Sam Tuke.[2]

And in the same poem—

> Sam Tuke sat, and formally smiled at the rest;
> But Apollo, who well did his vanity know,
> Call'd him to the bar to put him to the test,
> But his muse was so stiff, she scarcely could go.
>
> She pleaded her age, desir'd a reward;
> It seems in her age she doated on praise:
> But Apollo resolv'd that such a bold bard
> Should never be grac'd with a per'wig of bays.

There is some reason for assigning to Sir Samuel Tuke part authorship of "Pompey the Great," which is generally supposed to have been translated by Waller, Lord Dorset, Sir C. Sedley, and Godolphin, and printed in 1664. At the end of an edition of Sir John Denham's poems, "printed by J. M. for H. Herringman," 1684, is a catalogue of other works published by the same bookseller, and among them this entry:—"By Samuel Tuke, and several persons of honour. Pompey."

Sir Samuel was one of the first members of the Royal Society, and wrote a history of the ordering and generation of green Colchester oysters, printed in Spratt's "History," p. 307.

---

[1] Dryden's "Miscellanies," vol. ii. p. 92.

[2] These were prefixed to the edition of "The Adventures of Five Hours," printed the year after the author was made a baronet, but without bearing on the title any mark of his advancement. He is there called only Colonel Tuke.

Digitized by Google

TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE

HENRY HOWARD

OF NORFOLK.[1]

SINCE it is your pleasure, Noble Sir, that I should hold my fortune from you, like those tenants, who pay some inconsiderable trifle in lieu of a valuable rent, I humbly offer you this poem, in acknowledgment of my tenure: and I am well pleas'd with this occasion to publish my sense of your favours, since it seems to me a kind of ingratitude to be thankful in private.

It was bred upon the terrace-walks in your garden at Albury; and if I mistake not, it resembles the place where it was brought up: the plot is delightful, the elevations natural, the ascents easy, without any great embellishments of art.

I designed the character of Antonio, as a copy of your steady virtue; if it appear to those, who have the honour to know you, short of the original,

[1] This dedication, and the prologue and epilogue which follow, are only found in the first and second edition.—*Collier.*

Digitized by Google

I take leave to inform them, that you have not sat to me long; 'tis possible hereafter I may gratify my country, for their civility to this essay, with something more worthy of your patronage and their indulgence.

In the interim, I make it my glory to avow that, had Fortune been just to me, she could not have recompensed the loyal industry of my life with a more illustrious title than that which you have been pleased to confer upon me, of Your Friend. To which (as in gratitude I am bound) I subjoin that of

Your most humble servant,

S. TUKE.

Digitized by Google

THE FIRST SCENE IS THE CITY OF SEVILLE.

The PROLOGUE *enters with a play-bill in his hand, and reads*—This day, being the 15th of December, shall be acted a new play, never play'd before, call'd *The Adventures of Five Hours.*

A NEW PLAY.

Th' are i' the right, for I dare boldly say,
The English stage ne'er had so new a play;
The dress, the author, and the scenes are new.
This ye have seen before ye'll say; tis true;
But tell me, gentlemen, who ever saw
A deep intrigue confin'd to five hours' law?
Such as for close contrivance yields to none:
A modest man may praise what's not his own.
'Tis true, the dress is his, which he submits
To those who are, and those who would be wits;
Ne'er spare him, gentlemen; for to speak truth,
He has a per'lous cens'rer been in's youth;
And now grown bald with age, doating on praise,
He thinks to get a periwig of bays.
Teach him what 'tis, in this discerning age,
To bring his heavy genius on the stage;
Where you have seen such nimble wits appear,
That pass'd so soon, one scarce could say th' were here.
Yet, after our discoveries of late
Of their designs, who would subvert the state,
You'll wonder much, if it should prove his lot
To take all England with a Spanish plot;
But if, through his ill conduct or hard fate,
This foreign plot (like that of eighty-eight)
Should suffer shipwreck in your narrow seas,
You'll give your modern poet his writ of ease;
For, by th' example of the King of Spain,
He resolves ne'er to trouble you again.

Digitized by Google

THE PROLOGUE AT COURT.

HE ADDRESSES HIMSELF TO THE PIT.

As to a dying lamp one drop of oil
Gives a new blaze, and makes it live awhile;
So th' author, seeing his decaying light,
This refers to the author's purpose of retirement, at that time when his Majesty recommended this plot to him.
And therefore thinking to retire from sight,
Was hindered by a ray from the upper sphere,
Just at that time he thought to disappear.
He chanced to hear his Majesty once say,
He lik'd this plot; he stay'd, and writ the play:
So should obsequious subjects catch the minds
Of princes, as your seamen do the winds.
If this attempt then shows more zeal than light,
'T may teach you to obey, though not to write.
He looking up, and seeing the King, starts.
Ah! he is there himself. Pardon my sight,
My eyes were dazzled with excess of light;
He kneels. He rises.
Even so the sun, who all things else displays,
Is hid from us i' the glory of his rays.
Will you vouchsafe your presence? You, that were given
To be our Atlas, and support our heaven?
Will you, dread sir, your precious moments lose
To grace the first endeavours of our muse?
This with your character most aptly suits,
Even heaven itself is pleas'd with the first-fruits.

Digitized by Google

PREFACE TO THE THIRD EDITION.

HAVING been desired by a lady, who has more than ordinary favour for this play, though in other things very judicious, to make a song, and insert it in that scene where you may now read it, I found it more difficult to disobey the commands of this excellent person, than to obtain of myself to write any more upon subjects of this nature.

This occasioned the revising of this piece, upon which I had not cast my eyes since it was first printed; and finding there some very obvious faults (with respect to their judgments who have been pleased to applaud it), I could not well imagine how they came to escape my last hand; unless poetic rage, or (in a more humble phrase) heat of fancy, will not at the same time admit the calm temper of judgment; or that, being importuned by those for whose benefit this play was intended, I was even forced to expose it before it was fit to be seen in such good company.

This refers only to the dress, for certainly the plot needs no apology; it was taken out of Don Pedro Calderon,[1] a celebrated Spanish author, the nation of the

[1] [Don Pedro Calderon della Barca appears to have been born at Madrid, of a good family, in 1601. Like Lope de Vega, his contemporary, he signalised his dramatic genius at a

Digitized by Google

world who are the happiest in the force and delicacy of their inventions, and recommended to me by his sacred majesty as an excellent design, whose judgment is no more to be doubted than his commands to be disobeyed. And therefore it might be a great presumption in me to enter my sentiments with his royal suffrage; but as secretaries of state subscribe their names to the mandates of their prince, so at the bottom of the leaf I take the boldness to sign my opinion, that this is incomparably the best plot that I ever met with. And yet, if I may be allowed to do myself justice, I might acquaint the readers that there are several alterations in the copy which do not disgrace the original.

I confess, 'tis something new that trifles of this nature should have a second edition; but if in truth this essay be at present more correct, I have then found an easy way to gratify their civility who have been pleased to indulge the errors in the former impressions.

If they who have formerly seen or read this play should not perceive the amendments, then I have touched the point, since the chiefest art in writing is the concealing of art; and they who discover 'em, and are pleased with them, are indebted only to themselves for their new satisfaction, since their former favour to

---

very early date, producing his "Carro del Cielo" at the age of thirteen. He devoted the better part of his life to the military profession, but afterwards took holy orders, and became a canon of Toledo. He is supposed to have died in 1681. His plays were printed at Madrid between 1683 and 1691, in 9 vols. 4o; but the best edition, according to Brunet, is that published at Madrid, 1760–63, 11 vols. 4°. Some of Calderon's dramas were never printed, and have perished.]

Digitized by Google

our negligent Muses has occasioned their appearing again in a more studied dress; and certainly those labours are not ungrateful with which the writers and readers are both pleased.

And since I am upon the subject of novelties, I take the boldness to advertise the reader that, though it be unusual, I have in a distinct column prefixed the several characters of the most eminent persons in the play, that, being acquainted with them at his first setting out, he may the better judge how they are carried on in the whole composition. For, plays being moral pictures, their chiefest perfections consist in the force and congruity of passions and humours, which are the features and complexion of our minds; and I cannot choose but hope that he will approve the ingenuity of this design, though possibly he may dislike the painting.

As for those who have been so angry with this innocent piece, not guilty of so much as that current wit—obscenity and profaneness—these are to let them know that, though the author converses with but few, he writes to all; and aiming as well at the delight as profit of his readers, if there be any amongst them who are pleased to enter their haggard muses at so mean a quarry, they may freely use their poetic licence, for he pretends not to any royalty on the mount of Parnassus; and I dare answer for him, that he will sing no more till he comes into that choir where there is room enough for all; and such, he presumes, is the good-breeding of these critics, that they will not be so unmannerly as to crowd him there.

FAREWELL.

Digitized by Google

PROLOGUE.

SPOKEN BY MR BETTERTON.[1]

If we could hit on't, gallants, there are due
Certain respects from writers and from you:
Which, well observ'd, would celebrate this age,
And both support and vindicate the stage.
If there were only candour on your part,
And on the poets', judgment, fancy, art;
If they remember that their audience
Are persons of the most exalted sense;
And you consider well the just respect
Due to their poems, when they are correct;
Our two houses then may have the fate
To help to form the manners of the state:
For there are crimes arraign'd a' th' poets' bar,
Which cannot be redress'd at Westminster.
Our ancient bards their morals did dispense
In numbers, to insinuate the sense,
Knowing that harmony affects the soul,
And who our passions charm, our wills control.
This our well-meaning author had in view,
And, though but faintly executed, you
Indulg'd th' attempt with such benevolence,
That he has been uneasy ever since;
For though his vanity you gratified,
The obligation did provoke his pride.

[1] This prologue first appeared in the edition of 1671, after the revival of the play.—*Collier.*

Digitized by Google

But he has now compounded with ambition
For that more solid greatness, self-fruition;
And, going to embrace a civil death,
He's loth to die indebted to your breath.
Therefore he would be even w' you, but wants
force;
The stream will rise no higher than the source.
And they, who treat such judges, should excel;
Here 'tis to do ill, to do only well.
He has, as other writers have, good-will,
And only wants (like those) nature and skill;
But, since he cannot reach the envied height,
H' has cast some grains in this to mend the weight;
And, being to part w' you, prays you to accept
This revived piece as legacy or debt.

Digitized by Google

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

PERSONS.	RELATIONS.	CHARACTERS.
DON HENRIQUE,	*In love with Camilla, but rejected.*	*Choleric, jealous, revengeful.*
DON CARLOS,	*Near kinsman to Don Henrique.*	*A well-natured, moral gentleman.*
DON OCTAVIO,	*In love with Porcia, but feigning to be in love with Camilla.*	*A valiant and accomplished cavalier.*
DON ANTONIO,	*Contracted to Porcia by proxy, before he saw her.*	*A soldier, haughty, and of exact honour.*
PORCIA,	*Sister to Don Henrique.*	*Ingenious, constant, and severely virtuous.*
CAMILLA,	*Sister to Don Carlos.*	*Susceptible of love, but cautious of her honour.*
DIEGO,	*Servant to Octavio, bred a scholar.*	*A great coward, and a pleasant droll.*
FLORA,	*Waiting-woman to Porcia.*	*Witty, contriving, and faithful to her mistress.*
ERNESTO, SANCHO,	*Servants to Don Antonio.*	
SILVIO, GERALDO, PEDRO, BERNARDINO, JAGO,	*Servants to Don Henrique.*	

The Corregidor and Attendants.[1]

The Scene, Seville.

---

[1] In this list of characters three very unimportant personages, Mirabel, Floridor, and a Page, are omitted.—*Collier.*

Digitized by Google

THE ADVENTURES OF FIVE HOURS.

ACT I.

SCENE—*Don Antonio's house.*

Enter DON HENRIQUE.

DON H. How happy are the men of easy phlegm,
Born on the confines of indifference:
Holding from nature the securest tenure,

---

[1] This play, in the third edition from which it is here printed, received some additions and improvements. The first performance of it was at court; and on its appearance on the stage at the Duke's Theatre it met with great applause, and was acted thirteen nights successively. Echard, in the preface to his translation of Terence, gives it this general character, that it "is one of the pleasantest stories that ever appeared upon our stage, and has as much variety of plots and intrigues, without anything being precipitated, improper or unnatural, as to the main action." In the year 1767, Mr Hull made some alterations in it, with which it was acted at Covent Garden Theatre about nine nights, under the title of "The Perplexities." To the second edition were prefixed complimentary verses by James Long, J. Evelyn, A. Cowley Jasper Nedham, M.D., Lod. Carlile, Chr. Wase, William Joyner, and one copy signed Melpomene. In Sir Wm. Davenant's Works, p. 339, is a prologue written by him, addressed to the Lord Chancellor, on the acting of this play at the Inner Temple.

Digitized by Google

The peaceful empire o'er themselves; which we,
Th' unhappy men of fire, without the aids
Of mighty reason or almighty grace,
Are all our lives contending for in vain,
'Tis evident, that solid happiness
Is founded on the conquest of our passions;
But since they are the favourites of sense,
Self-love bribes reason still in their defence:
Thus in a calm I reason; but when cross'd,
The pilot quits the helm, and I am toss'd.

Enter SILVIO.

SIL. Sir, Don Carlos is without.
DON H. Wait on him in.

Enter DON CARLOS.

DON C. Cousin, methinks this day hath longer seem'd
Than usual; since 'tis so far advanc'd
Without our seeing one another.
DON H. If I had not been hinder'd by some business,
I should, ere this, have seen you, t' have told you
Some pleasing news I lately have receiv'd:
You have so often borne with my distempers,
Tis fit that once, at least, you should partake
Of my good-humour.
DON C. What cause soever has produc'd this change,
I heartily rejoice in the effect;
And may it long continue.
DON H. I can inform you by experience now,
How great a satisfaction 'tis to find
A heart and head eas'd of a weighty care;
For a gentleman of my warm temper,

Digitized by Google

Jealous of the honour of his family,
(As yet ne'er blemish'd) to be fairly freed
From the tuition of an orphan sister,
Rich, beautiful and young.

DON C. You know, Don Henrique, for these thirteen years,
That I have been with the like province charg'd:
An only sister, by our parents' will
(When they were call'd from all[1] their cares below)
Committed to my trust, much more expos'd
To the great world than yours; and, sir, unless
Nearness of blood deceive me, short of few
In those perfections which invite the gallants:
Yet, thanks to my temper, cousin, as well
As to her virtue, I have seen her grow,
Even from her childhood to her dangerous age,
Without the least disturbance to my rest;
And when with equal justice I reflect
On the great modesty and circumspection
Of lovely Porcia, I conclude that you
Might well have slept as undisturb'd as I.

DON H. Sir, I complain not of my sister's conduct;
But you know well, young maids are so expos'd
To the invasion of audacious men,
And to the malice of their envious sex,
You must confess the confines of their fame
Are never safe till guarded by a husband.
'Tis true, discreet relations ought to use

[1] Till now the measure was spoiled by the omission of the word *all*. The four editions read the line as it now stands. The play has been hitherto very carelesaly printed, and a few of the errors are pointed out in the notes.—*Collier*. [But it must be added that even Mr Collier left the text and (more particularly) the punctuation in so corrupt a state, that many passages were unintelligible.]

Digitized by Google

Preventions of all kinds; but, dear Carlos,
The blemish once receiv'd, no wash is good
For stains of honour but th' offender's blood.

DON C. Y' are too severe a judge of points of honour.

DON H. And therefore, having not long since receiv'd
The news that Don Antonio de Mendoza
Is likely to be here this night from Flanders,
To whom my sister, by th' intervention
O' th' Marquis d'Olivera, is contracted,
I will not close these eyes, till I have seen
Her and my cares safe lodg'd within his arms.

DON C. I find your travels, cousin, have not cur'd you
Of that innate severity to women,
Urg'd justly as a national reproach
To all of us abroad. The rest o' th' world
Lament that tender sex amongst us here,
Born only to be honourable prisoners;
The greater quality, the closer kept:
Which cruelty is reveng'd upon ourselves,
Whilst, by immuring those whom most we love,
We sing, and sigh only to iron gates.
As cruel is that overcautious custom
By proxy to contract parties unknown
To one another; this is only fit
For sovereign princes, whose high qualities
Will not allow of previous interviews:
They sacrifice their love to public good,
Consulting interest of state and blood;
A custom which as yet I never knew
Us'd amongst persons of a lower rank
Without a sequel of sad accidents.
Sir, understand me right; I speak not this
By way of prophecy: I am no stranger
To Don Antonio's reputation,

Digitized by Google

Which I believe so just, I no way doubt
Your sister's being happy in him.
DON H. Don Carlos, let us quit this argument:
I am now going to our noble friend
And kinsman, the corregidor, to see
If he'll oblige us with his company
At my sister's wedding. Will you come along?
DON C. Most willingly, as soon as I have brought
My sister hither, who has given this evening
To her cousin Porcia.
DON H. I have business, cousin, by the way;
I'll go before, and wait you i' th' Piazza.
Your servant, sir.
[DON HENRIQUE *waits on him to the door.*
Exit DON CARLOS.
DON H. This kinsman is my bosom friend; and yet,
Of all men living, I must hide from him
My deep resentments of his sister's scorn.
That cruel maid, to wound me to the heart,
Then close her ears against my just complaints!
But though as yet I cannot heal my wound,
I may by my revenge upon my rival
Divert the pain; and I will drive it home.
There's in revenge a balm which will appease
The present grief, till[1] time cure the disease.
[*Exit* DON HENRIQUE.

Enter PORCIA.

POR. My heart is so oppress'd with fear and grief,
That it must break, unless it finds relief;

[1] [Former edits., *and.*]

Digitized by Google

The man I love is forc'd to fly my sight,
And like a Parthian[1] kills me in his flight:
One, whom I never saw, I must embrace,
Or else destroy the honour of my race.
A brother's care, more cruel than his hate:
O, how perplex'd are the intrigues of fate!

Enter DON CARLOS *and* CAMILLA.

DON C. Cousin, I thought my sister's company
Would not displease you, whilst I wait upon
Your brother in a visit.

POR. Sir, you oblige me with a welcome favour.
I rather should have styl'd it charity
To bring a friend to her, whose cruel fate
Has robb'd her of herself. [*Aside.*

CAM. Methinks, 'tis pity that a wall should make
The houses two of friends so entirely one
As you and I, and our two brothers, are.

POR. If it be true that lovers live much more
There where they love than where they breathe, I'm sure
No walls can sever us: we're still together.

DON C. Were I not much engag'd, I would not quit
So sweet a conversation; but, sister,
At my return I'll wait upon you home.

POR. For this night, cousin, pray let her be mine,
I beg it of you both.

DON C. You may command; we are both yours.
[*Exit* DON CARLOS.

Prior has adopted this image—

"So when the Parthian turn'd his steed,
And from the hostile camp withdrew,
He backward sent the fatal reed,
Secure of conquest as he flew."

—Poems, i. 40, edit. 1778.

Digitized by Google

POR. My dear Camilla, how I long'd to have thee, [PORCIA *throws herself on* CAMILLA'S *neck.*
Where, freely breathing out my grief, I might
Some mitigation from thy pity find!
But since there's no true pity without pain,
Why should I ease by thy affliction gain?
CAM. Ah, Porcia! if compassion suffering be,
And to condole be pain, my destiny
Will full revenge in the same kind afford,
Should I but my unequall'd griefs relate,
And you but equally participate.
POR. If yours, as mine, from love-disasters rise,
Our fates are more allied than families.
CAM. What to our sex and blooming age can prove
An anguish worthy of our sighs but love?
POR. 'Tis true, Camilla, were your fate like mine,
Hopeless to hold, unable to resign.
CAM. Let's tell our stories, then we soon shall see
Which of us two excels in misery.
POR. Cousin, agreed.
CAM. Do you begin then.
POR. You know, Camilla, best how generously,
How long, and how discreetly, Don Octavio
Has serv'd me; and what trials of his faith
And fervour I did make, ere I allow'd him
The least hope to sustain his noble love.
Cousin, all this you know: 'twas in your house
We had our interviews, where you were pleas'd
To suffer feign'd addresses to yourself,
To cover from my watchful brother's eyes
The passion which Octavio had for me.
CAM. My memory in this needs no refreshing.
POR. And how one evening (O that fatal hour!)
My brother, passing by Don Carlos' house
With his great friend and confidant, Don Pedro,

Digitized by Google

Did chance to see th' unfortunate Octavio
In your balcony entertaining me:
Whom not believing there he took for you;
My back being towards him, and both dress'd alike.
Enraged with jealousy, this cruel man
(To whom all moderation is unknown)
Resolves to stamp all your neglects of him
In's suppos'd rival, poor Octavio's, heart.
They take their stand i' th' corner of our street;
And after some little time Octavio,
Free from suspicion as design of ill,
Retires: they assault him, and in's own defence
He kills Don Pedro, and is forc'd to fly.
My brother cruelly pursues him still
With such insatiate thirst after revenge,
That nothing but Octavio's blood can quench:
Covering his ill-nature and suspicion
With the resentment of Don Pedro's death.

CAM. Is this the sum of your sad story, Porcia? Is this all?

POR. No, no, Camilla, 'tis the prologue only:
The tragedy will follow. This brother,
To whose impetuous will my deceas'd parents
(May their souls rest in peace!) having condemn'd
Me and my fortune, treats me like a slave:
So far from suffering me to make my choice,
That he denounces death if I refuse;
And now, to frustrate all my hopes at once,
Has very lately made me sign a contract
To one in Flanders whom I never saw,[1]
And is this night (they say) expected here.

---

[1] This speech is very much altered from the first and second editions, where it stands that Don Henrique has already married Porcia

"By proxy
To one in Flanders."

—*Collier.*

Digitized by Google

CAM. Is such a rigour possible, dear Porcia?
POR. Was ever misery like mine, Camilla?
Reduc'd to such extremes, past all relief?
If I acquaint my brother with my love
T' Octavio, the man whom he most hates,
I must expect the worst effects of fury:
If I endeavour to forget Octavio,
Even that attempt renews his memory,
And heightens my disquiet: if I refuse
To marry, I am lost: if I obey,
I cast Octavio and myself away.
Two such extremes of ill no choice admit.
Each seems the worst; on which rock shall I split?
Since, if I marry, I cannot survive,
And not to marry were to die alive.
CAM. Your story, I confess, is strangely moving;
Yet if you could my fortune weigh with yours
In scales of equal sensibility,
You would not change your sufferings for mine.
POR. What can there be in Nature more afflicting,
Than to be torn from th' object of my love,
And forc'd t' embrace a man whom I must hate?
CAM. Have you not known that object of your love,
And entertain'd the person you esteem?
Have you not heard, and answer'd to his sighs?
Has he not borne his part in all your cares?
Do you not live and reign within his heart?
POR. I doubt no more his faith than my hard fate.
CAM. Tell me, dearest Porcia—if I love one,
Whom I shall never see: suff'ring as much
Without the means of e'er expressing it,
As what I suffer is above expression;
If all my sighs wander in fleeting air,
And ne'er can reach his ears for whom they're form'd;

Digitized by Google

If all my passion, all my killing cares,
Must be for ever to their cause unknown;
If their sad weight must sink me to my grave
Without one groan, that he can ever hear,
Or the least hope that I should e'er obtain
Ease by's pity or cure by his disdain—
If this the state of my misfortune be
(As heaven, that has decreed it, knows it is)
Say, dearest Porcia, do you envy me?

POR. What overcruel laws of decency
Have struck you dumb? Have you misplac'd your love?
On such a party as you dare not own?

CAM. No, no, the cause is worthy of th' effect:
For though I had no passion for this person,
I were ungrateful if I should not give
The first place in my heart to such high merit.

POR. If he had been so happy to deserve
Your love, why are not you so just to let
Him know it?

CAM. 'Tis impossible. Ah, that dismal word
Clearly states the difference of our fortunes!
You in your first adventure have been cross'd,
But I, before I can set out, am lost.

POR. Pray, make me comprehend this mystery.

CAM. It is t' open my wounds afresh, dear Porcia;
But you must be obey'd—— [*After a little pause.*
His excellence the Conde d'Oniate,
Being sent ambassador to th' emperor,
We, having the honour to be near allied
To's lady, went with him. My brother
Was desir'd by her to make that journey:
Whose tenderness for me not suffering him
To let me stay behind, I was engag'd,
And treated by th' ambassadress my cousin
With more respect than I could ever merit.

POR. She is a lady fam'd for great civility.

Digitized by Google

CAM. We had not pass'd much time i' th' emperor's court,
When my dear brother unexpectedly
By urgent business was call'd back to Seville.
In our return (passing too near a garrison
Of th' enemy's) our convoy was surpris'd
And routed by a party of their horse——
POR. Camilla, you begin to raise my fears.
CAM. We, being pris'ners, were hurried straight away
To th' enemy's quarters, where my ill fate
Made me appear too pleasing to the eyes
Of their commander, who at first approach
Pretends to parley in a lover's style,
Protesting that my face had chang'd our fortunes,
And him my captive made: but finding soon,
How little he advanc'd in his design
By flattery and his feign'd submission,
He shifts his person, calls me his prisoner,
And swears my virgin treasure was his prize:
But yet protests he had much rather owe it
To my indulgence than his own good-fortune.
And so, through storms and calms, the villain still
Pursues his course to his accursed end;
But finding me inflexible to his threats
As well as fawnings, he resolves to use
The last and uncontrolled argument
Of impious men in power—force.
POR. Ah, poor Camilla! where was your dear[1] brother
At a time of such distress?
CAM. My brother? he, alas! was long before
Borne away from me in the first encounter;
Where having certainly behav'd himself

[1] This word was omitted by Reed and Dodsley.—*Collier.*

Digitized by Google

As well became his nation and his name,
Remain'd sore wounded in another house.
POR. Prythee, make haste to free me from this fright.
CAM. The brute approaches, and by violence
Endeavours to accomplish his intent:
I invocate my guardian angel, and resist,
But with unequal force, though rage supplied
Those spirits which my fear had put to flight.
At length, grown faint with crying out and striving,
I spied a dagger by the villain's side,
Which snatching boldly out, as my last refuge,
With his own arms I wound the savage beast:
He at the stroke unseiz'd me, and gave back.
So guilt produces cowardice. Then I,
The dagger pointing to my breast, cried out,
Villain, keep off, for, if thou dost persist,
I'll be myself both sacrifice and priest:
I boldly now defy thy lust and hate;
She, that dares choose to die, may brave her fate!
POR. O, how I love and envy thee at once!
[PORCIA *starts to her, and kisses her.*
Go on, brave maid.
CAM. Immediately the drums and trumpets sound,
Pistols go off, and a great cry, *To arms, To arms!* The lustful satyr flies. I stand,
Fix'd with amazement to the marble floor,
Holding my guardian dagger up aloft,
As if the ravisher had threaten'd still.
POR. I fancy thee, Camilla, in that brave posture,
Like a noble statue which I remember
To have seen of the enraged Juno,
When she had robb'd Jove of his thunderbolt.
CAM. Freed from this fright, my spirits flow'd so fast

Digitized by Google

To the forsaken channels of my heart,
That they, who by their orderly access
Would have supported life, by throngs oppress:
O'ercharg'd with joy, I fell into a swoon,
And that, which happen'd during this interval,[1]
Is not within the circle of my knowledge.

POR. Y' have rais'd me to a mighty expectation:
Will the adventure answer it, Camilla?

CAM. At my return to life, op'ning my eyes,
Think, dearest Porcia, how I was astonish'd
To find there, kneeling by my side, a man
Of a most noble form, who bowing to me:
Madam (says he) y' are welcome to the world:
Pardon, I pray, the boldness of a stranger,
Who humbly sues t' you to continue in it:
Or, if you needs will leave us, stay at least
Until I have reveng'd your wrongs, and then
I'll wait upon you to the other world;
For, you withdrawn, this will a desert seem,
And life a torment.

POR. High gallantry, cousin, for the first address!

CAM. 'Twas so surprising, that my confusion
Check'd my reply; but I suppose my looks
Did speak the grateful language of my heart;
For I perceiv'd an air of joy enlighten
His manly face; but, O, how soon 'twas clouded
By fresh alarms! we heard the soldiers cry,
Where's Antonio? the enemy is rallied,

---

[1] The author has not been very strict in the observance of his metre in any part of the play, and in this respect the changes he made in the third edition were sometimes injurious. Thus in the two earlier copies this line, which would have read very well if *in* had been substituted for *during*, is given as follows—

"And what was done in this parenthesis."

It was a point gained, however, to get rid of the figure.—*Collier.*

Digitized by Google

And coming on to give a second charge!
He started up, and with a mien that mark'd
The conflict 'twixt his honour and his love,
Madam (says he) the soul was never yet
With such convulsion from the body torn,
As I from you; but it must ne'er be said
That Don Antonio de Mendoza
Follows those in dangers whom he ought to lead.
Thus the vanquish'd conqueror disappear'd,
Leaving that image stamp'd upon my heart
To which I all the joys must sacrifice
Of the poor remnant of my wretched life;
If properly to live I may be said,
When all my hopes of seeing him are dead.
[*She puts her handkerchief to her eyes.*

POR. Though you have kept this part of your adventure
Still from me——

CAM. And from everybody living.

POR. I have observ'd the signs of smother'd grief:
I've often seen those lovely eyes much swoll'n.
Those are true tears, Camilla, which are stol'n.
But what said you was his name, Camilla?

CAM. Antonio de Mendoza.

POR. O heavens! Antonio de Mendoza!

Enter DON HENRIQUE.

DON H. I'm pleased to find you speaking of your husband.

CAM. What's that I hear? her husband! [*Aside.*

DON H. Have you the letter ready I desir'd you
To write to him? I'll send a servant with it
To meet him on the way; 'twill show respect.

POR. You know my obedience, brother.

DON H. 'Tis well, sister.

Digitized by Google

Enter SILVIO.

SIL. Sir, here's a servant of Don Antonio
Newly alighted at the gate: he's come
Post from his master, charg'd with letters for you.
DON H. I could not have receiv'd more welcome news.
Go, bring him in. Sister, you may withdraw.
[*Exeunt* PORCIA *and* CAMILLA.

Enter ERNESTO *and* SILVIO.

ERN. Sir, Don Antonio kisses your hands,
And sends me to present this letter to you.
[*He gives a letter to* DON HENRIQUE. DON HENRIQUE *opens it, and, having read it to himself, says—*
DON H. I'm glad to find by's letter he's in health;
Yet methinks, friend, he writes but doubtfully
Of's being here this night, as I expected.
ERN. His letter, I suppose, sir, speaks his purpose.
DON H. I'll answer't, and despatch you presently:
In the meanwhile, go: make him welcome, Silvio.
[*Exeunt* SILVIO *and* ERNESTO.
I would to heaven he were arriv'd; I grow
Each minute more impatient. As bodies
Near the centre move with more violence,
So when we approach the ends of our designs,
Our expectations are the more intense,
And our fears greater of all cross-events.
[*Exit* DON HENRIQUE.

Enter SILVIO, ERNESTO, GERALDO, PEDRO, BERNARDINO, JAGO, *with some cups of chocolate.*

SIL. Methinks, camerade, a sup of chocolate

Digitized by Google

Is not amiss after a tedious journey—
Your master's health, sir. [*He drinks.*
ERN. I'll do you reason, sir.[1]
SIL. Pray, how long is't, brother, since you left Spain?
ERN. 'Tis now five years and upwards since I went
From Seville with my master into Flanders,
The king's fencing-school, where all his subjects
Given to fighting are taught the use of arms,
And notably kept in breath.
SIL. Your master, I am sure, has got the fame
To be a per'lous man in that rough trade.
ERN. He's a brave soldier, envy must confess it.
PED. It seems so, faith, since merely by the force
Of his great reputation he can take
Our bright young mistress in without a siege.
ERN. If I mistake not, she will be reveng'd
On him ere long, and take him too by th' force
Of her rare wit and beauty.
PED. Sh' has a fair
Portion, sir, of both, I dare assure you.
SIL. But prythee, brother, instruct us a little;
Tell us, what kind of country is this Holland,
That's so much talk'd of, and so much fought for?
ERN. Why, friend, 'tis a huge ship at anchor, fraught
With a sort of creatures made up of turf
And butter.
PED. Pray, sir, what do they drink in that country?
'Tis said, there's neither fountains there
Nor vines.
ERN. This is the butler, sure, by his apt question. [*Aside.*

[1] [I'll pledge you. See Nares, edit. 1859, p. 246.]

Digitized by Google

Friend, they drink there a certain muddy liquor,
Made of that grain with which you feed your mules.

PED. What, barley? can that juice quench their thirst?

ERN. You'd scarce believe it could, did you but see
How oft they drink.

PED. But methinks that should make them drunk, camerade?

ERN. Indeed most strangers are of that opinion;
But they themselves believe it not, because
They are so often.

GER. A nation, sure, of walking tuns, the world
Has not the like.

ERN. Pardon me, friend, there is but a great ditch
Betwixt them and such another nation;
If these good fellows would but join, and drink
That dry, i' faith they might shake hands.

GER. Prythee, friend, can these Dutch Borachios[1] fight?

ERN. They can do even as well, for they can pay
Those that can fight.

SIL. But where, I pray, sir, do they get their money?

ERN. O sir, they have a thriving mystery;
They cheat their neighbouring princes of their trade,
And then they buy their subjects for their soldiers.

SIL. Methinks our armies should beat these butter-boxes.
Out of the world.

ERN. Trust me, brother, they'll sooner beat our armies

[1] [Literally a bottle. See Halliwell in *v.*]

Digitized by Google

Out of their country: why, ready money, friend,
Will do much more in camps, as well as courts,
Than a ready wit, I dare assure you.
GER. Methinks, camerade, our king should have more money
Than these Dutch swabbers; he's master o' th' Indies,
Where money grows.
ERN. But they have herrings which, I assure you,
Are worth our master's mines.
GER. Herrings! why, what a devil, do they grow
In their country?
ERN. No, faith, they fish 'em on the English coast,
And fetch their salt from France; then they pickle 'em,
And sell 'em all o'er the world.
GER. 'Slife, these rascals live by cookery!
ERN. This is the coddled cook, I've found him out. [*Aside.*
BER. What kind of beds, sir, have they i' that country?
ERN. This, I dare swear, 's the groom o' th' chamber. [*Aside.*
Sir, they have certain niches in their walls,[1]
Where they climb up o' nights; and there they stew
In their own grease till morning.
JAGO. Pray, sir, give me leave to ask you one question:
What manner of women have they in that country?

---

[1] [Cupboard beds, similar to those still used throughout Holland among the humbler classes.]

Digitized by Google

ERN. The gentleman-usher, upon my life!
[*Aside.*
Pray excuse me, sir: we gentlemen-soldiers
Value ourselves upon our civility
To that soft sex; and in good faith they are
The softest of that sex I ever met with.
JAGO. Does any of our Spaniards ever marry
With 'em?
ERN. Yes, some lean families, that have a mind
To lard their progeny.
SIL. What, a' God's name, could come into the heads
Of this people to make them rebel?
ERN. Why, religion; that came into their heads
A' God's name.
GER. But what a devil made the noblemen
Rebel? they never mind religion.
ERN. Why, that which made the devil himself rebel—
Ambition.
SIL. This is a pleasant fellow. [*Aside.*
I find you gentlemen-soldiers want no wit.
ERN. When we're well paid, sir, but that's so seldom,
I find that gentleman wants wit that is
A soldier. Your company's very good,
But I have business which requires despatch.
PED. Will you not mend your draught before you go?
ERN. I thank you, sir, I have done very well.
ALL. Your servant, your servant, &c. [*Exeunt.*

Enter CAMILLA, PORCIA, FLORA.

POR. Was e'er disaster like to mine, Camilla?
CAM. Was e'er misfortune, Porcia, like to mine?
POR. That I must never see Octavio more?

Digitized by Google

CAM. That I again must Don Antonio see,
Yet never see him mine?
POR. I, to be married to the man I hate!
CAM. And I, to have the man I love torn from me!
POR. I am, by robbing of my friend, undone!
CAM. I, for not hind'ring of the theft, am lost!
POR. Ye powers, who these entangled fortunes give,
Instruct us how to die or[1] how to live. [*She weeps.*
CAM. Cousin, when we should act, then to complain
Is childishly to beat the air in vain.
These descants on our griefs only perplex;
Let's seek the remedy. You know, our sex
This honour bears from men, in exigents
Of love never to want expedients.
POR. You have awaken'd me, give me your veil:
[PORCIA *takes off* CAMILLA'S *veil, and puts it on herself.*
Quickly, dear cousin, quickly; and you, Flora,
Run presently, and see whether my brother
Be settled to despatch Antonio's man. [*Exit* FLORA.
CAM. What mean you, Porcia?
POR. If once my brother be set down to write,
I may securely reckon one hour mine;
For he is so extravagantly jealous,
That he distrusts the sense of his own words,
And will weigh a subscription to a scruple,
Lest he should wrong his family by his style:
Therefore, I'll serve myself of[2] this occasion
To see Octavio, and to let him know
That all our hopes are ready to expire,
Unless he finds some prompt expedient
For our relief.

---

[1] [Former edits., *and.*] [2] [Former edits., *on.*]

Digitized by Google

CAM. Pray, how and where d' you hope to speak with him?

POR. At his own house, where he lies yet conceal'd:
'Tis not far off, and I will venture thither.

CAM. D' you know the way?

POR. Not very well; but Flora's a good guide.

Enter FLORA *hastily.*

FLO. O madam! he's coming already.

POR. Ah, spiteful destiny! Come, let's retire
Into my chamber, cousin.
[*Exeunt* PORCIA *and* CAMILLA.

Enter DON HENRIQUE *and* ERNESTO.

DON H. If you desire to see her, friend, you may.

ERN. I should be glad to acquaint my master, sir,
That I have had the honour to see his bride.

DON H. Where's your lady, Flora?

FLO. She's in her chamber, sir.

DON H. Tell her, Antonio's man attends her here,
To do his duty to her ere he goes. [*Exit* FLORA.
Stay here: you'll find her with a kinswoman,
In her home dress without a veil; but you
Are privileg'd by your relation for this access:
I'll go despatch my letter. [*Exit* HENRIQUE.

Enter CAMILLA, PORCIA, *and* FLORA. ERNESTO *addresses himself to* CAMILLA, *seeing her without a veil.*

ERN. Madam, I have been bold to beg the honour
Of seeing your ladyship, to make myself
More welcome to my lord at my return.

Digitized by Google

POR. A rare mistake! further it, dear Camilla!
Who knows what good this error may produce?
[*Aside.*

CAM. Friend, in what state left you your lord and mine?

ERN. As happy as the hopes of being yours
Could make him, madam.

CAM. I would the master were as easily deceiv'd. [*Aside.*
I pray present my humble service to him;
And let him know that I am very glad
He has pass'd his journey so successfully—
Give him the letter, Flora.[1] Farewell, friend.
[*Exeunt* CAMILLA, PORCIA, *and* FLORA.

ERN. Now, by my life, she is a lovely lady;
My master will be ravish'd with her form.
I hope this blind bargain, made by proxy,
May prove as happy a marriage as those
Made after th' old fashion, chiefly for love,
And that this unseen beauty may have charms
To bring him back to his right wits again
From his wild ravings on an unknown dame,
Whom, as he fancies (once upon a time)
He recover'd from a trance, that's to say
From a sound sleep, which makes him dream e'er since.
I'll hasten to him with this pleasing news.
[*Exit* ERNESTO.

---

[1] This is hardly intelligible, as it stands here and in the third edition. In the two earlier copies, Porcia says to Flora on entering—

"If thou lov'st me, get him away quickly
Before my brother come, and give him this.
[*She gives* FLORA *a letter.*"

—*Collier.* [There does not appear to be any obscurity here. In a subsequent scene, Ernesto delivers the letter handed to him by Flora from Camilla, whom he mistakes for Porcia.]

Digitized by Google

Enter CAMILLA, PORCIA, *and* FLORA.

CAM. My melancholy could hardly hinder me
From laughing at the formal fool's mistake.
But, tell me, did not I present your person
With rare assurance? The way for both to thrive
Is to make me your representative.

POR. Most willingly; and I am confident,
When you your charms shall to his heart apply,
You all your rivals safely may defy.

CAM. I wish I could be vain enough to hope it.
But, cousin, my despairs are so extreme,
I can't be flatter'd, though but in a dream.

FLO. Madam, do we go, or what do you resolve on?

POR. I must resolve, but know not what to choose.

CAM. Cousin, take heed, I am afraid you venture
Too much: your brother cannot tarry long,
And if at his return he finds you missing——

POR. Y' have reason; th' opportunity is lost.
What is't o'clock, Flora?

FLO. I think, near seven, for the clock struck six
Just as Camilla enter'd the chamber.

POR. Quick then, Flora, fetch your veil; you shall carry
My tablets to Octavio; there he'll find
The hour and place where I would have him meet.
[*Exit* FLORA.

CAM. 'Tis well resolv'd; but where do you design
Your meeting.

POR. In the remotest part of all the garden,
Which answers, as you know, to my apartment;
And Flora has the key of the back-door.

Digitized by Google

CAM. As the case stands, you choose the fittest place. [FLORA *returns veiled.*

POR. Cousin, I beg your patience whilst I write. [PORCIA *writes in her tablets.*

CAM. You, Mistress Flora, by this accident
May chance to see your faithful lover Diego.

FLO. He is a faithful lover of himself—[1]
Without a rival, madam.

CAM. Damsel, your words and thoughts hardly agree;
For could we see his image in your heart,
'Twould be a fairer far than e'er his glass
Reflected.

FLO. Madam, I am not yet so very old,
That I should doat.

CAM. Nor yet so very young but you may love:
Dotage and love are cousin-germans, Flora.

FLO. Yes, when we love and are not lov'd again; [*Smiling.*
For else I think they're not so near akin.

CAM. I have touch'd a nettle, and stung myself. [*Aside.*

POR. Make all the haste you can, pray, Flora.

FLO. Madam, I'll fly.
Should I not play my part, I were to blame,
Since all my fortune's betted on her game. [*Aside.*
Madam, has Octavio the other key
Belonging to the tablets?

POR. Yes, yes; I pray, make haste. [*Exit* FLORA.

CAM. Cousin, pray, call for Mirabel, and let her
Divert us with a song.

POR. Who waits there?

---

[1] [*Of himself* seems to be used here in the sense of by himself, *per se*, standing alone.]

Digitized by Google

Enter Page.

Page, bid Mirabel come in, and Floridor
With his lute, and send in somebody with chairs.

CAM. Pray, cousin, let her sing her newest air.

POR. What you please.

CAM. Tell me, prythee, whose composition was it?

POR. Guess, and I'll tell you true.

[*They bring in chairs.*

CAM. Octavio's?

POR. Y' are i' th' right.

Enter MIRABEL *and* FLORIDOR.

POR. Mirabel, sing "Mistaken Kindness."

THE SONG.[1]

Can Luciamira so mistake,
To persuade me to fly?
'Tis cruel-kind for my own sake
To counsel me to die;
Like those faint souls, who cheat themselves of breath,
And die for fear of death.

Since love's the principle of life,
And you the object lov'd,
Let's, Luciamira, end this strife,
I cease to be remov'd.
We know not what they do are gone from hence,
But here we love by sense.

If the Platonics, who would prove
Souls without bodies love,

[1] The song, and its introduction, were new in the copy of 1671.—*Collier.*

Digitized by Google

Had, with respect, well understood,
The passions i' the blood,
Th' had suffer'd bodies to have had their part
And seated love i' the heart.

[*Exeunt* MIRABEL *and* FLORIDOR.

POR. What discord there's in music, when the heart,
Untun'd by trouble, cannot bear a part!

CAM. In vain we seek content in outward things;
'Tis only from within where quiet springs.

[*Exeunt.*

ACT II.

SCENE.—*The city of Seville.*

Enter DON ANTONIO *and* SANCHO, *in riding-clothes.*

SAN. Sir, we are arriv'd in very good time.

DON A. I did not think it would have been so soon
By an hour at least; but lovers ride apace.
Why smile you, Sancho?

SAN. Faith, at the novelty of your amours,
To fall in love with one you hardly saw,
And marry one you never saw: 'tis pretty;
But we poor mortals have another method.

DON A. Y' are very pleasant, friend; but is not this
The market-place, behind the Jacobins?

SAN. Yes, sir.

DON A. 'Tis here I charg'd Ernesto to expect me.

SAN. Since you are here, sir, earlier than you thought,

Digitized by Google

Why might you not go shift you at the post-house,
And be return'd before Ernesto come?
Howe'er, 'tis better that he wait for you,
Than you for him, in the open street.

DON A. 'Tis well thought on; come, let's go then. [*Exeunt.*

Enter DON OCTAVIO *and* DIEGO.

DON O. Come, Diego, 'tis now time to quit our dens,
And to begin our chase.

DIEGO. Of what, sir? bats or owls, now the sun's set?
Call you this making of love? why, methinks,
'Tis more like making of war: marching all night
In arms, as if we design'd to beat up
The enemy's quarters.

DON O. Why, would not you venture as much for Flora?

DIEGO. No, in good faith, sir; I shall venture enough,
If e'er I marry her: I'll run no hazard
By my good-will beforehand.

DON O. That's from your fear, not prudence, Diego.

DIEGO. Sir, you may call it what you please; but I
Dare boldly say, there lives not in the world
A more valiant man than I, whilst danger
Keeps its distance; but when saucily
It presses on, then, I confess, 'tis true,
I have a certain tenderness for life,
Which checks my ardour, and inclines my prudence
Timely to withdraw.

DON O. Your style is wondrous civil to yourself;
How you soften that harsh word call'd cowardice.

But the danger is not always evident,
When you are pleas'd, my friend, to run away.
DIEGO. It may be so, sir—not to vulgar eyes;
But I have such a piercing sight, that I
Discover perils out of others' ken;
Which they, not seeing soon enough to shun,
Are forc'd t' encounter; and then their struggling
Is by th' unwary world taken for courage.
DON O. Who's truly valiant will be always so.
DIEGO. Who's wisely valiant will avoid the foe.
DON O. You have more light, Diego, I see, than heat;
But I'll allow your wit and honesty
To come to composition for your want
Of courage.
DIEGO. I have courage enough for the profession
To which my parents did design me.
DON O. Why, what was that?
DIEGO. An advocate. I could have acted choler
In my client's sight, and, when his back was turn'd,
Have hugg'd the lawyer of the adverse party;
And, if I mistake not, they sell their breath
Much dearer than you soldiers do your blood.
'Tis true, you get honour, a fine light food
For delicate complexions; but I have
Known some captains of plain stomachs starve upon't.
DON O. The varlet's i' the right. [*Aside.*] How came't about
You were not of this thriving trade?
DIEGO. After I had spent seven years at Salamanca,
My father, a rich merchant of this city,
Was utterly undone by that damn'd Englishman,
With whom we fright our children.
DON O. Who, Captain Drako? Was he a pirate?

Digitized by Google

DIEGO. He had been so on this side of the line.
DON O. 'Tis strange that war and peace should have degrees
Of latitude: one would have thought they should
Have been the same all o'er the world. But what's this
To my amours? I trifle away my time.
Was ever lover's fate so rude as mine?
Condemn'd to darkness, forc'd to hide my head,
As well as love; and, to spite me the more,
Fortune has contradictions reconcil'd:
I am at once a pris'ner and exil'd.

Enter DON ANTONIO *and* SANCHO.

DON A. Methinks Ernesto should not tarry long,
If not already come. Sancho, how call you
The street there just before us, where you see
Yon gentleman with his cloak o'er his face?
I have lost all my measures of this town.
SANCHO. I am as much to seek as you, sir.
DON A. Let us go to him, Sancho, and inquire:
He has a notable good mien: I ne'er
Saw an air more like [to] Octavio's.
DON. O. Unless my eyes do very much deceive me,
That's Don Antonio; if it be he, Diego,
There is no danger in his knowing us:
He was my comrade when I first bore arms.
[DON OCTAVIO *lets fall his cloak from before his face.*
'Tis he.
DON A. You injure me, Octavio, to be so long
A-knowing one who's so entirely yours.
[*They embrace.*
DON O. Your presence in this place, noble Antonio,

Digitized by Google

Was so unexpected, I hardly durst
Believe my eyes. When came you to this town?
DON A. I am just now arrived.
DON O. I joy to see you here, but should have thought
It likelier to have heard of you at court,
Pursuing there the recompenses due
To your great merit.
DON A. That is no place for men of morality:
I have been taught, Octavio, to deserve,
But not to seek, reward, that does profane
The dignity of virtue. If princes,
For their own interests, will not advance
Deserving subjects, they must raise themselves
By a brave contempt of fortune.
DON O. Rig'rous virtue! which makes us to deserve,
Yet suffer the neglect of those we serve.
DON A. Virtue to interest has no regard:
Nor is it virtue, if w' expect reward.
DON A. If for their service kings our virtues press,
Is no pay due to valour and success?
DON O. When we gave up our persons to their will,
We gave with those our valour, fortune, skill.
DON O. But this condition tacitly was meant,
Kings should adjust reward and punishment.
DON A. Kings are the only judges of deserts,
And our tribunal's seated in their hearts.
DON O. But if they judge and act amiss, what then?
DON A. They must account to th' powers above, not men.[1]

[1] It may be mentioned here, that throughout the third edition certain sententious passages, and moral and political

Digitized by Google

DON O. Then we must suffer?
DON A. Yes; if we reject
Their power as too great, we must erect
A greater to control them; and thus we,
Instead of shrinking, swell the tyranny.
DON O. W' obey for fear, then?
DON A. True: 'tis only above,
Where pow'r is justice, and obedience love.
DON O. I'm glad to find in you the seeds yet left
Of steady virtue; may they bring forth fruit,
Fit to illustrate and instruct the age.
Let me once more embrace you: welcome, brave man, [*Embraces* DON ANTONIO.
Both the delight and honour of your friends.
DON A. You will give me leave, sir, to distinguish
Betwixt your judgment and civility.
DON O. He has not liv'd i' th' reach of public fame,
Who is a stranger to your character.
This is my house; be pleas'd, sir, to go in,
And make it yours, though truly at present
I am but in an ill condition
To receive the honour of such a guest,
Having, by an unlucky accident,
Been forc'd of late to keep myself conceal'd.
DON A. I humbly thank you, sir, but cannot yet
Receive your favour; for I must stay here,
Expecting the return of one I sent
Before me to my brother-in-law's.

---

apothegms, are printed in italics. This ultra-loyal line, and some others of the same kind so distinguished, were first inserted in the copy of the play published two years before the death of the author.—*Collier.*

Digitized by Google

DON O. Have you a brother-in-law in Seville?
You surprise me much.
DON A. It is most true, Octavio, I come hither
A married man, as much as friends can make me.
DON O. Since it imports you not to miss your servant,
Let us stay here without until he comes,
And then go in and rest yourself awhile.
But how go our affairs in Flanders?
DON A. I left our armies in a better state
Than formerly.
DON O. And your governor, the Duke of Alva,
I suppose, in great[er] reputation?
DON A. The honour of our country and the terror
Of others: Fortune consulted Reason
When she bestow'd such favours upon him.
DON O. And yet 'tis said, he loses ground at court.
DON A. 'Tis possible: under a jealous prince
A great's as prejudicial as an evil fame.
DON O. They say he's cruel, even to barbarity.
DON A. 'Tis mercy, that which they call cruelty.
In a civil war, in fertile provinces
(And the sun sees not richer than are these),
The soldier, especially the auxiliary,
Whose trade it is to fight for salary,
Is brib'd by gain the rebels' lives to spare,
That mutual quarter may prolong the war;
Till this slow fever has consum'd their force,
And then they'll fall to our rival France, of course.
War made in earnest maketh war to cease,
And vigorous prosecution hastens peace.
DON O. Y' have made me comprehend his conduct: he's sure
As great a politician as a soldier.
DON A. Loyalty's his centre, his circumf'rence, glory;
And t' after ages he'll show great in story.

Digitized by Google

DON O. And is our good friend, the Marquis d'Olivera,
In high esteem?
DON A. The boast of [all] our army: h' has exceeded
Hope, and made flattery impossible.
DON O. They say he did wonders at the siege of Mons.[1]
DON A. You mean, as I suppose, at the pursuit
O' th' German army, led by the Prince of Orange?
Indeed his courage and his conduct there
Were very signal.
DON O. You'll much oblige me if, whilst you expect
Your servant here, I might learn from yourself
Some few particulars of your own actions;
Fame speaks loudly of them, but not distinctly.
DON A. Fame, like water, bears up the lighter things,
And lets the weighty sink. I do not use
To speak in the first person; but if you needs
Will have a story to fill up the time,
I'll tell you an adventure of my own,
Where you'll find love so intermix'd with arms,
That, I am confident, 'twill raise your wonder,
How, being prepossess'd with such a passion,
I should, upon prudential motives only,

[1] In the year 1572 the town of Mons, in Hainault, was surprised by Count Lodowicke, who fortified himself in it, intending to hold it against the power of Spain. It was soon after invested by the Duke of Alva, and surrendered to him after a long siege, notwithstanding the Prince of Orange, who came before it with an army, with which he some time harassed his enemy, but without effecting his principal design.

Digitized by Google

Be engag'd, as now you find me, to marry
A lady whom I never saw.
DON O. The person and the subject, sir, both challenge
My best attention.
DON A. [*After a little pause.*] The following evening to that glorious day,
Wherein the Duke of Alva gain'd such fame
Against the cautelous Nassau, some horse
Were sent from the army under my command.
To cover the Limbourg frontiers, much expos'd
To th' enemy's inroads. My troops scarce lodg'd,
I receiv'd intelligence that a party
Of th' enemy, about two hundred horse,
Were newly come t' a village three leagues off,
Intending there to lodge. Immediately
We sounded to horse, and march'd[1] to their surprise
So lustily,[2] that by the break of day
Their quarters were on fire.
DON O. You had been taught, sir, by your wise general,
That diligence in execution is
(Even above fortune) mistress of success.
DON A. They made but faint resistance: some were slain,
Some perish'd in the fire, others escap'd,
Giving the alarm in quarters more remote
To their companions drown'd in sleep and wine
Who, at the outcry and the noise of trumpets,
Methinks I fancy starting from their beds,
As pale and wan, as from their dormitories
Those the last trump shall rouse: diff'ring in this,
That those awake to live, but these to die.

---

[1] [Former edits., *march.*] [2] [Former edits., *luckily.*]

Digitized by Google

DON O. O, how unsafe it is to be secure!
DON A. Finding no more resistance, I made haste
To a lofty structure which, as I conceiv'd,
Was the likeliest quarter for their officer;
Led thither by desire to rescue both—
Him from the soldier's rage, that from the fire.
DON O. A care most worthy of a gallant leader.
DON A. But think, Octavio, how I was surpris'd
When, entering a pavilion i' th' garden,
I found a woman of a matchless form,
Stretch'd all along upon the marble floor.
DON O.[1] I easily can divine how such a heart,
As harbours in the brave Antonio's breast,
May suffer at so sad a spectacle.
DON A. At the first sight I did believe her dead;
Yet in that state so awful she appear'd,
That I approach'd her with as much respect
As if the soul had animated still
That body which, though dead, scarce mortal seem'd.
But as, the sun from our horizon gone,
His beams do leave a tincture on the skies,
Which shows it was not long since he withdrew:
So in her lovely face there still appear'd
Some scatter'd streaks of those vermilion beams,
Which us'd t' irradiate that bright firmament.
Thus did I find that distress'd miracle,
Able to wound a heart as if alive,
Uncapable to cure it as if dead.
DON O. I no more doubt your pity than your wonder.

---

[1] In the third edition, by an error, this speech is not distinguished from Antonio's description, but it would evidently belong to Octavio, even if, in the two earlier copies, the same mistake had been committed.—*Collier.*

Digitized by Google

DON A. My admiration did suspend my aid,
Till passion join'd to pity made me bold.
I kneel'd, and took her in my arms, then bow'd
Her body gently forward; at which instant
A sigh stole from her. O the ravishing sound!
Which being a symptom of remaining life
Made me forget that 'twas a sign of grief.
At length she faintly opens her bright eyes:
So breaks the day, and so do all the creatures
Rejoice, as I did, at the new-born light:
But as the Indians, who adore the sun,
Are scorch'd by's beam, ere half his race be run,
So I, who did adore her rising eyes,
Found myself wounded by those deities.

DON O. I am big with expectation; pray
Deliver me.

DON A. From her fair hand a bloody poniard fell,
Which she held fast during her trance, as if
Sh' had only needed arms whilst she did sleep,
And trusted to her eyes when she did wake.
What I said to her, being a production
Of mere ecstasy, I remember not.
She made me no reply; yet I discern'd,
In a serener air of her pale face,
Some lines of satisfaction mix'd with fear.

DON O. Such looks in silence have an eloquence.
But pray go on.

DON A. Rais'd from the ground, and to herself return'd,
I stepp'd a fitting distance back, as well
To gaze upon that lovely apparition,
As to express respect; when at that instant
The trumpets sound a charge; my soldiers cry,
Where is our leader? Where's Antonio?
My love awhile disputed with my honour,
But that, being the longer-settled power,

Digitized by Google

O'ercame; I join'd my troops, left in reserve,
As they were ready to receive a charge
From divers squadrons of fresh horse who, being
Quarter'd in neighbouring villages, had taken
Hotly th' alarm, and came, though then too late,
In succour of their friends. Honour and love
Had so inflam'd my heart, that I advanc'd
Beyond the rules of conduct, and receiv'd
So many wounds, that I with faintness fell.

DON O. How can this story end?

DON A. My soldiers beat the enemy, and brought me off,
Where surgeons quickly cur'd my outward wounds;
But the remembrance of that heroine
My inward hurts kept bleeding still afresh;
Till, by the business of the war constrain'd
T' attend my charge i' th' army, my despair
Of ever seeing her again conspiring
With the strong persuasions of Olivera,
I was at length even forc'd to an engagement
Of marriage with a lady of this city,
Rich, noble, and, as they say, beautiful.
And so you have me here, come to consummate
Those nuptial rites to which my interest,
And the importunity of trusty friends,
O'errule my judgment, though against my heart.

DON O. A wonderful adventure! but pray, sir,
May I not take the liberty to ask you,
Who may this noble lady be, to whom
The fates have destin'd so much happiness?

DON A. I have no reserves for you, Octavio,
'Tis the sister of——

Enter ERNESTO, *and* DON OCTAVIO *retires hastily, and covers his face with his cloak.*

DON A. [*Nodding to* OCTAVIO.] It is my servant, sir.

Digitized by Google

DON O. Step to Antonio, Diego, and desire him
To send him off.
[DIEGO *goes to* ANTONIO *and whispers.*
DON A. I will immediately. Well, Ernesto,
What good news? speak freely.
ERN. Sir, as you charg'd me, I told your brother-in-law
I thought you hardly could be there this night.
He kisses your hands, and bad me tell you,
That he expects your coming with impatience.
This letter's from Don Henrique, th' other's from
Your beauteous bride, the most accomplish'd person
I ever saw: my being of your train
Gave me the privilege of a domestic,
To see her in her chamber-dress without
A veil, either to cover faults or hide
Perfections.
DON A. Tell me truly, is she so very handsome?
ERN. Handsomer far, in my opinion, sir,
Than all those Brussels beauties, which you call
The finish'd pieces: but I say no more;
Let your own eyes inform you; here's a key
Of the apartment that's made ready for you;
A lower quarter, very nobly furnish'd,
That opens on St Vincent's Street.
DON A. Give it me, and go to the post-house,
And take care that my things be brought from thence.
[*Exit* ERNESTO.
Octavio, will you go along with me,
And be a witness of my first address?
DON O. Sir, you choose in me an ill companion
Of lovers' interviews or nuptial joys:
One whose misfortunes to such sad extremes
Are heighten'd, that the very mentioning
Of happy hours serves only to embitter
The memory of my lost joys.

Digitized by Google

DON A. So very deep a sense of your misfortunes
Holds no proportion with Octavio's mind.

Enter FLORA *in haste.*

FLO. Where's your master, Diego?
DIEGO. There's some ill towards, when this bird appears. [*Aside.*
Do you not see him? y' have liv'd too long a maid.
FLO. Sir, I have something to say t' you in private,
That requires haste.
DON O. What new accident brings you hither, Flora?
FLO. These tablets will inform you, sir.
[FLORA *retires.*
DIEGO. Will you not stay for an answer, damsel?
FLO. 'Tis a command, not a question, Diego.
DIEGO. Short and sweet, Flora.
DON O. Good Flora, stay a minute. I much fear
It is some new misfortune.
DIEGO. Nay, sir, you may be sure 'tis some disaster,
Else it would ne'er have come so easily,
And so unsought for.
DON O. Will you allow me for a moment, sir,
To step into my house, and read a letter?
[*Bowing to* ANTONIO.
DON A. I'll wait upon you in, and stay your leisure. [*Exeunt all but* DIEGO.
DIEGO. These little black books do more devils raise
Than all the figures of the conjurors.
This is some missive from the heroine:
If it ends not in fighting, I'll be hang'd;

Digitized by Google

It is the method of their dear romances,
And persons of their rank make love by book.
Curse o'[1] th' inventor of that damn'd device
Of painting words, and speaking to our eyes!
Had I a hundred daughters, by this light,
Not one of 'em should ever read or write.

Enter FLORA, *and seems to go away in haste.*

Here she comes again. 'Twas a quick despatch.
A word, Flora, or a kind glance at least;
What, grown cruel?

FLO. Diego, nobody w' you?[2]
This is no time for fooling, friend.

DIEGO. Nay, if you be so serious, fare you well.
But, now I think on't better, I'll do th' honours
Of our street, and bring you to the end on't.

FLO. I shall be well help'd up with such a squire.
If some wandering knight should chance to assault you,
To bear away your damsel, what would you do?

DIEGO. I'd use no other weapon but a torch:
I'd put aside your veil, show him your face,
That, I suppose, would guard us both.

FLO. Why, d' you think 'twould fright him, Diego?

DIEGO. O no, 'twould charm him, Flora.

FLO. Well, such as 'tis, I'll venture it without
Engaging your known valour: [so,] good night.
[*Exit* FLORA.

Enter DON OCTAVIO *and* DON ANTONIO.

DON O. What may this be? I swear I cannot guess;

---

[1] [*i.e.*, *On*. Former edits., *of*.]
[2] [In former edits. this line is given to Diego.]

Digitized by Google

The warning's short; but she must be obeyed.
The hour draws near. I must go seek a friend,
Her words seem to imply need of a second:
'Twere barbarous to engage Antonio,
Newly arriv'd, and come on such an errand.
[*Aside.*
Noble Antonio, my confusion's great,
[*Addressing* ANTONIO.
To tell you thus abruptly I must leave you;
Th' occasion's indispensable.

DON A. I must not quit you, sir, I know too well
The laws of honour to desert you now:
When I perceive my friend in such disorder,
And[1] all the marks that he is call'd to danger,
To leave him then——

DON O. It is a summons from a lady, sir,
Whom I have lov'd with passion and success,
To meet her in her garden presently.
All is propitious on her part and mine;
But she's so guarded by a tyrant brother,
So naturally jealous, and so incens'd
By a late accident which I shall tell you,
That to assure you there would be no danger
In this adventure, were (sir) to abuse you:
But for that very reason I am bound
Not to consent you should embark yourself
In a business so directly opposite
To the occasion which has brought you hither.

DON A. I like the omen: at my first arrival
To have the honour to serve so brave a friend.

DON O. You from a life of perils hither come
To find a nuptial-bed, not seek a tomb.

DON A. My friend engag'd, it never must be said
Antonio left him so to go to bed.

[1] [Perhaps we should read *With.*]

Digitized by Google

DON O. Y' are married, and expose what's not your own.
DON A. Wedded to honour, that must yield to none.
DON O. Honour makes me refuse your aid; we must
As well to friends as to ourselves be just.
DON A. He ought not to pretend to friendship's name,
Who reckons not himself and friend the same.
DON O. Friendship with justice must not disagree,
That were to break the virtue's harmony.
DON A. Friendship is justice; for whene'er we give,
We then receive: so 'tis commutative.
DON O. So great's your friendship, you your friend oppress:
To make it juster, you must make it less.
DON A. Friendship can never err in the extent:
Like Nile, when't overflows, 'tis most beneficent.
DON O. I find, Antonio, you will still subdue.
DON A. I owe my triumph to my cause, not you.
Come, we lose time; your mistress must not stay.
DON O. Who's so accompani'd, needs not fear his way. [*Exeunt.*

ACT III.

SCENE.—DON HENRIQUE'S *house.*

CAMILLA, PORCIA, *and* FLORA *appear in a balcony.*

POR. Come, cousin, the hour assign'd approaches.
CAM. Nay, more than so; for 'tis already night.

Digitized by Google

FLO. And, thanks to your stars, sufficiently dark.
POR. *To the clouds* you would say, Flora; for stars,
In this occasion, would not much befriend us.
Pray, cousin, when Octavio shall arrive,
Do you and Flora watch above with care;
For if my cruel brother should surprise us——
CAM. Let us alone to play the sentinels.
FLO. I'm confident he's abroad, and will not
Suddenly return; for I heard him say
He'd pass the evening at the corregidor's:
And thence, you know, he seldom comes home early.

Enter ANTONIO, OCTAVIO, *and* DIEGO, *with their cloaks over their faces, and their swords undrawn in their hands.*

DON A. Is it not something early for adventures
Of this nature.
DON O. 'Tis the hour she appointed.
DON A. How dark 'tis grown o' th' sudden! there's not one
Star appears in all the firmament.
DIEGO. So much the better; for when I must fight,
I covet no spectators of my prowess. [*Aside.*
DON O. Stay you here, Antonio; I'll step before, and give the sign. When you hear the door open, then come on, and follow me in.

Enter at the other side of the stage DON HENRIQUE *and* DON CARLOS.

DON H. The corregidor's is a sweet place.
DON C. The walks and fountains so entice me, I still
Weary myself before I can retire.

Digitized by Google

DON H. Indeed we have stay'd longer than we thought,
And therefore let's go home the shorter way:
The back-door of my garden's here at hand.
DON C. It will be better than to go about.
POR. Would he were come, I fear the rising moon
Will give us little time.
[*Above in the balcony.* OCTAVIO *knocks upon the hilt of his sword.*
I think I hear his usual knock. Who's there?
DON O. 'Tis I.
POR. I hope y' are not alone.
DON O. No; here's Diego with me, and a friend.
POR. 'Tis well. I'll open the door presently.
DON H. Come, we are now hard by the garden-gate.
DON O. Let's to the door; sure, she's there by this time.
Be not afraid, Diego.
DIEGO. You had as good command me not to breathe.
DON O. Come on; what are you thinking on?
DIEGO. That I see company, or that my fear does.
DON O. Y' are i' th' right; let's, to avoid suspicion,
Walk on at large till they are out of distance.
[*The noise of a lock.*
DON C. I think I heard your garden door open.
DON H. I think so too; ha! at this time of the night?
Why, what a devil can this mean? 'Tis so.
DON A. They have open'd this door: 'tis time for me
To follow; surely Octavio is gone in.
[ANTONIO *goes towards the door.*
POR. What stay you for?
[*Holding the door half open.*

Digitized by Google

DON H. What is't I hear? sure, 'tis Porcia's voice.
POR. What mean you to stand there? come in, I say.
DON H. Hell and furies!
[*He goes to draw his sword.*
DON C. Be patient, sir, and you will make a clearer
Discovery of your affront.
POR. You may come in securely, Octavio.
[*Setting open the door.*
I have set those will watch my brother's coming.
DON A. Madam, I am not Octavio.
POR. Not Octavio! who are you then, and who's
That shadow there?
DON H. I can hold no longer. [*Aside.*] I'm thy destiny, [*Draws his sword.*
Vile woman, and his mortal enemy.
DON A. Ha, my mortal enemy?
DON H. Yes, villain. Whoe'er thou art, thou shalt pay
This treachery with thy life.
DON A. Vain man! whoe'er thou art, know [that] the life
Thou threaten'st is guarded by a trusty sword.
[DON CARLOS *draws, and they all enter the garden fighting.*
DON H. Make fast the door. [*To* DON CARLOS.
Thou art some desperate villain hir'd to murder.
[OCTAVIO *and* DIEGO *come to the door.*
DON A. Hir'd by friendship, and honour's my salary. [*In the garden.*
DON O. That's Antonio's voice within the garden: [*Runs to the door and finds it shut.*
What, the door shut! my friend engaged, and I
Excluded! cursed fate! this tree may help me
To climb o'er; if not, I'll fly t' him. [*He climbs up.*

Digitized by Google

DIEGO. You may do so; your sprightly love has wings,
And's ever fledg'd;[1] 'tis moulting-time with mine:
Yet I'll up too; the hazard's not in climbing.
[DIEGO *climbs the tree.*
Here I will sit, and out of danger's reach
Expect the issue.

Scene changes to a garden, out of which they issue fighting.

DON O. Courage, brave friend; you have Octavio by you.
DON A. So seconded, a coward would grow firm.
DON H. What, is there more of your crew? then 'tis time
To call for help. Ho! Silvio, Geraldo,
Pedro! come forth, and bring out torches with you.

Enter SILVIO, *with his sword drawn.*

SIL. Here am I, sir, my camarades[2] will follow
[*They fight.*
As soon as they have lighted their torches.
DON A. How I despise these slaves, Octavio,
Having you by me!
DIEGO. Their swords do clatter bravely in the dark.
[*In the tree.*
SIL. I'm slain.
[SILVIO *falls.* DON HENRIQUE, *stepping back, falls over* SILVIO, *and loses his sword, and* CARLOS *runs in to him.*
DON C. What,[3] are you hurt?

---

[1] [Former edits., *fledge.*]
[2] [So for metre's sake, instead of *comrades.*]
[3] [This is printed by Mr Collier, *Wat are you hurt?*]

Digitized by Google

DON H. No, I fell by chance: help me to find my sword.

DON O. What, do you give back? you do well to take breath,
Whilst you have any left; 'twill not be long,
Now that the rising moon lends us some light.

[*The rising moon appears behind the scene.* PORCIA *runs out to* OCTAVIO.

POR. O Octavio, let not this moment slip
To free me from my cruel brother's fury,
Or never hope to see me any more
Amongst the living.

[OCTAVIO *leads her away by the arm.*

DON O. Ah, noble maid! he that is once possess'd
Of such a treasure, and defends it not,
Let him live wretched, and detested die.
Where's my brave friend?

DON A. You have me by your side: lead off your mistress;
I'll secure your retreat.

DIEGO. That, doubtless, is my master who, victorious,

[*In the tree, pointing to those who are going off.*

Is bravely marching off with his fair prize:
I'll down and follow.

DON C. But whilst I was engag'd to succour you,

[*Having helped up* DON HENRIQUE.

Our enemies, I fear, are got away:
I heard the door open, and see none here:
Although the night's much brighter than it was.
I'll follow, and trace the villains, if I can,
To their dens: meanwhile take care of your sister:
And pray, till my return, be moderate.

Digitized by Google

DON H. How! moderation in this case?—what, ho!
Geraldo, Pedro! Ah, ye cursed rogues!

Enter Servants with torches.

Durst ye not show your heads till they were gone?
Geraldo, light me in, whilst Pedro looks
To his hurt companion. Ah, Porcia, Porcia!
[*Exeunt* DON HENRIQUE *and* GERALDO: PEDRO *carries out* SILVIO *fainting with his hurts.*

Scene changes to the city of Seville. Enter DON OCTAVIO, PORCIA, DON ANTONIO, *and a little after* DIEGO, *and after them* DON CARLOS.

DIEGO. Sure, that's Antonio bringing up the rear?
Sir, th' are but just before; my master bears her
[*Looking back to* DON CARLOS.
Most gallantly away: lose not sight of me.
DON C. This rogue takes me for one of his own crew;
He will by his mistake help me to harbour 'em.
[*Exeunt.*

CAMILLA *and* FLORA *appear in the balcony. Scene changes to* DON HENRIQUE'S *house.*

CAM. Was there ever such a disaster, Flora?
Sure, th' are all dead, so great's the silence.
Porcia! Porcia! Nobody answers.
FLO. Madam, let us go down into the garden.
CAM. Excuse me; that were to involve myself
In this unlucky scandal. 'Tis possible,
Affrighted with the scuffle, she's return'd

Digitized by Google

Into her quarter by the other door;
Let's away thither. [*They go down upon the stage.*

FLO. O madam! I see a light, and Don Henrique coming this way with his sword drawn; what shall we do?

CAM. Peace; let us hide ourselves behind the door [*They go behind the door.*
Till we discover his intentions.

Enter DON HENRIQUE *and* GERALDO *with a torch, and* PEDRO *with a light:* DON HENRIQUE *and* GERALDO, *their swords drawn.*

PED. Sir, I have search'd all the rooms of the house,
And cannot find her.

DON H. Base, infamous woman! maybe, she's fled
To the quarter order'd for Antonio.

PED. That door is lock'd, and's servant has the key.

DON H. Ah, this cursed vagabond! thus to rob [*He stamps.*
A brother of the fruits of all his care,
And cast this stain on th' honour of our house!
But if ever I get the fugitive
Within my reach, I'll sacrifice her blood
To the offended spirits of my ancestors.

FLO. Madam, d' you hear?

CAM. Yes, and tremble, Flora.

DON H. Call for her woman.

PED. Flora! Flora!

Enter FLORA.

FLO. My good angel guard me! What's your pleasure, sir?

Digitized by Google

DON H. Where's your mistress, hussy?
FLO. She told me, sir, about half an hour since,
She would go down into the garden. [*Exit* FLORA.
DON H. My shame is certain. Ah! the sad condition
Of us men of honour! how unequally
Our crosses and our comforts mingled are!
Our orphan sisters are no sooner grown
Above the follies of their childish age
(During which season custom does exact
Our watchful caution over all their actions),
But they are grafted on some stranger stock,
Where they do change both their abodes and names
Without the least reflection on their kindness,
Who pain'd themselves to cultivate their youth;
Or else remain to exercise our fears.
O unjust heavens! why suffer you that they,
Who to our joys of life such bubbles are,
Should add such weight unto our griefs and care?
Ah, Porcia, Porcia!

Enter DON CARLOS.

DON C. Don Henrique, if I am not much mistaken,
I have in this short time made a great progress
Towards your redress: I come from harbouring
The villains who have done you this affront.
CAM. [*behind.*] It imports to be attentive now.
DON H. O, you revive me! May I but once enjoy
The pleasure of my revenge, though the next
Moment were the last period of my life,
I should depart contented. Are the villains
Within our reach?

Digitized by Google

DON C. Be patient, sir, and I'll inform you fully.
You were no sooner up, but I pursu'd
Your flying enemies, hoping the night,
Grown somewhat lighter, might help me to discover
The place of their retreat. One of their party
Who was behind the rest, mistaking me
For one of his camerades, bad me come on,
Saying his master was but just before;
That he had borne his mistress bravely off,
And put her champion brother out of combat.
DON H. Insolent rascal! [*He stamps.*
DON C. We had not pass'd above a street or two,
Before he stopp'd, and at the second house
Beyond the church, in Saint Iago's Street,
He enter'd and desired me to follow him.
I making a stand, he grew suspicious,
And from my silence guessing his mistake,
He slipp'd into the house, and lock'd the door.
When I had well observ'd the street and house,
I came with speed to give you this account.
FLO. O madam, this is Don Octavio's house:
Without all doubt, they've carri'd Porcia thither.
[*To* CAMILLA *behind the door.*
CAM. Peace, Flora, and listen to the sequel.
DON H. Come, cousin, we lose time—Heigh! who waits there?
I will besiege the house; if they refuse
To render, I'll reduce that theatre
Of my shame to ashes, and make their fort
Both theirs and its own sepulchre. There are
Such charms in vengeance, that I do not wonder
It is reserv'd for him who form'd the thunder.
DON C. Have patience, cousin, and consult your reason;

Digitized by Google

'Twill soon convince you how unpracticable
And vain your proposition is t' attempt,
At this time of night, a house so guarded
In a well-govern'd city: that would prove
Very like thunder, which the cloud destroys,
Wherein 'twas form'd, producing only noise.
What can the issue be, but to alarm
The town, expose your person and your fortune
To th' rigour of the law, publish your shame,
And frustrate your revenge for ever?

DON H. What! would you have me tarry till these villains,
Who have invaded my house, affronted person, murder'd my servant, and robb'd of a sister, may evade my vengeance?
[*Spoken hastily.*

DON C. No, fear not that; let me alone to find
A certain way to hinder their escape.
I'll instantly to the corregidor,
And beg the assistance of his authority
To secure these criminals for the present,
That afterwards the law may punish them.

DON H. A fine proposal! Why, cousin, can you think
That I'll submit a personal injury
To th' tame decision of the formal law?
And, having been affronted by the sword,
To pray the aid of the long robe, and take
An advocate for second? Reliev'd by law!

DON C. Since we all parties are in making laws,
We must not judges be in our own cause:
We hold it infamous to break our words,
Yet cancel the great charter with our swords.

DON H. They by their insolence the laws invade.

DON C. But you by your revenge the laws degrade.

Digitized by Google

DON H. Honour obliges me to take revenge.
DON C. Honour is justice, rightly understood:
Your idol honour's only heat of blood.
DON H. Honour's opinion, which rules all the world.
DON C. Opinion, Henrique, only governs fools;
Reason the wise and truly valiant rules.
DON H. Reason's opinion; for every one
Stamps reason on his own opinion.
DON C. Then, by your argument, when people join
In making laws, because they all opine,
Laws are reasonable, and bind us all——
DON H. Curse on your sophistry, to treat a friend
With figures, that's raging in a fever!
You may as well pretend to teach a man
To sing his part, that's stretch'd upon a rack.
No, sir, I'll sooner lose this irksome life,
Than e'er consent to publish my disgrace
Before I have reveng'd it—to assist
At the funeral of my own honour! [*He stamps.*
DON C. What a wild creature is a choleric man!
[*Aside.*
'Tis far from my intent; all my design
Is only how we may conceal your shame,
Till we have got these villains in our power;
Which can be brought about by no such means,
As by demanding justice against those
Who did assault your person, and have wounded
Your servant—a very plausible pretence!
Will this content you? Trust my conduct, cousin:
Is not my interest the same with yours?
DON H. Well, since it must be so, I pray, make haste.
DON C. Doubt not my diligence; by this I'll prove
Friendship has fire and wings, as well as love.

Digitized by Google

DON H. If you could fly, you'd move with too much leisure;
Ah, tedious minutes, which revenge does measure!
[*Exit* CARLOS.
FLO. Madam, y' have heard their mischievous design?
CAM. Yes, Flora, out of question Porcia's there,
And, if they find her, she is lost for e'er.
FLO. I'll try to hinder it, though I were certain
To perish in th' attempt. I'm confident
The house at present is in such confusion,
I may run thither without being miss'd.
CAM. 'Tis well thought on; in the interim, I'll retire
To Porcia's chamber.
[*Exeunt from behind the door.*

Enter GERALDO.

GER. Sir, Don Antonio is just arriv'd.
DON H. Ha! what's that you say, sirrah?
GER. That Don Antonio, sir, your brother-in-law,
Is without, walking i' th' hall, and bad me
Give you notice of it. Shall he come in?
DON H. Antonio arrived! O heavens, this circumstance
Was only wanting to complete my shame!
When he desires to see his wife, shall I
Myself inform a person of his quality
That she is run away? Where shall I find
A heart, a tongue, a voice: or breath, or face,
To utter this unparallel'd disgrace?
[*Spoken hastily.*
O this fantastic sense of honour! I

Digitized by Google

At my own tribunal stand assoil'd,[1]
Yet, fearing others' censure, am embroil'd.
GER. What is your pleasure, sir? 'tis possible
That Don Antonio may think it long.
DON. H. Wait on him in, but at the same time tell him
You cannot find me. I will leave my house
And the discovery of my shame to fate,
And any censure rather undergo
Than be the reporter of my own disgrace;
Till first I have my honour's ransom paid
In the vile blood of this perfidious maid.
[*Exit* HENRIQUE.

Enter DON ANTONIO *and* ERNESTO.

DON A. My friend and his fair mistress safely lodg'd,
And free from their adventure, 'tis now fit
To mind my own engagement. But, Ernesto,
What can the meaning be of this rude usage,
In suffering me to stay without thus long
Upon my first arrival? Come, let's go on
Into the other rooms.
ERN. I swear, sir, I'm amazed at this great change.
'Tis not above two hours since I found here
A numerous and well-order'd family,
In all appearance. Now I see the pages
Bolt out of the doors, then start back again

---

[1] Absolved, discharged. Fr. *absoudre*. Lat. *absolvere*.—*Junius*.

See likewise note to Lodge's "Wounds of Civil War" [vii. 169].—*Collier*.

"Then had the Monkes aucthoritie to preache, baptyse, and assoyle from synne, which they never had afore."—Bale's "Acts of English Votaries," fol. 35, edit. 1550.

See also "World of Wonders," 1607, part i. p. 32.—*Gilchrist*.

Digitized by Google

Into their holes, like rabbits in a warren!
The maids lie peeping at the garret-windows,
Like th' upper tier of ordnance in a ship;
All looks disorder'd now; nor can I guess
What may have caus'd so great an alteration.
But there I see the servant you sent in.

Enter GERALDO.

DON A. Friend, where's your master?
GER. I cannot tell, sir.
DON A. Where is his sister?
GER. In truth, I know not, sir; we men-servants
Have little to do in the ladies' quarters.
[*Exit* GERALDO.
DON A. This looks but oddly. Are you sure, Ernesto,
Y' have not misguided me to a wrong house?
ERN. If you are sure, sir, that we are awake,
Then I am certain this is the same house,
Wherein this afternoon I saw and spoke with
Don Henrique and your bride: by the same token,
There was a lady with her in a veil,
And this very room is the antechamber
To her apartment.
DON A. I should be finely serv'd if, after all
This negotiation and a tedious journey,
My pains and patience should be cast away
On some such wither'd sybil for a wife,
As her own brother is asham'd to show me.
ERN. You'll soon be freed from that fear, sir.
[ERNESTO *goes toward the door.*
DON A. How so?
ERN. Because I see her in the inner room,
Lying along upon her couch, and reading.
Her face is turn'd the other way; but yet
Her shape and clothes assure me 'tis the same.
DON A. Art certain that 'tis she?

Digitized by Google

ERN. There are not many like her.
DON A. If thou be'st sure 'tis she, I'll venture in
Without her brother's presence t' introduce me.
ERN. She's coming this way, sir.

Enter CAMILLA *reading.*

CAM. Y' have reason, Dido, and 'tis well remark'd—
[*She shuts her book; and after a little pause—*
The woman who suffers herself to love
Ought likewise to prepare herself to suffer.
There was great power in your charms, Æneas,
T' enthral a lady's heart at first approach,
And make such early and such deep impressions,
That nothing but her death could e'er deface.
Alas, poor Dido!—
DON A. O heavens! what's that I see?—or do I dream?
[ANTONIO, *seeing her, starts, then stands as if amazed.*
Sure, I am asleep, and 'tis a vision
Of her who's always present to my thoughts;
Who (fearing my revolt) does now appear
To prove and to confirm my constancy.
When first I saw that miracle, she seem'd
An apparition; here it must be one.
What fit of frenzy's this?
ERN. Sir, 'tis Porcia:
A lovely, living woman, and your bride.
DON A. The blessing is too mighty for my faith.
ERN. Faith! Ne'er trouble your faith in this occasion;
Approach her boldly, sir, and trust your sense.
DON A. As when we dream of some transporting pleasure,
And (finding that we dream) we fear to wake,

Digitized by Google

Lest sense should rob us of our fancy's treasure,
And our delightful vision from us take,
Bless'd apparition, so it fares with me.
That very angel now once more appears,
To whose divinity long since I rais'd
An altar in my heart, where I have offer'd
The constant sacrifice of sighs and vows.
My eyes are open, yet I dare not trust 'em!
Bliss above faith must pass for an illusion.
If such it be, O, let me sleep for ever,
Happily deceiv'd! But, celestial maid,
If this thy glorious presence real be,
O, let one word of pity raise my soul
From visionary bliss, and make me die
With real joy instead of ecstasy.
Speak, speak, my destiny; for the same breath
May warm my heart, or cool it into death.

ERN. 'Slife! he's in one of his old fits again—
Why, what d' you mean, sir? 'tis Porcia herself.

CAM. I am that maid, who to your virtue owes
Her honour then and her disquiet since;
Yet in my pain I cannot but be pleas'd
To find a passion, censur'd in our sex,
Justifi'd by so great an obligation.
'Tis true I blush, yet I must own the fire,
To which both love and gratitude conspire.

DON A. Incomparable creature! can it be
That, having suffer'd all which mighty love
Did e'er inflict, I now should be repaid
With as full joys as love could ever give?
Fortune, to make my happiness complete,
Has join'd her power, and made me find a bride
In a lost mistress: but with this allay—
Of leaving me no means my faith to prove,
Since chance anticipates the pains of love.

CAM. The servant's error has misled the master,
He takes me too for Porcia. Bless'd mistake!

Digitized by Google

Assist me now, artful dissimulation. [*Aside.*
But how can that consist with so much passion?
'Tis possible, the sense of my distress'd
Condition might dispose a noble heart
To take impressions then, which afterwards
Time and your second thoughts may have defac'd;
But can a constant passion be produc'd
From those ideas pity introduc'd?
Let your tongue speak your heart; for, should y' abuse me,
I shall in time discover the deceit:
You may paint fire, Antonio, but not heat.

DON A. Madam!

CAM. Hold. Be not too scrupulous, Antonio;
Let me believe it, though it be not true;
For the chief happiness poor maids receive
Is when themselves they happily deceive.

DON A. If, since those conquering eyes I first beheld,
You have not reign'd unrivall'd in my heart,
May you despise me now you are my own;
Which is to me all curses summ'd in one.
But may your servant, madam, take the boldness
To ask if you have ever thought of him?

CAM. A love, so founded in a grateful heart,
Has need of no remembrancer, Antonio;
You know yourself too well: those of your trade
Have skill to hold as well as to invade.

DON A. Fortune has lifted me to such a height
Of happiness, that it may turn my brain
When I look down upon the world.
What have I now to wish but moderation
To temper and to fix my joys?

CAM. I yield as little t' you, noble Antonio,
In happiness as affection; but still
Porcia must do as may become your bride,
And sister to Don Henrique, in whose absence

Digitized by Google

A longer conference must be excused:
Therefore I take the freedom to withdraw.
Should I have stay'd until Don Henrique came,
His presence would have marr'd my whole design.
[*Aside.* *Exit* CAMILLA.

DON A. Where beauty, virtue, and discretion join,
'Tis heaven, methinks, to find that treasure mine!

Enter DON HENRIQUE.

DON H. Sure, Don Antonio, having long ere this
Found out th' infamous flight of my vile sister,
Will be retir'd to meditate revenge
Upon us both. Ah, curse! he is there still.
[*He sees him.*
I'll slip away. But it is now too late;
He has perceiv'd me.

DON A. How, Don Henrique! avoid your friend that's come
So long a journey t' embrace you, and cast
Himself at the feet of your fair sister?

DON H. Noble Antonio, you may well imagine
The trouble I am in, that you should find
My house in such disorder, so unfit
To receive th' honour of so brave a guest.

DON A. 'Tis true, Don Henrique, I am much surpris'd
With what I find: I little did expect
Your sister Porcia should have been——

DON H. O heavens! I'm lost, he has discover'd all.
[*Aside.*
'Tis not, Antonio, in a brother's power
To make a sister of a better paste
Than heav'n has made her.

Digitized by Google

DON A. In your case 'specially; for without doubt
Heaven never made a more accomplish'd creature.
DON H. What means the man? [*Aside.*
DON A. I come just now from entertaining her,
Whose wit and beauty so excel all those
Of her fair sex whom I have ever known,
That my description of her would appear
Rather detraction than a just report
Of her perfections.
DON H. Certainly he mocks me: he never could
Have chosen a worse sufferer of scorn;
But I will yet contain myself awhile,
To see how far he'll drive it. [*Aside.*] Say you, sir,
That you have seen and entertain'd my sister?
DON A. Yes, Don Henrique; and with such full contentment,
So rais'd above expression, that I think
The pains and care of all my former life
Rewarded with excess in the delight
Of those few minutes of her conversation.
'Tis true that satisfaction was abridg'd
By her well-weigh'd severity to give me
A greater pleasure in the contemplation
Of her discreet observance of the rules
Of decency, not suffering me, though now
Her husband, any longer to enjoy
So great a happiness, you not being by.
DON H. I am confounded; but I must dissemble
My astonishment till I can unfold
The mystery. [*Aside.*] She might have spared that caution:
But I suppose you'll easily forgive
An error on the better side.

Digitized by Google

DON A. Sir, I have seen so much of her perfection
In that short visit, I shall sooner doubt
Our definitions in morality
Than once suppose her capable of error.

DON H. This exposition makes it more obscure.
I must get him away. [*Aside.*] Sir, is't not time
To wait on you to your chamber? It's late,
And I believe [that] you have need of rest.

DON A. I should accept your offer, sir, with thanks,
If I were not oblig'd, as late as 'tis,
To see a friend before I go to bed.

DON H. I'll bear you company, if you'll give me leave.

DON A. I humbly thank you, sir, but can't consent
To give you so much trouble; I'll return
Within an hour at farthest.

DON H. Whene'er you please; y' are wholly master here.

DON A. I never saw a man so discompos'd.
Whate'er the matter is. [*Aside.*
Ernesto, I must make a step to see
A friend near-hand; bid Sancho follow me,
And stay you in my chamber till I come.
[*Exeunt* ANTONIO *and* ERNESTO.

DON H. Your servant, sir. [DON HENRIQUE *waits on him to the door.*] This sudden sally hence
At this time of the night, newly arriv'd
From a long journey, and not to suffer me
To wait upon him, does embroil me more.
But now I will not long be in suspense;
I'll to my sister's chamber.

Enter DON CARLOS, *as* DON HENRIQUE *is going into* PORCIA'S *chamber.*

DON C. Ho! Don Henrique! come away, all's prepar'd.

Digitized by Google

Our kinsman the corregidor is ready
With a strong band of serjeants, and stays for you.
DON H. Speak softly, Don Antonio is arriv'd,
And some of his may overhear us.
DON C. That's very unlucky; but does he know
Your sister's missing?
DON H. I think not yet.
DON C. Come, let's away; we have no time to lose.
DON H. Pray, stay awhile. I labour with a doubt
Will burst me, if not clear'd before I go.
DON C. What, cousin, will you lose an opportunity
Never to be recover'd? Are you mad?
Will you permit the villains to escape,
And laugh at us for ever? Come away.
[*He pulls him.*
DON H. Well, I must go, and let him make it out;
The worst estate of human life is doubt. [*Exeunt.*

ACT IV.

SCENE.—DON OCTAVIO'S *house.*

Enter DON OCTAVIO *angrily, pushing* DIEGO, *and* PORCIA *following.*

DON O. Villain, thou hast undone us! cursed villain!
Where was thy soul? had fear quite banish'd it,
And left thee not one grain of common sense?
POR. Was there ever so fatal an accident?
DON. O. Why, traitor, didst thou not let me know it
As soon as we were come into the house?

Digitized by Google

DIEGO. What would y' have done, if you had known it then?

DON O. I would have sallied out and kill'd the rogue,
In whose pow'r thou hast put it to destroy us.
Can it be doubted but that long ere this
He has acquainted Henrique where we are,
From whose black rage we must immediately
Expect t' encounter all the worst extremes
Of malice, seconded by seeming justice?
For the unfortunate are still i' th' wrong.
Curse on all cowards! better far be serv'd
By fools and knaves: they make less dangerous faults.

DIEGO. Am I in fault because I'm not a cat?
How could I tell i' th' dark whether that rascal
Were a knight-errant or a recreant knight?
I thought him one of us, and true to love.
Were it not for such accidents as these,
That mock man's forecast, sure, the Destinies
Had ne'er been plac'd amongst the deities.

DON O. Peace, cowardly slave! having thus play'd the rogue,
Are you grown sententious? Did I not fear
To stain my sword with such base blood, I'd let
Thy soul out with it at a thousand wounds.

DIEGO. Why, then, a thousand thanks to my base blood
For saving my good flesh. [*Aside.*

DON O. Pardon, my dearest mistress, this excess
Of passion in your presence.

POR. What shall we do, Octavio? if we stay here,
We are undone for ever: my brother
Will be instantly upon us. Alas!
My own life I value not, Octavio,
When yours, my better life, such hazard runs;

Digitized by Google

But, O my honour! O my innocence!
Expos'd to scandal: there's my deepest sense.
DON O. Though the complexion of your brother's malice
Resemble hell, it is not black enough
To cast a stain upon your virgin innocence.
Sure, two such diff'rent branches ne'er did spring
From the same stock. To me't seems very strange,
Our middle natures, form'd of flesh and blood,
Should have such depths of ill, such heights of good,
An angel sister and a devil brother!
POR. He's my brother, and I know no defence
For injur'd innocence but innocence.
Fly, fly, Octavio! leave me to my fate.
DON O. Your kindness, generous maid, confutes itself.
To save my life, you counsel me to fly,
Which is at once to bid me live and die.
POR. What then, for heaven's sake, d' you resolve to do?
DON O. I must resolve, and suddenly, but what,
I swear, I know not: there have been such turns
In my misfortunes, they have made me giddy.
POR. You must determine; time wastes, Octavio.
DON O. Madam, if I should lead you through the streets,
And chance to meet the officers of justice,
I not daring to avow my person,
For that unlucky accident you know of,
You might, I fear, by that means be in danger:
We must not venture't. Run, rascal, and fetch
A chair immediately.
DIEGO. A pretty errand at this time o' th' night!
These chairmen are exceedingly well-natur'd;
Th' are likely to obey a servant's orders
After nine of [the] clock! [*Exit* DIEGO.
DON O. Ye pow'rs above, why do ye lay so great

Digitized by Google

A weight on human nature, and bestow
Such an unequal force to bear our loads?
After a long pursuit, through all those stories,
Which hell-bred malice or the pow'r of fate
Could ever raise t' oppress a noble love,
To be at length possess'd of a rich mine,
Where nature seem'd to have lodged all her treasure,
And in an instant have it ravish'd from me,
Is too rude a trial for my patience
To sustain: I cannot bear it.
POR. My sense of this misfortune equals yours;
But yet I must conjure you to submit
To the decrees of those who rule above:
Such resignation may incline their justice
Th' impending mischief to divert; besides,
In human things there's such vicissitude,
Where hope should end we hardly can conclude.
DON O. Weak hope the parent is of anxious care,
And more tormenting far than fix'd despair:
This makes us turn to new expedients,
That languish 'twixt desire and diffidence.
POR. Fortune will blush for shame when she shall find
Her best-aim'd darts can never touch your mind.
DON O. Ah, Porcia! though my mind be far above
The reach of fate, 'tis level unto love.
Urge it no more: I'll die a thousand deaths,
Ere I'll consent to part with you. [*Strikes his breast.*
POR. I shall be always yours; for though we're forc'd
To separate, yet we are not divorc'd.
DON O. Whilst our souls act by organs of the sense,
'Twixt death and parting there's no difference.

Digitized by Google

POR. Consult your reason, then you will comply,
Making a virtue of necessity.
DON O. Ah, lovely maid! 'twas not allowed to Jove
To hold at once his reason and his love.

Enter DIEGO.

DIEGO. The chair is come, sir, just as I expected.
DON O. Where is it?
DIEGO. Even where it was: they are deeply engag'd
A las Pintas,[1] and will not leave their game,
They swear, for all the dons in Seville.
DON O. A curse upon these rogues! I'll make 'em come,
Or make their hearts ache.
[DON OCTAVIO *runs out.*
DIEGO. Madam, though I was never yet unkind
To my own person, I am so much troubled
At the disquiet my mistake has brought you,
That, could I do't conveniently, i' faith,
I would even cudgel myself.
POR. Away, buffoon! is this a time for fooling?

Enter DON ANTONIO *and* SANCHO.

DON A. Where is my noble friend Octavio?
DIEGO. Did you not meet him at the door, sir?
DON A. No.

---

[1] At cards. From *pinta*, a spot or mark.—*Sp.*
Although *Pintas* mean *cards* generally, yet the word is applied to a particular game in Spain, which we call *Basset*. —*Collier.*

Digitized by Google

DIEGO. He went out, sir, just as you came in.
DON A. Madam, I might have gone to bed, but not [*Addresses himself to* PORCIA.
To rest, without returning to inquire
Of yours and of my noble friend's condition,
And once more to offer you my service.
POR. I take the boldness, in Octavio's absence,
To return his with my most humble thanks,
For your late generous assistance of us,
And for this new addition to our debt.
DON A. Though I have not th' honour to be known t' you,
The service of your sex in their distresses
Is the first vow of those of our profession;
And my constant friendship for Octavio
Is of so old a date, that all occasions,
By which I may express the fervour of it,
Are most welcome to me.

Enter FLORA *in great haste*

FLO. O madam, I am out of breath with running.
POR. What accident, Flora, brings you hither?
FLO. A sad one, madam, and requiring haste,
To give you timely notice on't. Don Carlos,
Assisted by the light o' th' rising moon,
And by a mistake of some of your train,
Has trac'd you to this house, and in my hearing
Inform'd your brother of the place and manner
Of your retreat: who is now coming hither
Accompanied with the corregidor,
To seize on whomsoever shall be found
Within these walls, upon pretence of murder.
POR. O cruel accident!
FLO. Madam, make haste: get out of the back-door,
Or you will certainly be met with.

Digitized by Google

POR. How vile a creature am I now become!
For, though in my own innocence secure,
To the censorious world who, like false glasses,
Mingling their own irregular figures,
Misreflect the object, I shall appear
Some sinful woman, sold to infamy.
DON A. Your own clear mind's the glass, which to yourself
Reflects yourself; and, trust me, madam,
W' are only happy then, when all our joys
Flow from ourselves, not from the people's voice.
FLO. Madam, they'll instantly be here.
POR. O, that Octavio should just now be absent!
But to expect till he return were madness.
DON A. Y' have reason, madam; and, if you dare trust
Your person to the conduct of a stranger,
Upon my honour, lady, I'll secure you,
Or perish in th' attempt.
POR. Generous sir, how shall a wretched maid,
Abandon'd by her fate to the pursuit
Of an inhuman brother, e'er be able
Either to merit or requite your favours?
DON A. I am th' oblig'd, if rightly understood,
Being o'erpaid by th' joy of doing good.
POR. Sir, I resign myself to your protection
With equal gratitude and confidence.
DON A. Come, madam, we must lose no time—
Diego, find out your master presently,
And tell him that, the danger not allowing
Our stay till his return, I shall convey
His mistress safely to a nunnery.
POR. And, Flora, stay you here to bring me word
What he resolves to do in this our desperate
Condition. [*Exit* DIEGO.
FLO. Madam, I shall.

Digitized by Google

DON A. But stay—I swear I'd like to have committed [*Going out, returns.*
A foul mistake: the monastery gates
Will not be open'd at this time o' th' night
Without a strict inquiry into the cause;
Besides, 'tis possible that, once lodg'd there,
She may be out of my friend's pow'r or mine
Ever to get her thence, if it be known.
It must not be. I have thought better on't.
[*He pauses, and thinks.*
I will convey you to my brother-in-law's,
A person of such quality and honour,
As may protect and serve you with his credit:
And there my wife may have the happiness
T' accompany you, and pay the offices,
Due to your virtue and distress'd condition:
And, going to a house that's so much mine,
Make account, madam, 'tis to your own home.
Sancho, stay you here to attend Octavio,
[*Turning to* SANCHO.
And guide him the next way to my apartment:
Here is the key, I shall have little use on't,
Having Ernesto waiting for me there.
One word more, Sancho: let Octavio know
'Tis my advice, that he come in a chair.
He by that means may possibly escape
Examination, if he should be met with.

POR. Flora, I pray, do you continue here,
And if by any accident Octavio
Should be hinder'd from coming after us,
Observe his motions well, and where he fixes;
Then return home, and I shall find some way
Of sending to you to inform myself.

FLO. I shall not fail t' observe your orders, madam.

DON A. Madam, I am ready to attend you.

Digitized by Google

POR. Ah, cruel brother! ah, my dear Octavio!
How am I tortur'd betwixt love and hate!
DON A. W' had better suffer than deserve our fate. [*Exit* DON ANTONIO *and* PORCIA.
SAN. 'Tis no small compliment my master makes
Your lady and her gallant, at this time
O' th' night to quit his brother-in-law's, and leave
So fair a bride as Porcia all alone,
FLO. What, is his mistress's name Porcia too?
SAN. Yes; and if she has as fair a handmaid
As yourself, I shall soon forget my damsels
In the Low Countries.
FLO. If your Low-Country damsels resemble us,
You would not be put to't to forget first.
But I believe that you are safe enough:
I have not heard such praises of their wit,
But that we may suppose they have good memories.

Enter DIEGO.

DIEGO. Is not my master yet return'd?
FLO. No.
DIEGO. Well, now have we an honourable cause
To wear the beadle's livery: faith, Flora,
If your tender sex had not been privileg'd
From this harsh discipline, how prettily
Would the beadle's crimson lace show upon
Your white back!
FLO. 'Twon't do so well as on a darker ground:
'Twill suit much better with your tawny hide.
SAN. I pray, camerade, is it the mode in Seville
To be whipp'd for company?
DIEGO. O sir, a well-bred soldier will ne'er refuse

Digitized by Google

Such a civility to an old friend;
This is a new way of being a second,
To show your passive courage.
SAN. We soldiers do not use to show our backs.
DIEGO. Not to your enemies; but, sir, the beadle
Will prove your friend; for, your blood being heated
With riding post, the breathing of a vein
Is very requisite.
SAN. Would t' heaven that I were i' the camp again:
There we are never stripp'd till we are dead.

Enter DON OCTAVIO, *and the Chairmen appear at the door.*

DON O. Be sure you stir not thence, till I return. [*To the Chairmen.*
Sirrah, where's Porcia?
DIEGO. She's fled away i' th' dark with a young man
Of your acquaintance.
DON O. Rascal, leave your fooling.
DIEGO. There's none i' th' case, sir: 'tis the wisest thing
She ever did; had she stay'd your return,
She would have fallen into those very clutches
In which you will immediately be gripp'd,
Unless you make more haste. Flora is come
With all the speed she could, to let you know
Th' are coming with the justice, to lay hold
Of all within this house; pray be quick, sir,
And save yourself. She's safe in a nunnery,
Conducted thither by Antonio.
DON O. Peace, screech-owl! fire consume that tongue of thine!

Digitized by Google

What say'st thou, villain! in a nunnery?
Porcia in a nunnery? O heavens! nothing
But this was wanting to make me desperate.
What hope's there left ever to get her thence,
After such accidents as these made public?
Ah, Flora, is it true that my dear Porcia
Is gone into a nunnery?

FLO. Once, sir, 'twas so resolv'd, and Diego sent
To give you notice on't; but afterwards,
He being gone, they chang'd their resolutions.
There's one can tell you more. [*Pointing to* SANCHO.

SAN. My master bad me stay, to let you know
He has convey'd her to his own apartment
In his brother-in-law's house, a person
So eminent in quality and credit,
That the imagining him in her and your
Protection, sir, may much avail ye both:
Besides, she'll have the satisfaction there
Of being treated by my master's bride.
There he'll expect you, and advises you
To come in a chair, to avoid questioning,
In case of any encounter.

DON O. I'll take his counsel: he's a generous friend.
Come, chairmen, away; pray, friend, do you guide us. [*To* SANCHO.

DIEGO. Up with your burden, beasts, and fall forthwith
To your half-trot.

[*Exeunt. The chair is carried over the stage;* DIEGO, SANCHO, *and* FLORA *follow.*

A noise within. Follow, follow, follow! *Enter* DON CARLOS, *the* CORREGIDOR, *and* SERGEANTS, *pursuing* SANCHO, FLORA, *and* DIEGO.

DIEGO. This is one of Don Cupid's pretty jests:

Digitized by Google

W' are struck upon a shelf before we could
Put out to sea.

DON C. You find, sir, my conjecture's not ill-grounded. [*To the* CORREGIDOR.

COR. What are you, sirrah?

DIEGO. A living creature, very like a man:
Only I want a heart.

COR. Y' are pleasant, sir; pray heaven your mirth continue.
Who is that woman with the veil?

DIEGO. Let her answer for herself, sh' has a tongue;
Set it but once agoing, and she'll tell
All that she knows, and more.

COR. Make her uncover her face.

[*One of the* SERGEANTS *goes to lift up her veil.*

DON C. Hold, friend. Cousin, if it should be Porcia, [*Turning to the* CORREGIDOR.
It were not fit to expose her here.

COR. 'Tis very well consider'd. Go you to her.
And speak to her in private.

[DON CARLOS *goes towards* FLORA.

FLO. 'Tis I, sir, Flora who, being commanded
By my lady——

DON C. Speak softly, prythee, Flora, 'tis enough;
I understand the rest, and pity her:
Bid her sit still i' th' chair, I'll do my best
To save her from dishonour.

FLO. He thinks 'tis Porcia there; a good mistake;
It may secure Octavio from the hands
Of this rude rabble. [*Aside.*
They take you for my mistress, sir; sit still,
[*To* DON OCTAVIO *in the chair.*
I'll follow the chair, and watch all occasions
To further your escape.

Digitized by Google

DON C. We have found our wand'ring nymph, sir.

COR. Was it Porcia?

DON C. No, sir, 'twas her waiting-woman, Flora, following the chair, wherein they were conveying her lady to some other place.

COR. We arriv'd luckily: had we but stay'd a moment longer, they had all been fled.

SER. Will you have us see, sir, who's i' th' chair?

COR. Forbear, fellow!
Her own folly is punishment enough
[*To* DON CARLOS.
T' a woman of her quality, without
Our adding that of public shame.

DON C. 'Twas happily thought on, when you oblig'd
Don Henrique to expect us at your house;
For had he come and found his sister here,
'T had been impossible to have restrain'd
His passion from some great extravagance.

COR. I could not think it fit to let him come;
For one of such a spirit would ne'er brook
The sight of these had done him these affronts
And's better that a business of this nature,
Especially 'twixt persons of such quality,
Should be compos'd, if it were possible,
By th' mediation of some chosen friends,
Than brought t' a public trial of the law;
Or, which is worse, some barbarous revenge.

DON C. This fellow, if I am not much[1] mistaken, [*Looking upon* DIEGO.
Is Don Octavio's man.

COR. Who do you belong to, friend?

DIEGO. To nobody, sir.

---

[1] *Much* was omitted by previous editors.—*Collier.*

Digitized by Google

COR. Do not you serve?
DIEGO. Yes, sir; but my master *is* not himself.
COR. Take his sword from him, sergeant.
[*The* SERGEANT *goes to take away his sword.*
DIEGO. Diego, disarm'd by any other hand
Than by his own? Know, friend, it is a weapon
Of such dire execution, that I dare not
Give it up but to the hands of justice.
[*The* CORREGIDOR *receives the sword, and gives it to the hands of his* SERGEANTS.
Pray call for't, sir, as soon as you come home,
And hang't up in your hall, then underwrite,
This is bold Diego's sword. O, may it be
Ever from rust, as 'tis from slaughter, free!
COR. Thou art a fellow of a pleasant humour.
DIEGO. Faith, sir, I never pain myself for love,
Or fame, or riches; nor do I pretend
To that great subtlety of sense, to feel
Before I'm hurt; and for the most part
I keep myself out of harm's way.
DON C. The definition of a philosopher!
COR. Come, leave your fooling, sirrah. Where's your master?
DIEGO. The only way to leave my fooling, sir,
Is to leave my master; for, without doubt,
Whoever has but the least grain of wit
Would never serve a lover militant:
He had better wait upon a mountebank,
And be run through the body twice a week
To recommend his balsam.
COR. This fellow is an original.
DIEGO. But of so ill a hand, I am not worth
The hanging up, sir, in my master's room,
Amongst the worst of your collection.

Digitized by Google

Enter SERGEANTS, *with two Footmen and two Maid-servants.*

SER. An't please your worship, we have search'd the house
From the cellars to the garrets, and these
Are all the living cattle we can find.
COR. Friends, take a special care of that same varlet
And the waiting-woman: we'll find a way
To make them tell the truth, I warrant you.
FLO. O Diego! must we be prisoners together?
DIEGO. Why, that's not so bad as the bands of wedlock, Flora.
COR. Come, let's away; but whither to convey her?
To her own house certainly were not fit,
Because of her incensed brother.
DON C. If you approve on't, cousin, I'll carry her
To mine; for since we seek (if possible)
To compose the business, she will be there
With much more decency and satisfaction,
Being in a kinsman's house, and where she'll have
My sister to accompany her.
COR. This business cannot be in better hands
Than yours; and there I'll leave it, and bid you
Good night.
DON C. Your servant, cousin; I wish you well at home.
You may be pleas'd to take your sergeants with you; [*As the* CORREGIDOR *goes out*—
There are without two servants of Don Henrique's,
They'll be enough to guard our prisoners,
And with less notice.
COR. Come, sergeants, follow me.

Digitized by Google

DON C. Well, ye may go about your business, friends. [*To the Footmen and Maids.*
I am glad we did not find Octavio here;
For, though I might justly pretend ignorance,
I would not have him suffer, though by chance.
[*Exeunt Servants.*

SAN. Well, I am now sufficiently instructed,
And, since there is no notice ta'en of me,
I'll fairly steal away, and give my master
An account of this misfortune. [*Exit* SANCHO.

DON C. Take up the chair, and follow me.
[*They take up the chair.*

DIEGO. A lovely dame they bear: 'tis true, she's something
Hairy about the chin, but that, they say, 's
A sign of strength. It tickles me to think
How like an ass he'll look when, op'ning the shell,
His worship finds within so rough a kernel.
[*Exeunt.*

Scene changes to DON ANTONIO'S *apartment in* DON HENRIQUE'S *house. Enter* DON ANTONIO *and* PORCIA.

DON A. Madam, banish your fear: you are now safe
Within these walls: be pleas'd to remain here
Till I shall bring some lights, and acquaint Porcia
With th' honour she'll receive in entertaining
So fair a guest.

POR. Who is't you say you will advertise, sir?

DON A. My wife Porcia. Have but a little patience,
And she'll attend you, madam. [*Exit* ANTONIO.

POR. Is her name Porcia too? Pray heaven send her

Digitized by Google

A better fate than her distress'd name's-sake.
But whither am I brought? What house is this?
What with my fears and darkness of the night,
I have lost all my measures: I can't guess
What quarter of the town it is 'w' are in;
For, to avoid the meeting with my brother
And his revengeful train, we have been forc'd
To make so many turnings, I am giddy.
But, thanks to providence, I have this comfort,
That now I'm in a place out of his reach.

Enter DON ANTONIO *with two lights, and sets them on the table.*

DON A. Madam, my wife will suddenly attend you;
Pardon, I pray, my absence for a moment.
[*Exit* ANTONIO.

POR. Now I begin to hope my sighs and tears
Have in some measure with just heaven prevail'd
At length to free me. But what do I see!
[*Looking about her, she starts.*
Am I awake, or is it an illusion?
Bless me, is not this my brother's house? this,
The quarter joining to my own apartment?
There is no room for doubt; and my misfortunes
Are always certain and without redress.
Unerring powers, arbiters of fate,
Teach me my crimes, and how to expiate
Your wrath! Alas! I know not what I have done
To merit this continued persecution!
But how came I here? brought by Octavio's friend,
One on whose virtue I did so rely,
That I my brother's malice durst defy.
Can he betray me? sure, I'm in a dream.
But if Octavio—O vile suspicion!

Digitized by Google

Octavio false?—No, truth and he are one.
'Tis possible his friend may guilty be,
But to what end so base a treachery?
And if perfidious, how could he be his friend?
I am confounded with the various forms
Of my misfortunes, heighten'd still the more,
The less I can their hidden cause explore.
This only's evident, that I must fly
Immediately this fatal place. But why
Struggle I thus with fate, since, go or stay,
Death seems alike to wait me every way.
[*She weeps.*

Enter DON ANTONIO *and* CAMILLA.

CAM. I wonder much what lady this can be
Antonio mentions. [*Aside.*
DON A. Pardon, I beseech you, madam, the liberty
Which I so early take; but I presume
Such is your generous tenderness to those
Whose spiteful fortunes, not their fault, has brought
Into distress, that you will think yourself
Oblig'd to him who gives you the occasion
T' exercise those virtues, which only visit
Others, but reside with you. This fair lady—
But she will best relate her own sad story,
Whilst I seek out Don Henrique, and engage him
T' employ his power and int'rest for her service.
[*Exit* DON ANTONIO. *Upon* CAMILLA'S *approach* PORCIA *takes the handkerchief from her eyes.*
CAM. Ha! what is that I see? Stay, stay, Antonio, [*She runs after* ANTONIO.
It is not fit Don Henrique—but he's gone,
And we are lost for ever!

Digitized by Google

POR. O heavens! is this Antonio, the same man,
To whom I am betroth'd? then my destruction
Is inevitable.
CAM. Are you an apparition, or are you
Porcia herself? speak; that when y' have said it thrice,
I may not yet believe you.
POR. You well may doubt even what you see, Camilla,
Since my disasters are so new and strange,
They sever truth from credibility.
CAM. How is it possible you should be here?
POR. I know not how: only of this I'm sure,
I have not long to expect the dismal end
Of my sad tragedy; since 'tis evident,
The person that hath led me to this place,
This fatal place, is the abus'd Antonio,
Who has conspir'd with my unnatural brother
To take away my wretched life, and chose
This scene as fittest for their cruelty.
And thus, strange fate! (through ignorance betray'd)
I have sought protection from the same party
Whom I have injur'd, and have made my husband
The only confidant of his own affront:
Who, to accomplish his too just revenge,
As well upon my family as person,
Gives me up to be murder'd by my brother;
So, whilst I'm branded as a faithless bride,
He'll be detested as a parricide.
CAM. Prodigious accident! but wert thou blind,
Not to know thine own house, unhappy Porcia?
POR. Alas! how could I, in so dark a night,
In such confusion, and so full of fear?
Besides, he brought me in by the back-way,
Through his own quarter, where was neither light,
Nor any creature of the family.

Digitized by Google

CAM. Although I cannot comprehend the steps
Of this your strange adventure, yet, dear cousin,
Your case, as I conceive, is not so desperate.
POR. We easily persuade ourselves to hope
The things we wish. But, cousin, my condition
Will not admit self-flattery, and what
Can you propose to temper my despair?
CAM. Don't you remember, how this afternoon
Antonio's man, finding me in your quarter
Without a veil, you having put on mine,
That he applied himself to me, and I,
By your command, assum'd your person?
POR. Yes, very well.
CAM. The master since has, by the man's mistake,
Been happily led into the same error:
I have not disabus'd him yet, in hopes
It might produce advantage to us both.
POR. O, he has spoken with my brother since,
Who (sure) has undeceiv'd him long e'er this.
No, without doubt, they, having found themselves
Affronted both, have both conspir'd my death.
CAM. How, cousin, can that be, if Don Antonio
Has engag'd himself in your protection,
And is Octavio's friend?
POR. Cousin, if you impartially reflect
On the affront which I have done Antonio,
You will not wonder much if he recede
From the scarce-trodden path of rigid honour
To meet with his revenge, and to that end
Proceeds thus cautelously, still pretending
He knows not me, that he may disavow,
Both to Octavio and to all the world,
Th' infamy of betraying a poor maid
To loss of life and honour.
CAM. Misfortunes make you rave: this vile suspicion

Digitized by Google

Is inconsistent with Antonio's fame.
You may as well believe that nature will
Reverse the order of the whole creation,
As that Antonio, a man whose soul
Is of so strong and perfect a complexion,
Should e'er descend to such a slavish sin.
[*Spoken with heat.*
And if we had the leisure, I could give you
Such reasons to convince you of your error,
That you would both acknowledge and repent it.

POR. Alas! I had forgot her near concernments
For Antonio. [*Aside.*] Pardon and pity me, Camilla;
My mind is so distracted by afflictions,
I know not what I should, or should not, fear.

CAM. I pity thee with all my heart. But, cousin,
If Antonio, not knowing you nor your
Relations, should chance to find your brother,
And tell him unawares all that has pass'd,
And that h' has brought the distress'd party hither,
He'll presently imagine it is you,
And then, I fear, 'twill be impossible
(Though he should interpose with all his power)
To stop the torrent, or divert his rage
From breaking in, and executing on us
That horrid parricide which, though too late,
It may be he himself would execrate.

POR. There's too much ground for what you fear, Camilla;
But if I could secure myself this night,
'Tis very possible that to-morrow
We might engage Antonio and your brother
To find out some expedient to relieve me.

CAM. Were you only in pain for your security
This night, I know an easy remedy
For that.

Digitized by Google

POR. Which way, my dearest?
CAM. Why, what does hinder us from making use
On this occasion of the secret door,
By which, you know, you have so often pass'd
Into your house upon more pleasing errands?
By this we shall obtain these benefits—
[A] safety from your brother's present fury,
And time to try if Carlos and Antonio
May be engag'd to mediate in this business;
And I have cause to think you will not find
Antonio so implacable as you
Imagine.
POR. I conceive you, cousin. Fool that I was,
To think a heart once conquer'd by your eyes
Should e'er become another virgin's prize!

Enter DON ANTONIO.

DON A. So late! a guest in's house, that's come so far
On such a business, and not yet come home!
There's something in't I cannot comprehend.
[*Aside.*
Madam, I han't as yet found out your brother,
But (sure) 'twill not be long ere he return;
Then I'll acquaint him with the accident
Has made his house this lady's sanctuary.
POR. Here is a glimpse of comfort, for I see
He takes my cousin for Don Henrique's sister.
[*Aside.*
O bless'd mistake, so luckily continu'd!
CAM. I am by his permission mistress here;
And since that I am pleas'd, sir, 'tis enough,
Without our troubling him with the account
Of her sad story.
DON. A. True, madam, as to her reception here;

Digitized by Google

But yet 'twere very fit he knew it too,
That we might serve ourselves of his advice
And credit for this lady's service.

Enter DON HENRIQUE.

DON H. Though I did promise the corregidor
Not to stir from his house till his return,
Yet I could not obtain it of myself; [*Aside.*
I'm so impatient to unfold the riddle
Of Don Antonio's seeing of my sister,
And entertaining her in her own lodgings.
I shall not now be long i' th' dark. O heavens!
[*He sees her.*
'Tis she herself, and Camilla with her.
Were all my servants mad, or all agreed
T' abuse me in affirming she was fled?
But Don Carlos, was he mad too to swear
That he had trac'd her to another house?
Certainly I or they must be possess'd,
Or some enchantment reigns within these walls.

DON A. O, here comes Don Henrique: now I'll acquaint him
With your sad story, madam.

CAM. I fear we are undone.

DON A. Don Henrique!

POR. I'm dead if he proceed, but how to hinder him——

DON A. Here's a lady with your sister Porcia——

DON H. Yes, sir, I see who 'tis.

DON A. Since you know her, sir, you will the easier
Excuse my boldness.

DON H. Boldness! in what, sir?

DON A. To have been th' occasion of your finding her
Here with your sister at this time o' th' night.

Digitized by Google

DON H. Lord, sir, what do you mean?
DON A. There was in truth such a necessity in it,
That 'twill, I hope, excuse my humble suit to you
In her's and my behalf.
POR. Now all comes out.
DON H. I understand you, sir; she does desire
To pass this night with Porcia, to assist her
In th' ordering of her nuptial ceremonies.
Let her stay, a' God's name.
POR. If he does not dissemble, my condition
Is not so desperate as I imagin'd. [*Aside.*
DON A. I hope you'll pardon this great liberty:
So early a confidence will need it, sir.
DON H. 'Tis more than enough that you desire it;
Th' occasion, too, does justify her stay.
DON A. 'Tis most true, sir, th' occasion did enforce me
Thus boldly to presume upon your friendship.
DON H. Ha' done, for heaven's sake: is it a novelty,
Think you, for Porcia and her cousin-german
To pass a night together?
DON A. Is she so near a kinswoman of his?
Strange inadvertence in her not to tell me
Her relation to him when I nam'd him first.
I'd made fine work on't, had I told him all.
[*Aside.*
DON H. She knows I owe her many a good turn
Upon Octavio's score, and hope ere long
To be able to repay her to the full.
[*Looking on the ladies, and spoken aside, that* ANTONIO *might not hear him.*
POR. Can he declare his mind in plainer terms?

Digitized by Google

CAM. I cannot tell which of us two he means:
These words may be applied to either of us;
But I begin to fear that he knows all.
DON H. Since 'tis so late, pray give the ladies leave
To retire to their chambers. Go in, sister.
DON A. My brother's words and his behaviour
Imply some mystery; but I must be silent
Till I discover more. [*Aside.*
POR. Let us be gone; w' are lost if we stay here.
I'm confident he counterfeits this calm
To cover his revenge, until Antonio
And the rest of the house are gone to bed.
CAM. But we shall ne'er be able to get out,
Whilst they continue in the outward rooms.
POR. Yes, by the garden door; but I'm afraid
'Tis shut.
CAM. No, now I think on't, Flora went that way,
And left it open.
POR. Come, let's be gone: I hope heaven will ordain
Ease by that door which first let in my pain.
[*Exeunt* PORCIA *and* CAMILLA.
DON A. I'll only make a step, sir, to my chamber,
And then return to you immediately.
DON H. Pray, sir, give me leave to wait on you.
DON A. I humbly thank you, sir; I know the way,
And shall not stay above a moment from you.
DON H. What you please, sir; you command here.
DON A. I'll now go see whether my servant Sancho
Has brought Octavio to my lodgings,
As I directed him. [*Exit* DON ANTONIO.

Digitized by Google

DON H. Heavens! was there ever so strange a mystery!
Don Carlos, he affirm'd that those we fought with
Had convey'd Porcia away; and when I come
To seek her in the house, I find her missing:
To second this, her waiting-woman Flora
Tells me that she went down, about that time,
Into the garden: Antonio, not long after,
Affirms that he both saw and entertain'd her
In her own apartment, where I now find her,
And Camilla with her. What can this be?
These, sure, are riddles to pose an Œdipus;
But if, by my own sense, I am assur'd
My honour safe, which was so much in doubt,
What matter is it how 'tis brought about?

ACT V.

SCENE.—DON CARLOS'S *house.*

Enter DIEGO, FLORA, *and* PEDRO, *accompanying the chair, groping as in the dark.*

PED. Dame Flora and Signior Diego, go in there; and you, my friends, set down the chair, and let the lady out; go, there's money for you. I'll go fetch a candle.

[DIEGO *and* FLORA *go in, and the chair being set in the door,* OCTAVIO *goes out into the room:* PEDRO *claps to the door, and goes away.*

Enter DON OCTAVIO, DIEGO, FLORA, *at another door.*

DON O. What! put in all alone here i' th' dark,
[*Groping as in the dark.*
And the door shut upon me! Diego! Flora!

Digitized by Google

DIEGO. Here am I, sir, and Mistress Flora too,
Unless my sense of feeling fails me.
DON O. I can't conjecture where we are. I durst not
So much as peep out of the chair since Flora
Gave me the warning; but, where'er I am,
'Tis better far than in the sergeants' hands.
FLO. Though now i' th' dark, I know well where we are.
I have too often walk'd the streets, Octavio,
From your house hither, upon Cupid's errands,
Not to know the back-door of Carlos his
Apartment: 'tis there, I'm sure, w' are now.
DON O. Curse on thee, Flora! hadst thou lost thy wits,
Not to let me know it sooner?
DIEGO. A gipsy told me by my palm, long since,
A sour-fac'd damsel should be my undoing.
FLO. Suspend awhile your apprehensions, sir;
You may escape before the candles come.
The door was wont to open on this side;
If not, I have another way in store.
[OCTAVIO *goes to the door.*
DON O. Flora, I cannot make the lock go back.
[PEDRO *unlocks it on the other side, and coming in with a candle, meets with* OCTAVIO, *and starting back and stumbling, lets the candle fall, then running out again, double-locks the door.*
DIEGO. Nay then, i' faith, w' are fast: I heard him give
The key a double turn. [DIEGO *takes up the candle.*
Here's a fair trial for your maiden breath!
Flora, blow't in again; let's owe your mouth
More light than yet your eyes could e'er impart.

Digitized by Google

FLO. Light's cast away on such an owl as you;
But yet I'll try. [FLORA *blows the candle in.*
DIEGO. Thanks, gentle Flora, to your virgin puff;
'Tis a strong breath that can o'ercome a snuff.
[*Aside*
But I had rather't had been let alone:
If I must needs be kill'd, unless it were
Behind my back, I'd have it i' th' dark;
For I hate to be kill'd in my own presence.
DON O. What must we do, Flora? all my hope's in you.
FLO. W' have yet some room for hope. There's a back-stairs
Beyond that inner chamber, which goes down
Into the garden: if the door be open,
As certainly it is, the way is easy.
DON O. Come, let's lose no time. Prythee, guide us, Flora. [*Exeunt.*

Scene changes to DON HENRIQUE'S *house. Enter* DON HENRIQUE.

DON H. As well pleas'd as I am to find my honour
Less desperate than I thought, I cannot rest
Till I have drawn from Porcia a confession
Of the whole truth before she goes to bed.
She's in her chamber now, unless by new
Enchantments carried thence.

As he is going towards PORCIA'S *chamber, enter* DON CARLOS *in haste.*

DON C. I can't imagine what should make Don Henrique
Quit the corregidor's till we return'd:
One of his servants tells me he's come home.

Digitized by Google

O, here he is, Now shall I raise a storm
Which (if we do not take a special care)
Will scarce b' allay'd without a shower of blood;
Yet I must venture't, since it so imports
Our friendship and the honour of our house.
[*Aside.*
Happiness is such a stranger to mankind
[*Addressing to* DON HENRIQUE.
That, like to forc'd motion, it is ever strongest
At the first setting out; then languishing
With time, grows weary of our company:
But to misfortunes we so subject are,
That, like to natural motion, they acquire
More force in their progression.

DON H. What means this philosophical preamble?

DON C. You'll know too soon, I fear.

DON H. Don Carlos, I am so well recover'd
From all m' inquietudes, that for the future
I dare defy the malice of my stars
To cause a new relapse into distemper.

DON C. Cousin, I'm much surpris'd with this great change:
But since y' are such a master of your passions,
I'll spare my ethics, and proceed to give you
In short the narrative of our success.
Our worthy kinsman the corregidor,
Forward to serve you in th' affair I mention'd,
Was pleas'd to go along with me in person
With a strong band of sergeants to the place
Where I, attended by your servants, led him.
Cousin, 'twas there;—it wounds my heart to speak it,
And I conjure you summon all your patience—
'Twas there I found——

DON H. Whom, cousin, did you find? for since I'm sure

Digitized by Google

You found no Porcia there, my concernments
In your discoveries are not very likely
To discompose me.

DON C. I would to heaven we had not found her there!

DON H. What's that you say, Don Carlos? My sister there?

DON C. Yes, sir, your sister.

DON H. My sister? that's good, i' faith; ha, ha, ha!

DON C. Why do you laugh! Is the dishonour of
Our family becoming a laughing matter?
This is a worse extreme, methinks, than t'other.

DON H. How can I choose but laugh, to see you dream?
Awake, for heaven's sake, and recall your senses.
Porcia there, said you?

DON C. Yes, sir, Porcia, I say; your sister Porcia;
And, which is more, 'twas in Octavio's house.

DON H. Why, sure, y' are not in earnest, cousin?

DON C. As sure as y' are alive, I found her there.

DON H. Then you transport me, sir, beyond all patience.
Why, cousin, if she has been still at home,
Antonio seen and entertain'd her here,
Accompani'd by Camilla; if even now
I left them there within, is't possible
You should have found her in Octavio's house?
To be here and there too at the same time!
None, sure, but Janus with his double face
Can e'er unfold this mystery.

DON C. Let me advise you, abuse not yourself;
I tell you positively, I found her there:

Digitized by Google

And, by the same token, her waiting-woman
Flora was there attending her.

DON H. Flora! Dear cousin, do not still persist
Thus to affirm impossibilities.

DON C. Sure, you are making some experiment
Upon my temper, and would fain provoke
My patience to some such high disorder,
That I should ne'er hereafter have the face,
When you are in your fits, to play the stoic.

DON H. Cousin, I swear to you upon my honour,
'Tis not above a quarter of an hour
Since I did speak with Porcia and your sister
In that very apartment, and am now
Returning to them in my sister's chamber.

DON C. And, sir, I swear to you upon my honour,
'Tis not above a quarter of an hour,
Since I left Porcia carrying in a chair
From Don Octavio's house, and your man Pedro
Leading the chairmen to mine, and follow'd
By Flora; whilst I came to find you out,
To acquaint you with this unpleasing news,
But fit for you to know as soon as might be.

DON H. This question, cousin, may be soon decided:
Pray, come along, her chamber's not far off.

DON C. And my house but the next door; let's go thither.

DON H. You'll quickly find your error, cousin.

DON C. And you'll as soon be undeceiv'd. But stay:
Here comes your servant, whom I left to guard her:
He'll instantly convince you of the truth.

Enter PEDRO.

PED. O sir!——

DON H. What brings you hither, Pedro?

Digitized by Google

PED. Give me my albricias,[1] sir ; I bring you
The rarest news : your enemy Octavio—
I'm quite out of breath——
DON H. What does the varlet mean ?
PED. Sir, I suppose Don Carlos has inform'd you
That he left me to see your sister Porcia,
With Flora and Diego, Octavio's man,
Safely convey'd t' his house.
DON C. See now, Don Henrique: who was i' the right !
PED. I did as he commanded me, and put them
All three into Don Carlos's antechamber,
Porcia in the same chair which brought her thither,
And for more safety, double-lock'd the door,
Whilst I went down in haste to fetch some candles.
DON H. As sure as death, this madness is infectious ;
My man is now in one of Carlos's fits.
PED. Returning with some lights a moment after,
I no sooner open'd the door, but, heavens !
Who should I see there, standing just before me,
In the selfsame place where I had left Porcia,
But Octavio, your enemy Octavio.
DON H. Here is some witchcraft, sure. What can this mean ?
PED. Amaz'd at this sight, I let the candle fall,
And clapp'd the door to ; then double-lock'd it,
And brought away the key.
DON C. But how could he get in, if you be sure
You lock'd the door when you went out for lights ?

[1] A reward or gratuity given to one that brings good news. —Stevens's "Spanish Dictionary."

Digitized by Google

PED. I know not whether he was there before,
Or got in after; but of this I'm sure,
That there I have him now, and safe enough.
DON H. Let's not, Don Carlos, now perplex ourselves
With needless circumstances, when and how;
Those queries are too phlegmatic for me:
If the beast be i' th' toil, it is enough;
Let us go seize him, for he must die.

Enter DON ANTONIO.

DON A. Pray, brother, what unhappy man is he
Whom you so positively doom to death?
I have a sword to serve you on all occasions
Worthy of you and me.
DON H. His intervening, Carlos, is unlucky.
How shall we behave ourselves towards him
In this business, so unfit for his knowledge?
DON C. Cousin, you should consider with yourself [CARLOS *draws* HENRIQUE *aside.*
What answer to return him: he's not a man
To be put off with any slight pretences;
Nor yet to be engag'd in such an action
As bears th' appearance rather of brutality
Than true honour. You know Antonio needs
No fresh occasions to support his name.
Who danger seek, are indigent of fame.
DON H. I beg your patience, sir, but for one word
With this gentleman my friend.
[DON HENRIQUE *addresses himself to* DON ANTONIO.
DON A. I'll attend your leisure.
I find my coming has disorder'd 'em, [*Aside.*
There's something they would fain conceal from me:
All here is discompos'd, whate'er's the matter.

Digitized by Google

DON H. I am a rogue, if I know what to do.
DON C. Since the event's so dangerous and doubtful,
'Tis best, in my opinion, sir, to temporise.
DON H. How easily men get the name of wise!
To fear t' engage, is call'd to temporise:
Sure, fear and courage cannot be the same,
Yet th' are confounded by a specious name;
And I must tamely suffer, because fools
Are rul'd by nice distinctions of the schools.
How I hate such cold complexions! [*He stamps.*
DON C. Why so transported? as if vehemence
Were for your passion an approv'd defence.
DON H. Who condemns passions, Nature he arraigns.
DON C. Th' are useful succours, when they serve in chains:
But he who throws the bridle on their necks,
From a good cause will produce ill effects.
DON H. Be th' effects what they will, I am resolv'd.
I doubt not of your kind concurrence, sir,
[*Addressing to* DON ANTONIO.
In all the near concernments of a person
Allied to you as I am; but, noble brother,
It were against the laws of hospitality
And civil breeding to engage a guest
(Newly arriv'd after so long a journey)
In an occasion where there may be danger.
DON A. If such be the occasion, I must then
Acquaint you freely, that I wear a sword,
Which must not be excluded from your service.
I'm sure you are too noble to employ yours
In any cause not justifi'd by honour.
DON H. Though with regret, I see, sir, I must yield
To your excess of generosity,

Digitized by Google

This only I shall say to satisfy
Your just reflections, that my resentments
Are grounded on affronts of such a nature
That, as nothing but the offender's life
Can e'er repair 'em, so, as to the forms
Of taking my revenge, they can't admit
Of the least scruple.

DON A. Honour's my standard, and 'tis true that I
Had rather fall, than blush for victory;
But you are such a judge of honour's laws,
That 'twere injurious to suspect your cause.
Allow me, sir, th' honour to lead the way.

[*Exeunt* DON ANTONIO *and* DON HENRIQUE.

DON C. If Porcia be there too (as I believe)
'Twill prove, I fear, a fatal tragedy;
But should she not be there, yet 'tis too much
For such a heart as mine, through ignorance
To have betray'd a gentleman, though faulty,
Into such cruel hands. I must go with them;
But so resolv'd as, in this bloody strife,
I'll salve my honour, or I'll lose my life. [*Exit.*

Scene changes to DON CARLOS'S *house. Enter* DON OCTAVIO, DIEGO, *and* FLORA *with a candle.*

FLO. O th' unluckiness! I vow t' you, sir,
I have scarce known that door e'er lock'd before.

DON O. There's no remedy, Flora: I am now
At the mercy of my enemies.

DIEGO. Having broken into another's ground,
'Tis just, i' faith, you should be put i' th' pound.

DON O. The tide of my ill fate is swoll'n so high,
'Twill not admit increase of misery;
Since, amongst all the curses, there is none
So wounds the spirit as privation:

Digitized by Google

For 'tis not where we lie, but whence we fell;
The loss of heaven's the greatest pain in hell.
When I had sail'd the doubtful course of love,
Had safely gain'd my port, and (far above
My hopes) the precious treasure had secured
For which so many storms I had endur'd:
To be so soon from this great blessing torn,
That's hard to say, if 'twere first dead or born,
May doubtless seem such a transcendent curse,
That even the Fates themselves could do no worse:
Yet this I bore with an erected face.
Since fortune, not my fault, caus'd my disgrace;
But now my eyes unto the earth are bent,
Conscious of meriting this punishment:
For trusting a fond maid's officious care,
My life and honour's taken in this snare;
And thus I perish on this unseen shelf,
Pursu'd by fate, and false unto myself.
Flora, when I am dead, I pray present
[*He pulls out his tablets.*
These tablets to your lady; there she'll find
My last request, with reasons which I give,
That for my sake she would vouchsafe to live.
Give me the candle, Flora.

[OCTAVIO *sets the candle on a table, and sits down to write in his tablets.*

DIEGO. A double curse upon all love in earnest,
All constant love: 'tis still accompanied
With strange disasters, or else ends in that
Which is the worst of all disasters—marriage.

FLO. Sure, you could wish that everybody living
Had such a soul of quicksilver as yours,
That can fix nowhere.

DIEGO. Why' 'twould not be the worse for you, dear Flora;
You then might hope in time to have your turn,
As well as those who have much better faces.

Digitized by Google

FLO. You, I presume, sir, would be one o' th' latest,
Which I should hear of; yet 'tis possible
That one might see you before you should be
Welcome.

DIEGO. She has wit and good-humour, excellent
Ingredients to pass away the time;
And I have kindness for her person too;
But that will end with marriage, and possibly
Her good-humour; for I have seldom known
The husband and the wife make any music,
Though when asunder they can play their parts.
Well, friend Diego, I advise you to look
Before you leap, for if you should be coupled
To a yoke, instead of a yoke-fellow,
'Tis likely you may wear it to your grave.
Yet, honest Diego, now I think on't better,
Your dancing and your vaulting days are done:
Faith, all your pleasures are three storeys high,
They are come up to your mouth; you are now
For ease and eating, the only joys of life;
And there's no cook, no dry-nurse, like a wife.

DON O. Here, take my tablets, Flora: sure, they'll spare
Thy life for thy sex's sake; but for poor Diego——

DIEGO. Why, sir, they'll never offer to kill me?
There's nothing in the world I hate like death.

DON O. Since death's the passage to eternity,
To be for ever happy we must die.

DIEGO. 'Tis very true; but most that die would live,
If to themselves they could new leases give.

DON O. We must possess our souls with such indifference,
As not to wish nor fear to part from hence.

DIEGO. The first I may pretend to, for I swear
I do not wish to part: 'tis true, I fear.

Digitized by Google

DON O. Fear! why, death's only cruel when she flies,
And will not deign to close the weeping eyes.
DIEGO. That is a cruelty I can forgive,
For I confess I'm not afraid to live.
DON O. We shall still live, though 'tis by others' breath—
By our good fame, which is secur'd by death.
DIEGO. But we shall catch such colds, sir, under ground,
That we shall never hear Fame's trumpet sound.
DON O. 'Tis but returning, when from hence we go,
As rivers to their mother-ocean flow.
DIEGO. We know our names and channels whilst w' are here;
W' are swallow'd in that dark abyss when there.
DON O. Engulf'd in endless joys and perfect rest,
Unchangeable, i' th' centre of the bless'd.
DIEGO. Hark, I hear a noise—
[*The noise of the opening of a door.* DIEGO *runs to the door, looks into the next room, then comes running to* OCTAVIO.
DIEGO. O sir, w' are lost! I sea two female giants
Coming most terribly upon us.
DON O. Away, you fearful fool——

Enter CAMILLA *and* PORCIA, *the one with a key, the other with a candle.*

POR. I'm confident nobody saw us pass
From th' other house.
CAM. However, let us go through my brother's quarter,
And open the back-door into the street;
'Tis good in all events t' have a retreat
More ways than one.
[*A door claps behind, and both look back.*

Digitized by Google

POR. O heavens, our passage is cut off!
The wind has shut the door through which we came.
CAM. The accident's unlucky: 'tis a spring lock,
That opens only on the other side.
POR. Let's on the faster, and make sure of th' other— [*Seeing* OCTAVIO, *she starts.*
Octavio here! [OCTAVIO *hearing them, starts up.*
DON O. Porcia in this place! may I trust my senses,
Or does my fancy form these chimeras?
DIEGO. Either we sleep, and dream extravagantly,
Or else the fairies govern in this house.
[FLORA *runs to* PORCIA.
FLO. Ah, dearest mistress! you shall never make me
Quit you so again.
POR. But can that be Octavio?
DON O. I was Octavio; but I am at present
So much astonish'd, I am not myself.
CAM. What can the meaning of this vision be?
[DON OCTAVIO *approaches* PORCIA.
DON O. My dearest Porcia, how is't possible
To find you in this place, my friend Antonio
Having so generously undertaken
Your protection?
POR. Did he not yours so too? and yet I find
Octavio here, where he is more expos'd
Than I to certain ruin. I am loth
To say 'tis he who has betray'd us both.
DON O. Antonio false? It is impossible.
DIEGO. 'Tis but too evident.
DON O. Peace, slave! he is my noble friend, of noble blood,
Whose fame's above the level of those tongues
That bark by custom at the brightest virtues,
As dogs do at the moon.

Digitized by Google

POR. How hard it is for virtue to suspect!
Ah, Octavio! we have been both deceiv'd.
This vile Antonio is the very man
To whom my brother without my consent
Or knowledge has contracted me in Flanders.
DON O. Antonio the man to whom you are contracted?
Porcia the bride whom he is come to marry?
POR. The very same.
DON O. Why did you not acquaint me with it sooner?
POR. Alas! I have not seen you since I knew it;
But those few hours such wonders have produc'd
As exceed all belief, and ask more time
Than your unsafe condition in this place
Will allow me to make you comprehend it.
CAM. Cousin, I cannot blame your apprehensions,
Nor your suspicion of Antonio's friendship;
But I am so possess'd with the opinion
Of his virtue, I shall as soon believe
Impossibilities as his apostasy
From honour.
DON O. What's her concernment in Antonio, Porcia?
POR. O, that's the strangest part of our sad story,
And which requires most time to let you know it.
[*A blaze of light appears at the window, and a noise without.*
See, Flora, at the window, what's that light
And noise we hear. [FLORA *goes to the window.*
FLO. O madam, we are all undone! I see
Henrique, Carlos, and their servants, with torches
All coming hither; and, which is wonderful,
Antonio leading them with his sword drawn.
CAM. Thou dream'st, distracted wench? Antonio false?

Digitized by Google

It is impossible——

[CAMILLA *runs to the window, and turning back, says—*

All she has said is in appearance true.
There is some hidden mystery, which thus
Abuses us; for I shall ne'er believe
Antonio can transgress the rules of friendship.

DON O. Friendship's a specious name, made to deceive
Those whose good-nature tempts them to believe:
The traffic of good offices 'mongst friends
Moves from ourselves, and in ourselves it ends:
When competition brings us to the test,
Then we find friendship is self-interest.

POR. Ye pow'rs above! what pleasure can ye take
To persecute submitting innocence?

DON O. Retire, dear Porcia, to that inner room:
For should thy cruel brother find thee here,
He's so revolted from humanity,
He'll mingle thine with my impurer blood.

POR. That were a kind of contract. Let him come,
We'll meet at once marriage and martyrdom.

DON O. Soul of my life, retire.

POR. I will not leave you.

DON O. Thou preserv'st me by saving of thyself:
For they can murder only half of me,
Whilst that my better part survives in thee.

POR. I will die too, Octavio, to maintain
That different causes form the same effects:
'Tis courage in you men, love in our sex.

DON O. Though souls no sexes have, when w' are above,
If we can know each other, we may love.

POR. I'll meet you there above: here take my word.

[DON OCTAVIO *takes her hand and kisses it.*

This Porcia knows the way of joining souls,

Digitized by Google

As well as th' other, when she swallow'd coals.

[*They retire to the other room,* PORCIA *leaning on* CAMILLA, *and* OCTAVIO *waits on them to the door.*

DIEGO. Nay, if y' are good at that, the devil take
The hindmost. 'Tis for your sake, fair Flora,
[*Taking* FLORA *by the hand.*
I shun these honourable occasions.
Having no weapon, sir, 'tis fit that I
March off with the baggage.

[*Turning to* DON OCTAVIO. *Exeunt* DIEGO *and* FLORA.

DON O. I'm now upon the frontiers of this life,
There's but one step to immortality;
And, since my cruel fortune has allow'd me
No other witness of my tragic end
But a false friend and barbarous enemy,
I'll leave my genius to inform the world
My life and death was uniform: as I
Liv'd firm to love and honour, so I die.
[*Draws his sword.*
Look down, ye spirits above; for if there be
A sight on earth worthy of you to see,
'Tis a brave man, pursu'd by unjust hate,
Bravely contending with his adverse fate.
[*Waving his sword.*
Stay till this heaven-born soul puts off her earth,
And she'll attend ye to her place of birth.

Enter DON ANTONIO, DON HENRIQUE, DON CARLOS, *and* PEDRO, *their swords drawn;* DON ANTONIO *before the rest.*

DON A. Where is the man whose insolence and folly
Has so misled him to affront my friend?

Digitized by Google

DON O. Here is the man thou seek'st, and he whom thou
So basely hast betray'd.
DON A. O heavens! what is't I see? It is Octavio,
My friend.
DON O. Not thy friend, Antonio, but 'tis Octavio,
Who by thy perfidy has been betray'd
To this forlorn condition; but, vile man,
Thou now shalt pay thy treachery with thy life.
[DON OCTAVIO *makes at* DON ANTONIO.
DON A. Hold, Octavio! though thy injurious error
May transport thee, it shall not me, beyond
The bounds of honour. Heaven knows I thought
Of nothing less than what I find—Octavio
In this place.
DON H. What pause is this, Antonio? All your fervour
In the concernments of a brother-in-law
Reduc'd to a tame parley with our enemy?
Do all the promises you have made to me,
T' assist my just revenge, conclude in this?
DON O. Do all the promises you have made to me,
T' assist my virtuous love, conclude in this?
DON H. Where is your wonted bravery?
Where your kindness to such a near ally?
DON O. Where is your former honour? where your firmness
To such an ancient friend?
DON A. What course shall my distracted honour steer,
Betwixt these equal opposite engagements?
[*Aside.*

Digitized by Google

DON H. What, demur still? nay, then I'll right myself.

[DON HENRIQUE *makes at* DON OCTAVIO; DON ANTONIO *turns on* DON OCTAVIO'S *side.*

DON A. Who attacks Octavio must pass through me.

DON C. I must lay hold on this occasion. [*Aside.*
Good cousin, I conjure you to restrain
Your passion for awhile. There lies conceal'd
Some mystery in this which, once unfolded,
May reconcile this difference.

DON H. Sweetly propos'd, sir; an accommodation!
Think'st thou my anger's like a fire of straw,
Only to blaze and then expire in smoke?
Think'st thou I can forget my name and nation,
And barter for revenge, when honour bleeds?
His life must pay this insolence, or mine.

[*He makes at* DON OCTAVIO *again;* DON ANTONIO *interposes.*

DON A. Mine must protect his, or else perish with him.

DON H. Since neither faith nor friendship can prevail,
'Tis time to try what proof you are, Antonio,
Against your own near interest. Know that the man,
Whom you protect against my just revenge,
Has seconded his insolence to me
By foul attempts upon my sister's honour,
Your Porcia's, sir. If this will not inflame you——

[DON ANTONIO *turns from* DON OCTAVIO *and beholds him with a stern countenance.*

DON O. How! I attempt your sister's honour, Henrique?

[DON ANTONIO *turns and looks sternly upon* DON HENRIQUE.

Digitized by Google

The parent of your black designs, the devil,
Did ne'er invent a more malicious falsehood;
'Tis true that I have serv'd the virtuous Porcia
With such devotion and such spotless love,
That, though unworthy, yet she has been pleas'd
To recompense my passion with esteem;
[DON ANTONIO *turns and looks sternly upon* DON OCTAVIO.
By which she has so chain'd me to her service,
That here I vow either to live her prize,
Or else in death to fall love's sacrifice.

DON A. O heavens! what's that I hear? Thou blessed angel,
Guardian of my honour, I now implore
Thy powerful assistance, to preserve
That reputation which I hitherto
By virtuous actions have maintain'd unblemish'd.
In vain, Don Henrique, you design to change
[*He pauses a little, and rubs his forehead.*
My resolutions: it must ne'er be said
That passion could return Antonio
From the strict rules of honour. Sir, I tell you,
Nothing can make me violate my first
Engagement.

DON H. Nay, then, thou shalt die too, perfidious man.
Ho! Geraldo, Pedro, Leonido!

Enter GERALDO, PEDRO, *and* LEONIDO, *with their swords drawn; they join with* DON HENRIQUE; DON CARLOS *interposes.*

DON C. For heaven's sake, cousin, draw not on yourself
The horrid infamy of assassinating
Persons of noble blood by servile hands!

Digitized by Google

DON H. Do you defend them too? Kill 'em, I say.

DON A. Retire, Octavio, I'll sustain their shock.

DON O. Octavio retire!

DON A. Trust me, you must, they will surround us else;
Through that narrow passage they'll assail us
With less advantage.

[*They retire, fighting, off the stage,* DON HENRIQUE *and his men pursuing them, and* DON CARLOS *endeavouring to stop* DON HENRIQUE.

DON H. What, d'ye give back, ye mighty men of fame?

DON A. Don Henrique, you shall quickly find 'tis honour,
Not fear, makes me retire. [*Exeunt.*

Enter presently DON ANTONIO *and* DON OCTAVIO *at another door, which* DON ANTONIO *bolts.*

DON A. Now we shall have a breathing-while at least,
Octavio, and time to look about us.
Pray, see yon other door be fast.

[DON OCTAVIO *steps to the door where they went out, and* DON HENRIQUE *bounces at the door they came in at.*

DON H. Geraldo, fetch an iron bar to force
The door.

[*Within, aloud.* DON ANTONIO *goes to both the doors, to see if they be fast.*

DON A. So, 'tis now as I could wish it.

DON O. What do you mean, generous Antonio?

DON A. To kill thee now myself:—having perform'd
What my engagement did exact from me

Digitized by Google

In your defence 'gainst others, my love now
Requires its dues, as honour has had his.
There's no protection for you from my sword
But in your own, or in your frank renouncing
All claim to Porcia; she is so much mine,
That none must breathe and have the vanity
Of a pretension to her whilst I live.

DON O. I never will renounce my claims to Porcia,
But still assert them by all noble ways:
Yet, sir, this hand shall never use a sword
(Without the last compulsion) 'gainst that man
Who has so much oblig'd me. No, Antonio,
You are securely guarded by the favours
Which you so frankly have conferr'd upon me.

DON A. Pray, sir, let not your pretended gratitude
Enervate your defence: 'tis not my custom
To serve my friends with prospects of return.

DON O. And, sir, 'tis not my custom to receive
An obligation, but with a purpose,
And within the power of my return.
Friendship, Antonio, is reciprocal.
He that will only give, and not receive,
Enslaves the person whom he would relieve.

DON A. Your rule is right; but you apply it wrong.
It was Octavio, my camerade in arms
And ancient friend, whom I design'd to serve;
Not that disloyal man who has invaded
My honour and my love. 'Tis the intent
Which forms the obligation, not th' event.

DON O. I call those pow'rs, which both discern and punish,
To witness for me that I never knew
You e'er pretended to Don Henrique's sister,
Before I came within these fatal walls:

Digitized by Google

This I declare only to clear myself
From th' imputation of disloyalty,
And to prevent the progress of your error.

DON A. How can I think you should speak truth to me
Who am a witness y' have been false to her,
To whom you now profess so high devotion?

DON O. I false to Porcia! take heed, Antonio,
So foul an injury provokes too much.
But, sir, I must confess I owe you more
Than the forgiveness of one gross mistake.

DON A. Rare impudence! I must not trust my senses.

DON O. If we cannot adjust this competition,
Let's charge our envious fortunes, not our passions,
With this fatal breach of friendship.

DON. A. Leave your discourses, and defend yourself;
Either immediately renounce all claims
To Porcia, or this must speak the rest.
[*Shaking his sword.*

DON O. Nay, then I must reply.
[*They fight. A noise, as if the door were broken open.*

Enter DON HENRIQUE, DON CARLOS, LEONIDO, *and* GERALDO, *with their swords drawn.*

DON H. What's this! Antonio fighting with Octavio?
This bravery is excessive, gallant friend,
Not to allow a share in your revenge
To him who's most concern'd: he must not fall
Without some marks of mine.
[DON HENRIQUE *makes at* DON OCTAVIO, *and* DON ANTONIO *turns to* DON OCTAVIO'S *side.*

DON A. Nay, then my honour you invade anew,

Digitized by Google

And, by assaulting him, revive in me
My pre-engagements to protect and serve him
Against all others.
DON H. Why, were not you, Antonio, fighting with him?
Were you not doing all you could to kill him?
DON A. Henrique, 'tis true; but finding in my breast
An equal strife 'twixt honour and revenge,
I do, in just compliance with them both,
Preserve him from your sword, to fall by mine.
DON C. Brave man, how nicely he does honour weigh!
Justice herself holds not the scales more even.
DON H. My honour suffers more as yet than yours,
And I must have a share in the revenge.
DON A. My honour, sir, is so sublim'd by love,
'Twill not admit comparison or rival.
DON H. Either he must renounce all claims to Porcia,
Or die immediately.
DON A. Y' are i' the right: that he must do, or die;
But by no other hand than mine.
DON C. Cease your contention, and turn all your swords
Against this breast! whilst Porcia and I have breath,
She must be mine, there's no divorce but death.
DON H. I'll hear no more, protect him if thou canst:
Kill the slave, kill him, I say!
[DON HENRIQUE *makes at him, and* DON CARLOS *endeavours to interpose.*
DON C. For heaven's sake, hold a moment! certainly

Digitized by Google

There's some mistake lies hidden here, which (clear'd)
Might hinder these extremes.

[DON HENRIQUE *and his servants press* DON ANTONIO *and* DON OCTAVIO. FLORA *peeps out, and, seeing them fight, cries out* Camilla! Porcia! CAMILLA *and* PORCIA *looking out, both shriek, and then run out upon the stage.*

Enter PORCIA *and* CAMILLA *from the inner room.*

POR. Don Henrique!
CAM. Antonio! Carlos!
POR. Octavio!
CAM. *and* POR. *together.* Hear us but speak! hear us but speak!
DON H. By heavens, 'tis Porcia! why, how came she here?
DON C. Why, did not I tell you she was brought hither
By my directions? you would not believe me.
DON H. But how then could Octavio come hither?
DON C. Nay, that heaven knows, you heard as well as I
Your man's relation.
DON H. Ah, thou vile woman, that I could destroy
Thy memory with thy life!

[*He offers to run at* PORCIA: DON ANTONIO *interposes.*

DON A. Hold, sir, that must not be!
DON H. What, may not I do justice upon her
Neither?
DON A. No, sir: although I have not yet the honour

Digitized by Google

To know who this lady is, I have this night
Engag'd myself both to secure and serve her.
DON C. He knows not Porcia. Who was i' the right,
Don Henrique, you or I?
DON H. He not know Porcia! why, 'tis not an hour
Since I saw him entertaining her at home,
Sure w' are enchanted, and all we see's illusion.
CAM. Allow me, Henrique, to unspell these charms.
Who is't, Octavio, you pretend to? speak.
DON O. You might have spar'd that question, madam: none
Knows so well as you, 'tis Porcia I adore.
DON A. Porcia's my wife! disloyal man, thou diest. [*Offers to make at* DON OCTAVIO.
CAM. Hold, sir! which is the Porcia you lay claim to?
DON A. Can you doubt of that? why, sure, you know too well
The conquest that you made so long ago [1]
Of my poor heart in Flanders.
DON C. Conquest! poor heart! Flanders! what can this mean?
DON H. New riddles every moment do arise,
And mysteries are born of mysteries.
DON C. Sure, 'tis the pastime of the destinies
To mock us for pretending to be wise.
CAM. Thanks be to heaven, our work draws near an end.
Cousin, it belongs to you to finish it.
POR. To free you from that labyrinth, Antonio,

---

[1] All the copies have it *so long ago*, but Reed followed Dodsley in the absurd error of substituting *some days ago*.—*Collier.*

Digitized by Google

In which a slight mistake, not rectifi'd,
Involv'd us all, know the suppos'd Porcia,
Whom you have lov'd, is the true Camilla.
CAM. And you, Don Henrique, know that Don Octavio
Has always been your sister's faithful lover,
And only feign'd a gallantry to me
To hide his real passion for my cousin
From your discerning eyes.
DON A. Generous Octavio!
DON O. Brave Antonio! how happy are we both. [*They embrace.*
Both in our loves and friendships!
DON A. Ah, how the memory of our crosses pass'd
Heightens our joys when we succeed at last!
DON O. Our pleasures in this world are always mix'd:
'Tis in the next where all our joys are fix'd.
[CAMILLA *takes* DON ANTONIO *by the hand, and leads him to* DON CARLOS.
CAM. This, my dear brother, is that brave commander
To whom you owe your life and liberty;
And I much more—the safety of my honour.
DON C. Is this that gallant leader who redeem'd us
With so much valour from the enemy?
CAM. The very same.
DON C. Why did you not acquaint me with it sooner?
'Twas ill done, Camilla.
CAM. Alas! my dearest brother, gratitude,
[*Drawing* DON CARLOS *aside.*
Conspiring with the graces of his person,
So soon possess'd him of my heart, that I,

Digitized by Google

Asham'd of such a visionary love,
Durst never trust my tongue with my own thoughts.

DON C. 'Tis enough. Here, sir, take from me her hand, [*Addressing to* DON ANTONIO.
Whose heart your merit has long since made yours.

[DON ANTONIO *takes* CAMILLA'S *hand and kisses it.*

DON A. Sir, with your leave and hers, I seal the vows
Of my eternal faith unto you both.

DON C. But let's take heed, Antonio, lest, whilst we
Are joying in our mutual happiness,
Don Henrique's scarcely yet composed distemper
Revive not, and disorder us afresh:
I like not his grim posture.

DON A. 'Tis well thought on; let's approach him.

[DON OCTAVIO, *holding* PORCIA *by the hand, advances towards* DON HENRIQUE.

DON O. Here with respect we wait your confirmation
Of that which seems to be decreed above,
Though travers'd by unlucky accidents.
This lady, your incomparable sister,
Can witness that I never did invade
Your passion for Camilla; and Pedro's death
Happen'd by your mistaken jealousy.
The causes of your hate being once remov'd,
'Tis just. Don Henrique, the effects should cease.

DON H. I shall consult my honour——

DON C. You cannot take a better councillor
In this case than your own and sister's honour;
What, to secure them both, could have been wish'd
Beyond what fate has of itself produc'd?

Digitized by Google

DON H. How hard it is to act upon constraint!
That which I could have wish'd, I now would fly,
Since 'tis obtruded by necessity.
'Tis fit that I consent, but yet I must
Still seem displeas'd, that m' anger may seem just.
[*Aside.*

DON A. Noble Don Henrique, you may reckon me
To be as truly yours by this alliance,
As if a brother's name subsisted still.

DON H. Well, I must yield, I see, or worse will follow. [*Aside.*
He is a fool who thinks by force or skill
To turn the current of a woman's will:
Since fair Camilla is Antonio's lot,
I Porcia yield to Don Antonio's friend.
Our strength and wisdom must submit to fate:
Stripp'd of my love, I will put off my hate.
Here take her hand, and may she make you, sir,

[DON HENRIQUE *takes* PORCIA *by the hand, and gives her to* DON OCTAVIO.

Happier than she has done me.

DIEGO *and* FLORA *advance.*

FLO. Had e'er disorders such a rare come-off?
Methinks 'twould make a fine plot for a play.

DIEGO. Faith, Flora, I should have the worst of that;
For, by the laws of comedy, 'twould be
My lot to marry you.

DON O. Well thought on, Diego, tho' 'tis spoke in jest:
We cannot do a better thing in earnest
Than to join these who seem to have been made
For one another. What say'st thou to it, Flora?

Digitized by Google

FLO. Troth, I have had so many frights this night,
That I am e'en afraid to lie alone.
[DIEGO *takes her by the hand.*
DIEGO. Give me thy hand, sweet Flora, 'tis a bargain,
I promise thee, dear spouse, I'll do my best
To make thee first repent this earnest jest.
FLO. You may mistake: we have a certain way,
By going halves, to match your foulest play.
DON C. Since this last happy scene is in my house,
You'll make collation with me, ere you part.
DON A. *and* DON O. Agreed, agreed, agreed!
DON A. Thus end the strange Adventures of Five Hours,
As sometimes blust'ring storms, in gentle showers.[1]
[*Addressing to the Pit.*

---

[1] Here the play ended until the third edition which, as has been already noticed, varies materially from those that preceded it. The third edition also omits the original epilogues at the theatre and at court, which, as they are worth preserving, are now inserted in a note.—*Collier.*

THE EPILOGUE.

DIEGO *comes stealing in, and is followed by* HENRIQUE, *who stays at the door and listens.*

DIEGO. Come, gentlemen!
Let the *Dons* and *Monsieurs* say what they will,
For our parts, we are for *Old England* still.
Here's a fine Play indeed, to lay the scene
In three houses of the same town, O mean!
Why, we have several plays, where I defy
The devil to tell where the scene does lie:
Sometimes in *Greece,* and then they make a step
To *Transylvania,* thence at one leap
To *Greece* again: this shows a ranging brain,
Which scorns to be confined t' a town in *Spain.*

Digitized by Google

DON O. Thus, noble gallants, after blust'ring lives,
You'll end as we have done, in taking wives.
DIEGO. Hold, sirs, there's not an end as yet; for then
Come your own brats and those of other men.
DON H. Besides the cares of th' honour of your race
Which, as you know, is my accursed case.
[*Addressing to the Boxes.*

Then for the Plot.

The possible *Adventures of Five Hours!*
A copious design! why, in some of ours
Many of the adventures are impossible,
Or, if to be achiev'd, no man can tell
Within what time: this shows a rare invention,
When the design's above your comprehension;
Whilst here y' are treated with a romance-tale,
And a plot cover'd with a *Spanish* veil.

As for the Style.

It is as easy as a proclamation,
As if the play were penn'd for the whole nation.
None of those thund'ring lines, which used to crack
Our breaths, and set your wits upon the rack.
Who can admire this piece, or think it good?
There's not one line but may be understood.

The Raillery.

As innocent as if't had pass'd the test
Of a full synod: not one bawdy jest!
Nor any of those words of double sense,
Which make the ladies, to show their innocence,
Look so demure, whilst by a simp'ring smile
The gallant shows he understands the style.
But here you have a piece so subtly writ,
Men must have wit themselves to find the wit.
Faith, that's too much; therefore by my consent,
We'll damn the play.
HENRIQUE. Think'st thou, impertinent,
That these, who know the pangs of bringing forth
[*Pointing to the Pit.*

Digitized by Google

CAM. You, ladies, whilst unmarried, tread on snares :
Married, y' are cumber'd with domestic cares.
POR. If handsome, y' are by fools and fame attack'd ;
If ugly, then by your own envy rack'd.
FLO. We by unthrifty parents forc'd to serve,
When fed are slaves, and when w' are free, we starve.
DON C. Which put together, we must needs confess,
This world is not the scene of happiness.

A living scene, should e'er destroy this birth ?
You ne'er can want such writers, who aspire
To please the judges of that upper tier.
The knowing are his peers, and for the rest
Of the illiterate crowd (though finely dress'd),
The author hopes he never gave them cause
To think he'd waste his time for their applause.
You then (most equal judges) freely give
Your votes, whether this play should die or live.

THE EPILOGUE AT COURT.

WE'VE pass'd the lords and commons, and are come
At length, dread sir, to hear your final doom.
'Tis true your vassals, sir, may vote the laws.
Their sanction comes from your divine applause.
This shining circle then will all sit mute
'Till one pronounce from you *Le Roi le veut.*[1]

---

[1] These are the words still used by ancient usage whenever the royal assent is given to any bill that has passed through both Houses of Parliament.—*Collier.*

Digitized by Google

EPILOGUE.

BY MR SMITH.

OUR poet, gentlemen, thought to steal away,
Hoping those wretched rhymes, i' th' end o' th' play,
Might serve for epilogue; for truly he
Takes epilogues for arrant bribery.
H' observes your poet in our modern plays,
Humbly showeth, and then as humbly prays;
So that it can't be said, what they have writ
Was without fear, though often without wit.
He trusts (as ye say papists do) to merit;
Leaves you (like quakers) to be mov'd by th' spirit.
But since that epilogues are so much in vogue,
Take this as prologue to the epilogue.

Digitized by Google

BY MR HARRIS.

SOME, as soon as th' enter, we wish 'em gone,
Taking their visit as a visitation:
Yet when they go, there are certain grimaces
(Which in plain English, is but making faces)
That we, for manners' sake, to all allow.
The poet's parting; don't rise, but smile and bow;
And's back being turn'd, ye may take the liberty
To turn him, and all h' has writ to raillery.
Now, as I shall be sav'd, were I as you,
I'd make no bones on't—why, 'tis but his due.
A fop! in this brave, licentious age,
To bring his musty morals on the stage?
Rhyme us to reason, and our lives redress
In metre, as Druids did the savages?
Affront the freeborn vices of the nation?
And bring dull virtue into reputation?
Virtue! would any man of common sense
Pretend to't? why, virtue now is impudence;
And such another modest play would blast
Our new stage, and put your palates out of taste.
We told him, Sir, 'tis whisper'd in the pit
This may be common sense, but 'tis not wit;
That has a flaming spirit, and stirs the blood
That's bawdry, said he, if rightly understood;
Which our late poets make their chiefest tasks,
As if they writ only to th' vizard-masks.
Nor that poetic rage, which hectors heaven,

Digitized by Google

Your writer's style, like's temper, 's grown more even ;
And he's afraid to shock their tender ears,
Whose God, say they, 's the fiction of their fears ;
Your moral's to no purpose. He replied,
Some men talk'd idly just before they died,
And yet we heard them with respect. 'Twas all he said.
Well, we may count him now as good as dead ;
And since ghosts have left walking, if you please,
We'll let our virtuous poet rest in peace.

Digitized by Google

ALL MISTAKEN;

OR,

THE MAD COUPLE.

Digitized by Google

EDITION.

All Mistaken; Or The Mad Couple. A Comedy, Acted by His Majestyes Servants, at the Theatre Royal. Written by the Honorable James Howard, Esq.; London, Printed by H. Brugis, for James Magnes in Russel-street, neer the Piazza in Covent-garden, 1672. 4°.

This play formed part of the collection as originally published by Dodsley in 1744, but was excluded from the second and third editions. In the copies of 1672 and 1744, the arrangement of the lines was found very irregular, and the metre correspondingly corrupt. In the present reprint the text has been, to a large extent, reconstructed.

Digitized by Google

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

THE DUKE.

ORTELLUS, *next of kin to the Duke; of an ambitious and treacherous nature.*

ARBATUS, *supposed brother to Artabella.*

PHILIDOR, *a mad kinsman of the Duke's, in love with Mirida.*

ZORANZO, *the Duke's prisoner of war, in love with Amarissa.*

PINGUISTER, LEAN-MAN, } *two ridiculous lovers of Mirida.*

Doctor to Pinguister.

Tailor to Lean-man.

Jailor.

Servant to Philidor.

Boy.

Clown.

Guard and attendances.

AMPHELIA, *in love with the Duke.*

ARTABELLA, *the Duke's sister, but taken for the sister of Arbatus.*

MIRIDA, *Philador's mad mistress.*

AMARISSA, *in love with Zoranzo.*

Six Ladies.

Three Nurses with children.

Scene, Italy.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

ALL MISTAKEN.

ACT I., SCENE I.

Enter DUKE *from war, in triumph, leading in his hand* ARTABELLA, *a woman of that country from whence he came, with* ARBATUS *her brother, and* ZORANZO *prisoner; and on the other side* AMPHELIA, ORTELLUS, *and Guard.*

DUKE. Madam, I need not say y'are welcome to this
Country, since 'tis mine.
ART. Sir, leaving my own for yours
Speaks my belief of that, and all things else
You say.
DUKE. The same unto your worthy brother,
Besides, my thanks to you, sir, for letting
Your sister take this journey.
ARB. Your highness hath so nobly express'd
Yourself unto my sister, that I
Consented to her coming with you; so
Highly I esteem'd your princely word,
That I have let her trespass on the
Bound of common modesty in this
Adventure: for when this hasty judging
World shall see you have brought a woman

Digitized by Google

From her own country, and not your
Wife, how soon will every tongue give her
Another title!

DUKE. Sir, my sudden actions shall prevent all
Tongues or thoughts either to name or think her
Anything but my duchess; therefore
All that owe duty or respect to me, pay it
To her. What, Amphelia, did you believe
The world so barren of good faces, that
Yours only does enrich it? or did you think
It was men's fates only to doat on yours?
Look on this lady, and you'll see your error;
Mark well her face, and you will find
In every line beauty sits empress there.
These are the eyes, Amphelia, now, that dart
Obedience through my heart; are not you vex'd
To see I am no constant fool, and love
You still?

AMPH. Vexed at what? to see a man I hate
Love another? a very great vexation!
Know, sir, this breast has only room for joy
And love to brave Ortellus—
Forgive my heart that 'twas not yours before,
Since you have long deserv'd it.

ORT. Madam, no time was long enough to wait
This blessed hour.

AMPH. Alas, great duke! instead
Of pining for your change, you find me midst
A thousand joys in this new choice.

DUKE. So you do me, Amphelia, amidst
Ten thousand; not all the glories that
Attend a conquering soldier can create
One joy so great in me,
As being conquer'd here in my own triumphs.
I am but a slave;
Nor does my victory over thousands please
Me so much, as being overcome by

Digitized by Google

One—by this fair one, whose eyes, by shining
On my triumph only, make it glorious.
AMPH. Well, sir, we will not change our happy states;
You cannot brag of happiness so great
To make me envy: I am only sorry for
This lady, that had nothing else to do
With her heart but to give it you. Madam,
If your breast had been crowded with some twenty
Or thirty hearts, and amongst these one very
Ill, you might have
Made present of that to this mighty duke.
DUKE. Madam, does not this lady's discourse make you
Afraid of me.
ART. Not in the least, sir.
DUKE. Where's this bold prisoner?
GUARD. Here, and [it] please your highness.
DUKE. Well, sir, tho' you did attempt to kill me
In our camp, after you were our prisoner,
You shall not die, since you are of the same
Country this lady is; therefore thank her
And fortune for your life.
ZOR. I'd sooner curse them both.
Shall I thank any for my life, but heaven
That gave it me? I'd rather give it to
A cat. A noble death were far more welcome
To me, than a mean life at second hand.
My being here I owe unto the gods.
When they think fit to lend it me no longer,
They know the way to take it from me. I scorn
To run in debt unto a mortal duke for two
Or three days' breath.
AMPH. Brave captive! [*Aside.*
DUKE. You're
Very high, considering you are in chains.
ZOR. Why, sir, think you these fetters can confine

Digitized by Google

My mind as they do my legs, or that my
Tongue is your prisoner, and dares only say:
May it please your highness? How much are you
Mistaken? Know, sir, my soul is
Prompter to my tongue, and gives it courage to say
Anything that heaven will not frown at. We
Should detract from those great pow'rs above,
If we pay fears to any here below.
Perhaps you think I'll beg my life now upon
A pair of bent petitioning knees? No, sir;
Had I a hundred lives, I'd give them all
To sharpest deaths, rather than beg for one.

DUKE. You're well resolv'd; perhaps your mind may alter,
When you see the axe. In the meantime commit him
To the closest prison where, if you have any
Accounts with heaven, you will have time to cast
Them up before your death.

ZOR. Your sentence brings me
Joy. Welcome the keenest axe that can be set!
'Twill cut my head and chains both off together.
Welcome, most happy stroke, since it will bring
Rest to my eyes, and make a slave a king.
[*Exit with a Guard.*

DUKE. Madam, I suppose this journey has so wearied
You, that it is time to show you the way
To your lodgings, and leave you to your
Repose.

GUARD. Make way there for the duke!

AMPH. My lord, you had best attend the duke, because
'Tis a respect due to him.

ORT. I shall, madam,
At your command. [*Exeunt.*

Digitized by Google

AMPH. How has my tongue belied my too true heart,
In speaking hate unto
The duke, and love to Ortellus! I hate the duke?
So eyes do sleep, that long have known no rest.
How could my lips give passage to such words,
And not have clos'd for ever?
Not by my heart's direction, I am sure; for that
So swell'd, being injured by my mouth, as, had
Not pride and reason kept it here from this
Unquiet feat, it would have forc'd away
To Archimedes' breast, and there have whisper'd to
His heart my tongue's untruth. Why should I love
This man, that shows me nothing but contempt
And hate? Rouse, drooping heart, and think
Of that; think of it always, so by degrees
'Twill bring a winter round thee, that in time
Shall chill the heat of thy undone and lost
Affections. O, it is not true that all
Our sex love change, then I might find one path
That leads to it;
That womanish vice were virtue now in me,
'Twould free my heart, and that were charity.

Enter DUKE.

See, where he comes again; O, how I love
And hate that man! Now help me, pride, and fill
My breast with scorn; and pr'ythee, tongue, take heed
You do not falter: hear not, my heart, that will
Distract thy speech, and so betray my feign'd
Unkindness.

DUKE. What, Amphelia all alone?
Weary of your new love already? can't
You pass away the time with him one hour?

AMPH. Were he
No finer man than yourself, to be with him

Digitized by Google

A minute, I should think a
Seven years' penance.
Good heart, lie still, and let my tongue alone.
[*Aside.*
I wonder what a woman can see in you,
Or hear from you, to make her love you.
(I was just going to have said, hate him.) [*Aside.*
O, what a task is this! therefore let me
Advise you to have a mean opinion
Of yourself.

DUKE. Methinks that advice might serve
For yourself. Ha, ha, ha!

AMPH. Have patience, heart, I know I lie: thou need'st
Not tell me so—I had better then confess
My love. [*Aside.*] Do you laugh, duke? [i']faith
So could I at you, till the tears ran down
My cheeks—that they would quickly do, for grief
Would fain unload my eyes.
I must begone,
I cannot longer act this part, unless
I had a heart as hard as his. [*Aside.*

DUKE. What, you are going
Now to your love Ortellus?

AMPH. I am so,
And going from you to him, is pleasure double,
Not only pain to quit, but joy to meet.

DUKE. Make haste then, for your departure will oblige
Me too, so we shall be all pleas'd!

AMPH. Haste I will make, but with unwilling feet:
For every step from him my grief repeats.
[*Aside. Exit.*

DUKE. She's gone, and after her my heart is flown,
'Tis well it has no tongue to make its moan;

Digitized by Google

Then 'twould discover what my pride conceals,
A heart in love (though slighted) love reveals.
Yet though I love her still, she shall not know;
Her hate shall seem my joy, which is my woe.
My constancy I'll outwardly disguise,
Though here within I am not half so wise.
Yet rather than disclose my doating fate,
I'll wound my heart by counterfeiting hate.
To whine, it wou'd the worst of follies prove,
Since women only pity when they love.
With how much scorn she gave me welcome home,
Ortellus in her hand, to show my doom!
Me and my triumphs she did so despise,
As if they'd been unworthy of her eyes.
'Tis well to her I show'd as much disdain;
I'd rather perish than she guess my pain.
But O, the horrid act she makes me do,
To fool a woman that is young and true!
So damn'd a sin, that hell could not invent,
It is too foul for any punishment;
To question those above I am afraid,
Else I would ask them, why they woman made.

Enter PHILIDOR.

O my mad cousin, your servant.
Whither so fast?
PHIL. So fast, sir? why,
I have been hunted by a pack of hounds
This three hours,
And damn'd deep-mouth'd hounds too, [sir] no less than
Three couple of nurses, three couple
Of plaguy hunting bitches, and with them
Three couple of whelps, alias children, sir.

Digitized by Google

They have rung me such a ring this morning
Through every by-turning that leads to a bawdy
House, I wish'd myself earth'd a thousand
Times, as a fox does when he is hard-run,
But that they wou'd have presently digged me
Out with their tongues.

DUKE. Faith, Philidor,
'Tis no news to me; for I have known thee
From sixteen at this course of life. What, and these
Children were all your bastards, and your nurses
Coming to dun you for money?

PHIL. Something of that's in it, I think, sir.

DUKE. Well, coz, I'll leave thee to thy wildness; a fitter
Companion much for thee than I at this time.

PHIL. Why, sir, I hope nothing has happened
To trouble you?

DUKE. No, no;
My grief, alas! is far beyond express,
To tell it to a friend can't make it less. [*Exit.*

PHIL. Wou'd I were at the wars again: I fear
No sword half so much as the tongue of one
Of these nurses; and the youling of th' children
Are more dismal to my ears than the groans
Of dying men in a battle. I am
At this time in law with six or seven
Parishes about fath'ring of bastards;
Tis very fine truly! and yet me thinks
'Tis a hard case that I should be sued for
Multiplying the world,
Since death makes bold with bastards,
As well as other children. The very picture
Of a nurse and child in her arms wou'd fright
Me now. O, from that sight deliver me!

Digitized by Google

Enter Nurse and Child as he is going out.

Ha! and here they come: pox on't, what luck have
I after saying my prayers? it shall be a
Fair warning to me; now am I started
Again, and must go run t'other course.
[*Offers to run away.*
1ST NURSE. 'Squire Philidor, 'Squire Philidor!
[*She runs after him.*
PHIL. How deaf
Am I now! 'tis well I know this by-way
To avoid her.

Enter Second Nurse and meets him.

Ha! S'death, another?
The devil appearing here too?
2D NURSE. O my proper
Young 'squire, stay, stay, d'ye hear, sir?
PHIL. No, indeed, won't I. Yet I know one way
More to avoid them.

Enter Third Nurse.

Ha! another coming
Here too? Nay then, I find I am in hell,
Before I thought I shou'd. What will become
Of me now?
3D NURSE. O 'squire, I thought I should
Never have spoken with your worship.
PHIL. No, by this
Light, shou'd you not, if I could have holp it.
[*Aside.*
1ST NURSE. I wonder, 'squire, at your conscience, t'avoid
Your pretty babes as you do.

Digitized by Google

PHIL. So, now it
Begins, I am like to have sweet music
From the comfort of these nurses' tongues.
1ST NURSE. Saving your presence, sir, I think here are
Three as sweet babes as ever sucked teat,
And all born within the year too, besides
Three more that your worship has in our street.
PHIL. A very hopeful generation! sure,
This was a great nut year![1]
Well, if all trades fail, I may go
Into some foreign plantation, where
They want people, and be well paid for my
Pains: wou'd I were there now!
1ST NURSE. Codge, codge,
Dos a laugh upon a dad? In conscience, sir,
The child knows your worship.
PHIL. A very great comfort!
1ST NURSE. My young master here is as like your worship
As e'er he can look; has your tempting eyes
To a hair: I cou'd not choose but smile
To myself t'other day; I was making him clean
About the secrets, to see that[2] God had sent him
In a plentiful manner; it put me half
In mind of your worship. I am sure I
Have been at double the expense of other
Nurses, in eating choice meat, to make my
Milk good for my young master, because I
Would not spoil the growth of any one of his
Members.
2D NURSE. Nay, for that, neighbour, I have ate
As good, or better, meat than you, every day

[1] [See Haslitt's "Proverbs," 1869, 275.]
[2] [Old copy, *what*.]

Digitized by Google

In the week: I never touch'd a bit of
Salt meat, for fear of spoiling my child's blood.
PHIL. Considering how well 'tis born. [*Aside.*
3D NURSE. Nay, neighbours, for that I have been at greater
Charge than either of you, in choice diets,
To breed good milk for my young mistress here.
1ST Nurse. You lie.
2D NURSE. You are a quean.
1ST NURSE. And you're a whore.
Marry, your husband is the notedest
Cuckold in all our street.
2D NURSE. You lie, you jade,
Yours is a greater.
PHIL. Hiss! Now for a battle
Royal.
1ST NURSE. If I lay the child out of my
[*Lay their children down, and fight.*
Arms, I'll pull off your head-clothes, you—
Carrion!
2D NURSE. Marry, come, if thou durst.
PHIL. 'Tis best for me to be a coward,
And march off from this bloody fight.
ALL NURSES. Hold, hold, the 'squire is going away.
PHIL. So, nothing could have parted them this three
Hours, but the fear of losing me. [*Aside.*
1ST NURSE. What, wou'd
Your worship have left us without paying us
For nursing your children? you have a conscience,
With a pox to you!
PHIL. So, now will they end
Their war in vollies of shot upon me.
I have but one thing now to do. With ev'ry
One of these hags have I been forc'd to lie,
Which they took as satisfaction for payment

Digitized by Google

For two months' nursing. Perhaps, rather
Than they will have it known to one another,
They'll hold their tongues and leave me?
Well, my three sweet harmonious nurses, what is due to you?

1ST NURSE. Due! why, there was twelve months
Due for nursing; 'tis true, two months your squireship
Satisfied me for.

2D NURSE. And me too.

3D NURSE. And me
Likewise.

PHIL. Harkye, if you will not be gone,
I'll tell.

1ST NURSE. No, marry, won't I, till I have
My money.

2D NURSE. Don't think to fright me, but pay me.

3D NURSE. I fear you not; pay me my money.

PHIL. Pox on't, 'twill not do, I must try another
Way.—Boy, was the wolf fed to-day?

BOY. No, sir.

PHIL. Go fetch him quickly, to dine with these ladies. [*Exeunt* NURSES.
So! I thought I should set them going. He!
The devil, they have left the children behind them.
This was a very cunning device of mine.
Now am I in a pretty condition. Troth, a
Very noble Anabaptist progeny!
For the devil a one of these were ever
Christen'd; for I have run so much upon
Tick to the parsons for christening of
Children, that now they all refuse to make
Any bastards of mine a Christian
Without ready money; so that I'll have
This boy bred up a parson, that he may
Christen himself and the rest of his sisters

Digitized by Google

And brothers. What shall I do, when these infants,
Begin to be hungry, and youl for th' teat?
O, that a milk-woman wou'd come by now!
Well, I must remove my flock from hence. Small
Coal, small coal, will you buy any small coal?
Pox on it. I could never light of any
But fruitful whores. Small coal, small coal!
[*Exit.*

ACT II.

Enter ZORANZO, *as in prison.*

ZOR. Sure, 'tis not kind of those great pow'rs above,
To add these chains to me that am in love.
As to my bed of straw, I am content,
Since any bed from her is punishment.
To lie on down of swans would be hard rest,
Could I not make my pillow on her breast.
O Amarissa, wert thou here with me,
I would not sell these bonds for liberty.
Ransoms that prisoners give to be set free,
I'd give as much to lie in chains by thee.
Here is her picture. O, thou too like shade,
[*Pulls out her picture.*
To look on it my eyes are half afraid,
It so presents my joy and misery;
Since 'tis the nothing of that all to me.
The greatest pain to any lover's heart,
Is to remember when they are apart;
For thoughts of joys, when there's a bar betwixt,
Are worse than poison with a cordial mix'd.

Digitized by Google

Enter AMPHELIA *and* JAILOR.

AMPH. Well said, jailor, here's for thy pains.
Brave pris'ner,
Perhaps this visit may appear but strange
To you, till you have heard me speak—Know then,
When you receiv'd the sentence of your death, you seem'd
To meet it with so brave a soul, as if
The sound had not displeas'd your ears. Thus did
Your courage fill my eyes with wonder, and
My heart with pity.
Straight I resolv'd to give you all my helps
To set you free, which now I offer to
You.
ZOR. Madam, could I tell you what to say I
Wou'd begin; I have nothing but poor thanks
To offer to you, and those, though millions, were
Not half enough. Compassion shown unto
The miserable heaven can only recompence;
Therefore, in my dying prayers, I will beg from thence
A blessing to reward your pity.
AMPH. Sir,
The joy of your escape will pay my pains;
All my endeavours I will set at work:
The time is short, therefore I must make haste.
Expect to hear of me again with speed.

Enter ORTELLUS, *as she is going out.*

ZOR. What can this mean? heaven grant she does not
Love me; I wou'd not wish so brave a heart
So great a punishment, since my love's fix'd already.

Digitized by Google

ORT. Madam, I have been seeking you; pray, whence
Came you? This is no usual place to find you In.

AMPH. I was only walking this way, sir.

ORT. I'll wait on you presently.—I suspect
She has been at the prison; I will inform
Myself by the jailor; and yet perhaps
She has bid him to deny it.

[*Steps back to the Jailor.*

The lady
Amphelia says she has left one of
Her gloves behind her in the prison, and
Has sent me for it.

JAIL. I'll go see straight, sir.

ORT. She has been there, it seems, then. Madam, I
Fancy you have been to see the prison.

AMPH. Who, I?
What makes you think so?

ORT. Why, am I mistaken?

AMPH. Yes; what should I do there?

ORT. Nay, that's the question,
But there you have been just now, and with the Pris'ner too.

AMPH. Sure, you dream.

ORT. She's false, I find:
I'll try her love to me. [*Aside.*
Madam, since you
Have been pleased to show your kindness publicly
To me, I take this time to beg my happiness,
Which is, that a priest may join our hands

AMPH. I will not marry yet.

ORT. Why, pray, madam?

AMPH. For a very good reason, because I ha'n't A mind to't.

ORT. Will you give me another reason?

Digitized by Google

AMPH. I need not: that's sufficient.
ORT. You love me, do you not?
AMPH. You know I have declar'd it.
ORT. But (sure) you'll not deny me twice?
AMPH. Not, if you ask but once.
ORT. Fie, fie, this modesty's a thief to lovers,
And robs them of their time. Come, come,
Say aye, and blush.
AMPH. I'll not say aye, nor blush.
ORT. If you had any modesty, you wou'd.
AMPH. You said
Just now I had too much.
ORT. Too much
Of impudence, you mean.
AMPH. What's that to say?
ORT. Why, truth.
AMPH. Get you out, and wash your tongue:
'Tis foul.
ORT. 'Tis like you heart then,
But that it cannot lie as much.
AMPH. Most valiant lord,
To give the lie to petticoats!
ORT. Why did you
Deny your being in prison?
AMPH. Not for fear of you;
I was with the brave prisoner,
What then?
ORT. You went to make love to him.
You had best use your time well; 'twill
Be short and sweet: your dear will not be so
Proper a man by the head within this
Two days. False woman! you've a heart that flies
From one man's breast to another: all the
Inconstancy of your sex is constancy
To this of yours: you have deceived the duke
Already; that might have been my warning.

Digitized by Google

AMPH. Faith, and so
It might; th' duke in all things so far excels
You, that you were a fool to think, when once
My heart bid him farewell, that it design'd
No better a change than you. Troth, your mistaken;
It had a farther journey to make, and so
Took your breast for an inn only, to lie
By the way.
ORT. Base woman! is't not enough that you
Have fool'd me, but you must mock me too? Heaven
Hold my hand from murdering thee!
AMPH. Fright those that fear you. [*Exit.*
ORT. Curses of all fool'd men (like me) light heavy
On thee! Revenge begins to fill my heart,
And I will pour it out on this base woman.
I know the way: I'll to the duke.

Enter DUKE.

I am
Glad I have met your highness, for I have
Business to impart to you that concerns your life.
DUKE. What is't, Ortellus?
ORT. Know, sir,
Amphelia, that——
DUKE. Loves you?
ORT. No, sir, she loves
The pris'ner.
DUKE. 'Tis impossible.
ORT. 'Tis very true, sir,
I caught her coming from him! she's designing
His escape, and for aught I know, her love
To him may put other thoughts into her head.
DUKE. What d'ye mean?

Digitized by Google

ORT. She may design your life;
A woman that is ill, exceeds a man
In mischief.

DUKE. My lord, I thank your care. If you
Can track her farther, pray let me know; in the
Meantime I shall prevent her ill intentions.

ORT. My diligence shall not be wanting. So,
Since I can have no love, revenge shall be
My mistress. [*Aside. Exit.*

DUKE. O Amphelia! why dost
Thou take such pains to break my heart, when 'tis
So easily done? She needs not secretly
Contrive my death, since half a word from her
Commands my life: her face and heart (sure) can
Not be akin; nature mistook, or else
She was to blame to give one woman two
So great extremes.

Enter ARBATUS.

See, here comes the brother
To wronged Artabella: th' horror of
That sin grows bigger in me,
That I with a deluding love should fool
An innocent, to show an outward scorn
To false Amphelia; for when I heard
She lov'd
Ortellus, I straight made love to this young
Woman, and brought her from her own country,
Only to make Amphelia think I lov'd
Another.

ARB. I hope I don't disturb your highness.

DUKE. No, Arbatus, you are always welcome
To me.

ARB. Sir, I should ask you a question.

DUKE. You freely may.

ARB. Not but

Digitized by Google

I think my sister far unworthy, either
In birth or fortune, to be call'd your wife;
Yet since you have been pleas'd to grace her with
Your love so far, as saying she shall be your
Duchess, be pleas'd to tell me why it is
Not so? she has been here so long, that people
Now begin to say you mean her for your mistress;
Should my ears meet that sound from any tongue,
I'd——

DUKE. Hold, Arbatus, I'm sure I have given
No cause as yet to doubt my kindness to
Your sister.

ARB. Pardon me, sir, in your delay you have.
My sister has no dowry but her virtue,
Youth, and some small stock of beauty. These if
You lov'd her for, you would not waste,
By letting time rob her and you at once.

DUKE. Sir, business of great importance has
Hitherto deferr'd my marriage; believe
Me, you shall find me just.

ARB. A prince's word
Must not be question'd; I have done.

DUKE. O Amphelia! what dost thou make me do? [*Exit.*

ARB. Let him take heed; if he does fool my sister,
Were he ten thousand dukes, I'd cut his throat.
[*Exit.*

Enter PHILIDOR *alone.*

PHIL. I have been quite at t'other end o'th' town,
To put my children out to new nurses,
For I am known to every nurse hereabout;
That they will as soon nurse a cat's kitten
As any child of mine. This is a very

Digitized by Google

Pleasant life I lead, neither is this the
Worst part of it; for there are a certain
Flock of women that I have promis'd marriage,
I expect a volley of shot from them too,
Soon as they find me out. Would wives and children
Were as hard to come by as money, then would
I turn usurer, and let 'em out to use;
For, to say truth, I have enough to spare.

Enter six LADIES, *one after another.*

So, here comes one of my promis'd Virgins!
Nay, a second too—a third—a fourth—a fifth—
A sixth—Welcome, blessed half-dozen; now will I go
Muster my nurses and children too, and go
Against the Great Turk. I am glad to see
They have brought ne'er a coffin, for I expect
Nothing but death from them. I wonder they don't
Begin to ring my funeral peal. See every
One of them beckons to me, as much as to say,
I'd speak with you in private; but the devil
Take me if e'er a one of them do; I find
By this they would not have their business known
To one another; this may be a means for me
To get off for this time—Ladies, you all
Look as if you had something to say to
Me; pray make me so happy as to let
Me know what 'tis. They dare not speak aloud.
[*Aside.*] Will you,
Madam? or you? or you, madam? or you,
Madam? [What] not one of you tell me what
The honour of these visits mean? I see
I am troublesome to you all? therefore
I'll not be longer rude; and so I take

Digitized by Google

My leave—This was good luck, that they should
come
All together; for I had rather be [*Beckon him.*
Alone six hours with the devil, than with
E'er a one of them an half hour—I'll stand close
In this corner till they are all gone.

1ST LADY. Now the pox take him for a cunning
rogue!

2D LADY. A plague take him!

3D LADY. The devil take him!

4TH LADY. If there be e'er a devil worse than
another,
Take him thou!

5TH LADY. O, that I had him alone!

6TH LADY. Was there ever such a rascal?
[*Exeunt at several doors.*

PHIL. So the coast is clear again— [*Peeps out.*

Enter MIRIDA.

S'death, here comes another—O, 'tis none
Of that gang, though.

MIR. I'll lay my head, ne'er a girl in Christendom
Of my age, can say what I can; I'm now
But five years i'th' teens, and I have fool'd
Five several men.

PHIL. A brave wench, by this light!
Sure, it is I in petticoats.

MIR. My humour
Is to love no man, but to have as many
Love me as they please, come cut or long tail.

PHIL. A most divine wench!

MIR. 'Tis a rare diversion, to see what several
Ways my flock of lovers have in being
Ridiculous; some of them sigh so damnably,
That 'tis as troublesome as a windy day.
There's two of them that make their love together,

Digitized by Google

By languishing eye-casts; one of them has
One eye bigger than another, and looks
Like a tumbler; and that eye's like a musket
Bullet, and I expect every minute when he
Will hit me with it, he aims so right at me.
My other lover looks a-squint, and to
See him cast languishing eyes, would make a
Woman with child miscarry. There is also
A very fat man, master Pinguister, and
A very lean man that loves me; I tell the
Fat man I cannot marry him till he's
Leaner, and the lean man I cannot marry
Him till he's fat: so one of them purges
And runs heats every morning, to pull down
His sides, and th' other makes his tailor stuff
His clothes to make him show fatter. O, what
Pleasure do I take in fooling of mankind!

PHIL. Was there ever so witty a wench? 'tis the
Woman of women for my turn. I'll to her—
Thou most renowned female! I cannot hold—

MIR. From what?

PHIL. From kissing thee, [from] loving thee, or what
Thou wilt.

MIR. Troth, y'are very well acquainted, consid'ring
You never saw me before!

PHIL. Saw thee! I have
Heard thee talk this hour, like an angel of light.

MIR. Well, d'ye love me for what you heard me say?

PHIL. Yes, faith, do I; why, you are just of my
Humour; when I heard thee say how many
Men you had fool'd, I was very glad to hear
You come one short of me, for I have fool'd
Six women, and you but five men.

Digitized by Google

MIR. Why,
If you love me, you will be the sixth fool,
To make up my half dozen too.
PHIL. No, I
Won't, and yet I love thee too.
MIR. Why, how will
You help it?
PHIL. Thus: you and I
Will love one another.
MIR. What, whether I will or no?
PHIL. Nay, hear me, we two will love how we please,
When we please, and as long as
We please: do not
These propositions tickle your heart a little?
MIR. I don't mislike them—Now could I take him
About the neck and kiss him for this humour
Of his. And do you say you will love me? [*Aside.*
PHIL. Yes, marry, will I.
MIR. Nay, hold, I won't marry
You.
PHIL. Nor I thee, for all the world.
MIR. And yet
You say you will love me?
PHIL. I tell you
I will: make no more words on it.
MIR. Why then,
Hark you, to be as absolute as you,
I will love you too, that is to say,
Upon the aforesaid conditions.
PHIL. With all my heart; prythee, don't think
That I
Will love thee upon any other terms. But come,
We must seal this
Bargain with hands, hearts, lips.
MIR. No, no; no lips; we will only shake hands

Digitized by Google

Upon't, that's enough for so weighty a contract
As this of ours.
PHIL. But, prythee, let us seal
The bargain.
MIR. No, no, sir, I use no wax
To my lips.
PHIL. Nay, by my troth, I care not
A pin to kiss thee.
MIR. No? look upon me well,
And see if you can say so again.
PHIL. Hum—yes,
Faith, I will give two-pence to kiss thee
Now.
MIR. Well, sir, when I do kiss you, I'll 'bate you
A penny of that.
PHIL. Now you and I will sing this song.
[*He sings.*

My love and I a bargain made,
It is well worth a telling:
When one was weary, we agreed
To part, should both be willing.

MIR. Nay, here I'm for you too. [*She sings.*

And thus our loves will longer last,
Than fools that still are pining:
We'll spend our time in joy and mirth,
Whilst doaters do in whining.

PHIL. Faith, you and I sing very well; we are
Alike in that too: I see either nature
Or the devil, somebody or something, made
Thee and me for one another. Well,
But let us
Remember our conditions: imprimis, I
Will love you.

Digitized by Google

MIR. Item, so will I you.
PHIL. I
Will not say how long.
MIR. Item, nor I neither.
PHIL. Item, it may be I can love you but
A week.
MIR. I don't care if't be but a day.
PHIL. I'll ne'er be tied to any thing.
MIR. Item, thou shalt be tied to what thou wilt
But me.
PHIL. Item, I will come when I please,
And go when I please.
MIR. Item, thou shalt drown
Thyself when thou wilt, or hang thyself when
Thou wilt, or go to the devil when thou wilt.
PHIL. Item, if I should like another woman, I
Will have the liberty of leaving you, without
Any ceremony, but just saying
Good-bye.
MIR. Item, if I should like any
Man better than you, I'll leave you without saying
So much as good-bye.
PHIL. Item, the first that
Sighs of us two, shall fast a week.
MIR. Item, the first
That looks but melancholy of us two,
Shall be starv'd to death.
PHIL. To conclude, we will
Both be as mad as we please.
MIR. Agreed,
And the devil take the tamest!
PHIL. A bless'd bargain!
But hark you, there's one thing I have forgot.
MIR. What's that?
PHIL. Have you had as many children as I?

Digitized by Google

MIR. No, indeed, ha'nt I.
PHIL. Why, then you must let me help you to 'em,
That you may be even with me there too.
MIR. Hold, sir, that bargain's yet to make.
PHIL. Pox on't!
That should have been one of our articles.
MIR. Well, I can stay no longer with you now.
PHIL. Nay, prythee, hold, thou shalt not go yet; I
Can't part with you so soon.
MIR. Ay, but I have
A mind to go, and that is one of our
Articles.
PHIL. Well, but shan't we put that other
Article in, before we part?
MIR. No, no, good-bye to you.
PHIL. Farewell, mettle— [*Exit.*

Enter PINGUISTER, DOCTOR, *and* SERVANTS.

MIR. Look you, master Pinguister, this is the
Measure must meet about your waist, before
I marry you.
PIN. This? why it will not come
About the small of my leg.
[*Tries the measure himself.*
MIR. Sir, I am sorrier
For it: but it must compass your middle before
You can be my dear chuck: your servant, sir,
I am in haste.
PIN. Prythee, thou damnable
Pretty rogue, let me have some comfort from thee,
Before thou goest, either from thy eyes,
Thy cheeks, mouth, or nose, or some part about thee
Consider what a dissolution I
Must undergo for love of thee.

Digitized by Google

MIR. I do indeed, sir; but your servant for this time. [*Exit.*

PIN. Worthy doctor, my hopes are all in you now,
I have tried many physicians already
To make me lean enough for that
Tormenting, pretty fairy devil.

DOCTOR. Truly, sir, your case is very desperate;
But if any man in the world can drain
Your fat from you, 'tis I: sir, we'll begin
Your course out of hand.

PIN. Do you hear, be sure
I have at least two dozen of napkins ready
Upon the spot, to rub me at every turn;
Therefore come you all along with me—
Have mercy on me, I have love and fat
Enough to furnish a whole nation. [*Exeunt.*

ACT III.

Enter AMPHELIA, *going to the prison.*

AMPH. How false a woman to all eyes I seem,
Because I still will hide my constant love!
This way I take will bravely break my heart,
To tell the duke were sneakingly to die:
Since, if he knew that I did love him still,
With basest scorns he'd laugh my soul to death;
Such friendship to this pris'ner I will show,
Shall make the duke believe my heart is there.
To set him free I'll use my utmost art——
Would I could do as much for this poor heart!
This way my love with my designs complies,
Thus one in chains another's chains unties,
I have made the jailor mine already,

Digitized by Google

By promising him these hundred pieces—
'Tis now about the time I appointed
To be here—

Enter JAILOR.

O, yonder's the jailor expecting me—
Here, jailor, here's for thy
Honesty: may the business be done now?
JAILOR. O madam, never at a fitter time; take you
The key and go in to the prisoner;
Whilst I go see the passage clear,
Stand you at th' door, and when I beckon
To you, come away.
AMPH. Honest jailor?
JAILOR. So, now I am just i' th' fashion; I have taken
Money to do her business, and instead
Of doing it I have undone it.

Enter DUKE *and* ORTELLUS.

ORT. 'Tis so, sir.
The jailor has discover'd all to me. Here
He comes.
JAILOR. And please your highness to stand close
Here, for the lady Amphelia is now
With the prisoner; I have given her a
Key to convey him through this private passage;
As soon as I beckon to her, she will come
Away with him. [*Beckons her.*
AMPH. Come, sir, give me your hand;
The jailor beckons me; the way is clear.
DUKE. Hold, lady, and your love, we must shorten
Your journey a little.

Digitized by Google

AMPH. Ha! the duke and Ortellus!
I am betray'd! O villain jailor!
ORT. Sir,
I fear we've interrupted them; it may be
They were going to be married; ha, ha, ha!
AMPH. If I were, 'twas what I refused you,
Ortellus; that makes you so mad.
DUKE. Well, madam,
If you have a mind to be married, a priest
Shall not join your hands, but you shall go both
Back to the prison, and th' jailor shall tie you
Both hands and legs together.
AMPH. Know, sir,
A prison with this brave gentleman
Will be greater paradise to me, than to
Be mistress of your palace. What do I say?
[*Aside.*
DUKE. Well you shall have your desire then; ye shall live
Together, and die together. How could
I speak that word to her? [*Aside.*
ZOR. She die, sir!
Wou'd you destroy so great a world of virtue?
Rather invent two deaths for me, that I
May die for her too. You'll rob
Your dukedom of your greatest treasure to take
Away so blest a life as hers: let not
An axe part such a head and body,
Lest heaven frown and call you murderer. You'll pull
Upon your head all mankind's curse: when nature
Sees her bounty thus rewarded, she will
Turn miser, and will give no more such blessings
To th' world as this fair saint.
DUKE. Well, sir,
I'm satisfied ye like one another, so you

Digitized by Google

Shall both return back to your straw beds, there you
May lie as close together as you please.
AMPH. No, sir, virtue shall lie betwixt us.
DUKE. You will want a pillow, till you come both
To execution, then you shall have one—
A block to lay your heads on.
AMPH. Know, [O] duke,
My head will rest better with his upon a block,
Than with yours on the softest pillow. How
Many lies must I confess, before I die. [*Aside.*
DUKE. Indeed, you'll sleep pretty soundly. See, her scorn
To me makes death a pleasure to her. [*Aside.*
My lord, give order that she may be brought
Immediately to her trial; in the meantime,
Jailor, take them into your custody;
Lay 'em in shackles both. Cousin, many thanks
To you for this timely discovery.
I must leave you awhile. [*Exit.*
ORT. Duke, you shall have
Less to thank me for, else I am deceiv'd.
I've found out he loves Amphelia still,
So she does him. Now will I go possess
Arbatus of this, and tell him how the duke
Intends to fool his sister. He has the
Character of so strict a brother, and so brave
A spirit, that his soul will never digest
This injury without the duke's blood.
Will join with him, and tell him how
The business may be done.
By this, one of these three things shall I have
Either a mistress, dukedom, or a grave.

Enter ARBATUS *and* ARTABELLA.

See, here comes Arbatus and his sister
Artabella; they talk very earnestly.

Digitized by Google

ARB. Sister, I do not like it; the duke will
Fool ye.
ART. Indeed, brother, I am amaz'd
At this delay.
ARB. How does he carry himself
To you?
ART. With all respect imaginable.
ARB. Then there must be something more in't,
That he defers his marriage thus.
ORT. There is
So, sir.
ARB. My lord, heark'ning's but a base office;
But if you have heard it, 'tis no treason.
ORT. No, sir, but it is falseness in the duke,
To use your worthy sister thus. I came
To tell you upon my knowledge, he never
Intended to marry her.
ARB. My lord, though I believe it, you must
pardon
Me, if I wonder at this information
From your lordship, that is his near cousin.
ORT. Sir, you have the character of so brave
A gentleman, conscience and honour
Bids me discover this to you and your sister:
Think of a way of being reveng'd, and here's
My hand and heart to help you.
ARB. Pardon
Me, that I cannot thank you truly, because
I needs must doubt this offer from your lordship.
ORT. What can I say to confirm you? will the
Word and honour of a gentleman do't?
ARB. To me those are things of great value.
ORT. Then here
I give them both.
ARB. But what to do, my lord?
ORT. What you will.
ARB. Perhaps you think I'd have you

Digitized by Google

Ask some place about the court for me, in
Recompense of this injury to my sister?
ORT. No, sir, had you been such a person, I
Should not have trusted you thus far with what
I have said. I say [it] again, I am
Your friend; if you doubt it, you wrong my honour.
ARB. Why then, my lord, to be short, nothing will
Satisfy me, but the duke's——
ORT. What?
ARB. Blood.
ORT. Why,
Thou shalt have it all, if I can help thee
To't; this night will I convey you privately
Into his bed-chamber. Come along with me,
And I will tell you all. [*Exit.*
ARB. My lord, I follow you.
Sister, go to your chamber.
ART. O brother!
Heaven preserve you in this danger.
ARB. Now
It comes into my head, I need not doubt
This lord's truth; he is next heir to the dukedom,
If the duke die without issue.
'Tis base in him the duke's life to pursue,
His blood is only to my sister due. [*Exit.*
ART. False duke, thou justly hast deserv'd thy death;
To cheat the innocent is a double crime;
I had no cunning guard about this heart
To keep it safe from a seducing tongue.
I have lost my heart, which he by falseness won;
How soon is truth and innocence undone! [*Exit.*

Enter PHILIDOR.

PHIL. Pray remember the poor prisoners, pray

Digitized by Google

Remember the prisoners. Well, had I
Not taken this course with the regiment
Of women that I have promis'd to marry,
I should have been devour'd by 'em by this
Time. They came just now into my chamber,
One by one, hoping to have found me alone,
To have preach'd matrimony to me; but,
To my blest deliverance, no sooner
One was there, but another came; so I
Persuaded them one by one, to slip up
Into a garret: so still as one knock'd
At the door, the t'other ascended; there
Have I secur'd them with this key, and there
Must I keep them till I have made
Conditions with them.

Enter MIRIDA.

O, here comes Mirida.
Pray remember the poor prisoners, pray
Remember the poor prisoners.

MIR. Who the devil's that, Philidor?

PHIL. The very same, my mettled female.

MIR. Why,
What mad prank art thou playing now?

PHIL. Alack-
A-day, I have great cares upon me; I
Must provide meat for half-a-dozen ladies,
That shou'd have been my spouses. Look up yonder;
In that very garret, for aught I know, they
Must dine and sup at my charge as long as
They live; and thus must I be their cook every
Day, and beg their first and second course.

MIR. I am sorry to hear this, because 'tis
A wilder trick than I have done lately
To any of my lovers. Prythee, let's
Go under the window, and call to them.

Digitized by Google

PHIL. Come away, you shall hear what vollies we shall
Have from the castle. Most excellent
Amazonian ladies, look out, and behold
Your labouring purveyor, what pains he
Takes to victual your castle,
Because he knows you must be long there.
[*Women look out.*

1ST LADY. Rogue!
2D LADY. Rascal!
3D LADY. Villain!
4TH LADY. Dog!
5TH LADY. Slave!
6TH LADY. Hell-hound!

PHIL. Methinks you represent the hemisphere,
Because you are enthron'd so high; your eyes
Appear like stars to us poor mortals here
Below.

1ST LADY. Villain, if we had thee here, thou
Should'st find it hell.

MIR. Pray, ladies, what makes you
So angry? Methinks the gentleman is
Your friend, and has holpt you nearer heaven
Than perhaps e'er a one of you would ever
Have been.

2D LADY. What's that you say, little piss-a-bed?

MIR. Sweet angels, will never a one of you
Please to descend?

3D LADY. Thou little devil,
If we had thee here, we'd throw thee down again
With such a swing, we'd knock that rascal's brains
Out with thy fall.

MIR. Then, angry ladies, I
Shall stay here—see, has not that lady
A very fair nose at this distance?

PHIL. Has

Digitized by Google

Not t'other there a mouth, that when she opens it
To scold, looks like a giant's cave?
4TH LADY. S'life, we'll
Not be abus'd thus; here's a Hercules' statue,
Let's throw it down upon their heads.
[MIRIDA *runs away, and meets* PINGUISTER *and stops.*

Enter PINGUISTER *and* DOCTOR.

MIR. Hold, Philidor, we shall have some new sport
Of my making now; here comes my fat lover,
Let us stand close and hear a little.
PING. Doctor,
Pray, how many stools may I happily have
This morning by this purgation, already,
Taken by me?
DOCTOR. Doubtless, one hundred, sir.
PING. Save me, 'twill swinge my bum-gut then: but how
Much fat may it bring away?
DOCTOR. Peradventure,
Half-a-dozen pounds.
PING. Love! what dost thou make
Me do? But, worthy doctor, from what parts of
My continual purg'd body is this store
Of fat extracted?
DOCTOR. Chiefly from your waist
And calves of your legs.
PING. And how many purges
May make my waist and legs' calves, alias, calves
Of my legs, delightful to her eye, sir?
DOCTOR. Sir, some ten purges: that is to say, you
Must have a thousand stools to drain your treasure
Of fat *totaliter* from ye.

Digitized by Google

PING. O love!
O Mirida, for thee I daily purge:
For thee I daily stink. I find
I must keep company with the bears, that I
May be able to endure my own stink the better.
DOCTOR. Come, sir, I think you had best begin to run
Your heats.
PING. O me! nothing cou'd e'er a made
A footman of me but love. Well, I must
Put on my pumps.
PHIL. By this light, this is the
Pleasantest scene as e'er I saw.
PING. Nay, doctor,
If you mean I should run, lend me your hand
To help me up. [*Puts on nightcaps.*
Now, in the name of love,
I most unwillingly start.
PHIL. S'death! he runs
Like a duke.
[*He runs round, and sometimes goes out to untruss.*
MIR. His stools come very quickly upon
Him, one after another.
PING. I must run
With my breeches in my hand, my purge visits
My bum-gut so intolerably often.
DOCTOR. Now, sir, for a cheerful loose.
PING. By my heart,
Master Doctor, I wonder at your cruelty,
To ask a cheerful loose of me; am not
I loos'd sufficiently by
Your furious purgations?

Enter LEAN-MAN *and his* TAILOR.

MIR. O, here comes
My lean lover.

Digitized by Google

LEAN. Tailor, do I look gross
Enough now?
TAILOR. Yes, I'll assure you, you seem
Very corpulent.
LEAN. Well, I am sure if thou
Hast not made me large enough, thou wilt thy bill.
Now have at Mistress Mirida! sure, my
Person will take her. Why, how now, cousin,
[*To* PING.
What makes you running a heat?
PING. I must not stop
To speak with you, but come run by me,
And I will tell you. Why, I see
You know nothing. Mistress Mirida has a
Great kindness for me, but cannot marry me
Before I am leaner.
LEAN. She fools him; her kindness is for me,
And bids me make myself fatter, before
We marry. [*Aside.*
PING. But pray, coz, what makes you stuff yourself so
To appear big?
LEAN. Yes, I do it to please
Mistress Mirida's eye; she bid me.
PING. So she makes
An ass of him. [*Aside.*
LEAN. Well, I won't hinder you
In your exercise,
Farewell. Now I'll to Mistress Mirida. [*Exit.*
PING. Good bye, good bye.
God's fish, my purge again! O, O!

Enter CLOWN *with a cudgel, and beats him in again.*

CLOWN. A nasty rogue, when a man's asleep,
To come and do it just in his mouth! I'll swinge ye.

Digitized by Google

PING. O, hold, good sir, 'twas the violence of my physic;
Would my paunch were out, if I saw you!
PHIL. Hold,
What do ye mean to beat a
Gentleman thus?
CLOWN. Let
Him learn more manners, then, against next time.
PING. O Mistress Mirida, I have been purg'd
And beaten most extremely for your sake;
Sure, I'm lean enough now to marry you.
MIR. That I cannot tell; but I have the measure
In my pocket of what compass you were
About when you first were in love with me,
And also the measure to that you must
Fall before I marry you. Here was your full
Bigness, which was three yards about: let me see;
You are fallen a yard.
PING. Well, and won't you marry me then?
MIR. That you'll see presently; for here's the measure
Must compass you about before I do.
This wants a yard yet.
PING. Well, and d'ye think it's possible
For me ever to become such a grig
As that measure will meet about me?
Why, to do that you must embowel me, and then
Shave the remaining rolls of fat off from
My melting sides.
DOCTOR. Here, pray, sir, throw this blanket
About you; you will catch your death.
PING. Look you,
Unreasonable mistress, thus am I
Fain to do every day, because I would
Melt myself into a husband for you:
You may hear my guts at this time boiling

Digitized by Google

Within me; I am confident they will
Have the same fat as a kettle full of
Black puddings that are over-boiled, and so
Broken.

DOCTOR. Come, sir, you must needs go to bed.

PING. That is to say, I must go swim; for that
I do constantly in a sea of sweat.

MIR. Ay, pray, sir, I wou'd not for all the world
You should miscarry.

PING. Indeed, I look as
If I were with child. Lady, if you have
Any thoughts of going to heaven, have
Mercy on me.

MIR. Farewell, garbage.

PING. O heat! O fat! O love! what will you
Do with me? [*Exit with* DOCTOR.

PHIL. Was there ever such sport as we have
seen?

MIR. Heaven send thee and I many a fair
Year to be mad together in.

PHIL. Ay, as
You say, give us but time enough, and when
We grow tame, let the bell toll for us.
But stay, let us return
Back to my virgins, that I may
Make my conditions with 'em,
Before they get out of prison.

Enter all the LADIES *and bind them.*

S'death! they
Are all got out already.

1ST LADY. O, have we
Met with you now, ye pair of devils? we'll lay
You fast enough. So good night to you, lie
There till we come again. [*Exit* LADIES.

PHIL. Pox on't, was there

Digitized by Google

Ever such luck as this? There was a trap-
Door in the garret, which they found and got
Out at.

MIR. What think ye now of this day's sport
Philidor?

PHIL. Plague on it, well enough; if
They had not bound us back to back together,
We might have pass'd away the time.
Malicious jades! no way of bridling us
But this? Pr'ythee turn about thy head, and let
Us try if we can kiss one another
A little.

MIR. No, no, we won't
Try for fear you should put your neck out of
Joint with turning it too much of one side.

PHIL. Well, fortune should be more careful
Of accidents of this nature, and not
Contrive them so cross.

Enter BOY.

PHIL. O, here comes a boy. Here, sirrah, come hither.

BOY. What say you, master?

PHIL. Here, prythee, unbind us, I'll give thee a Shilling.

BOY. Why, sir, can't you unbind yourselves?

PHIL. Simple boy, thou seest we can't.

BOY. And have ye a mind to be unbound?

PHIL. Yes, yes, we are in great torments
To lie thus.

BOY. Then, sir, you shall give me a piece,
And your hat, because I have never
A one, or else farewell.

PHIL. Well, stay, here take it out of my pockets.

BOY. Yes, that I will do, before I unbind you,
And your hat too. [*Exit.*

Digitized by Google

PHIL. The rogue's too nimble for me.
MIR. Well, Philidor, farewell, I must
Go put
On a clean hankerchief.
PHIL. And I
Must go see if I can find a believing
Haberdasher, else I shall be very
Ceremonious to every one I meet. [*Exit.*

Enter FIDDLER.

MIR. A fiddle! nay, then I am made again;
I'd have a dance, if I had nothing but my
Smock on. Fiddler, strike up, and play my jig,
Call'd, *I care not a pin for any man.*
FID. Indeed I can't stay: I am going to
Play to some gentlemen.
MIR. Nay, thou shalt stay
But a little.
FID. Give me half-a-crown then.
MIR. I have no money about me. But here, take
My handkerchief. [*Dance and Exit.*

ACT IV.

Enter ORTELIUS *and* ARBATUS, *as going into the* DUKE'S *bed-chamber, and the* DUKE *in bed.*

ORT. So, I will keep the door, whilst you
Dispatch him.
ARB. My lord,
I find you truly noble. Why, duke; why, duke! I say.
Methinks my voice should wake his guilty soul,
Nothing but innocence can sleep secure;

Digitized by Google

Then why, good heaven, does he take
Such rest?
Awake, thou drowsy devil! Duke, my sister's
Wrongs do call thee from thy sleep; methinks
The sound of those should pierce thy ears. Why, duke!

DUKE. What bold voice is that?

ARB. One that will be more
Bold with you.

DUKE. Who is't so impudent as
To break my sleep?

ARB. 'Tis I, Arbatus, that
Will put thee into a wonder.

DUKE. Ha! what means
That dagger in thy hands?

ARB. Canst thou ask that
Question? it is to tickle thy false heart.

DUKE. Ha, ha, ha! you jest, you jest.

ARB. What,
Does the conceit on't make you laugh already?
I was resolved to wake thee, before
I sent thee to hell, because thou may'st know
Of whose errand thou goest.

DUKE. Come, come, leave
Your foolery, lest you heat my blood.

ARB. If
I do, I will let it out all, and that
Will quickly cool it. I would give thee time
To say thy prayers now, but that I know
Thy sin to be so great, that heaven will
Not pardon thee.

Enter ARTABELLA.

ORT. Who's that?

ART. 'Tis I, my lord:
Artabella. Let me in quickly, that I

Digitized by Google

May have one stab at his false heart, before
My brother has put him past feeling.
ORT. And so thou shalt, brave girl.
ARB. Now, duke, good night to you, and the devil
Send you good rest.
ART. Hold, brother.
ARB. Who's that?
ART. 'Tis I thy injur'd sister, come to make
The first hole in that base duke's heart; it is
My right.
ARB. Begin, begin then, that I may
Make an end.
ART. Stay, brother, not too fast,
Has he said his prayers?
ARB. His pray'rs! why none
But the devil will hear them. Come, come, sister,
Give me the dagger again; you waste time.
ART. And so I will, the duke shan't die.
ARB. How, not die?
ART. Not die, I say.
ARB. Then you are his whore all this while, and wou'd
Have him live, that you may be so still.
ART. Brother,
Another word so foul, I'll strike this dagger
Through your heart,
Therefore hear me speak. Know then,
'Tis I that cannot love the duke, which he
Would never tell you, knowing 'twould make you angry
With me.
ARB. Nay then I'll kill you for fooling
A brother and your reputation thus.
DUKE. Hold, Arbatus, she says it but to save
My life. 'Tis I have fooled you both, therefore
Strike here.

Digitized by Google

ARB. And so I will, then.
ART. Hold, brother;
Pull not a load of sins upon your head;
'Tis I have been to blame, indeed I have,
With loving him too much.
ARB. Then thou shalt die.
DUKE. Hold, sir, heaven will frown on you for ever,
If you shed one drop of that pure blood; upon
My word, 'tis I.
ARB. Keep not my tortur'd soul
Thus in suspense. One of you tell me true,
And that quickly too, else I will destroy
You both, and that's the surest way not
To mistake.
DUKE. Then be assur'd 'tis I.
ART. Brother,
'Tis not, 'tis I.
ARB. Heyday! heyday! I know
Not what to do or say.
[*Throws down his sword and goes away.*
ORT. So, he is dead,
I hope.
ARB. No more than you are.
ORT. How so?
ARB. Come,
My lord, as you go, I'll tell you.
[*Exeunt* ARBATUS *and* ORTELLUS.
DUKE. O Artabella, why didst take my sin
Upon thyself, hiding thy innocence
With a face of guilt? My death had been not
Punishment enough, because I have wrong'd
So fair a life as yours. Which way to ask
Forgiveness, I can't tell; there are no pardons for
Such sins as mine; the only way to do
Thee right, is this. [*Offers to kill himself.*

Digitized by Google

ART. Hold, sir, my life
Shall follow yours, if you strike.
DUKE. Why would'st thou
Have me live?
ART. Because I love you, sir.
DUKE. And that's the only reason I would die.
ART. Why, would it be kindly done to show
My eyes your blood?
DUKE. Yes, far more kind than live, and show
Thy heart no love. O Artabella, that thou wert
My sister!
Nothing but brother's love were then
Thy due; and I could richly pay thee in
That coin, a million more than ever brother did.
ART. Wou'd nature then had made me so, or else
Had given me never a heart.
DUKE. What wou'dst
Thou have me do, poor Artabella?
ART. Nothing
But love me, sir.
DUKE. See, what thou doest ask
A man, a god wou'd do; and yet I can't;
'Tis not thy want of beauty, but my fate.
Angels themselves, to look upon thy face,
Wou'd take a journey twice a day from heaven.
ART. If you would come, though far a shorter way,
You shou'd be much more welcome.
DUKE. Sweet tongue, lie still, offer no more such love,
As gods themselves to have wou'd think a bliss,
Since all thy kindness does but wound my heart,
To see thine shipwreck'd in a sea of love,
And cannot give it harbour in my breast.
ART. Sir, let me beg one thing of you then.
DUKE. With all my soul, be it my dukedom, and
'Tis thine.

Digitized by Google

ART. 'Tis no such great request;
'Tis only when you meet me, say: I hate
Thee, Artabella.
DUKE. Why, could that word please thee?
ART. No; but to hear it said by you, would bring
My death, then I wou'd thank you for my rest.
Would you not come unto my grave, sir?
DUKE .O yes, and make thy coffin float with a sea
Of tears.
ART. Fair sir, of what?
DUKE. Of grief.
ART. O me!
A sea of tears, and yet not one of love!
Waste not such precious drops upon my grave, it will
Not satisfy my hovering soul to see
Your eyes drop pity without love. Farewell, sir.
O for a grave, that were a resting-place;
Good heart, be kind, and break apace! [*Exit.*
DUKE. Heaven love thee for me! Base Amphelia,
Thou art the author of my horrid sin. [*Exit.*

Enter PHILIDOR *and* MIRIDA.

PHIL. Thou talk'st of sport, Mirida; if all the
Sport we have had already with our lovers,
Come not short of this, hang me. You say you have
Invited them already to my funeral.
MIR. Yes, yes.
[PHILIDOR *is laid out like a corpse.*
PHIL. So, so, methinks my body lies
In great state, to see the tribe that will come
By-and-by; here will be half a dozen

Digitized by Google

Chief mourners, which should have been my wives, and
Some three or four sons and heirs, besides three
Or four hopeful daughters; these, with
The congregation of nurses, will howl me
A pleasant dirge. Mirida, you being my
Executrix, must carry yourself very gravely;
Here's my will, which you must read to 'em; I'll be
The priest myself. Hark, somebody knocks
[*Knocks within.*
At the gate.

Enter BOY.

BOY. Sir, they are all
Come.
PHIL. Let 'em in.—Now, Mirida, manage
Your business well.
MIR. Let me alone, I'll warrant ye.

Enter LADIES *and* NURSE.

ALL LADIES. Ah! my poor dear, dear.
ALL NURSES. Ah! my poor dear master! ah, child,
Cry for thy poor dad. [*Kiss the hearse.*
PHIL. What a dog-kennel's here! how they howl! [*Aside.*
MIR. When
The passions of your grief are over, pray
Hear me speak, because it concerns you all.
PHIL. Pox of thy gravity, Mirida. [*Aside.*
MIR. Nay, hold your tongue; if
You set me once a laughing, I shall spoil
Your funeral. [*Aside.*

Enter PINGUISTER *and* LEAN-MAN.

So here comes my fat lover and my

Digitized by Google

Lean one! Welcome, gentlemen, I
Was afraid I shou'd not have had your company.
PING. Really, sweet lady, I have taken a purge
To-day (as I do constantly, for love
Of you) which has retarded me,
By reason of its operation, neither can
I say it has yet finished.
MIR. Sir, please you
To sit down, and you,
Master Pinguister.
PING. Lady, I shall embrace your offer, and shall
Press your chair. By my heart, madam, this chair
Was fitter for a jackdaw than [for] me.
[*Sits down and breaks the chair.*
Nay, they make such chairs now-a-days, that had I
A grudge to an upholsterer, I would
Desire no greater revenge than to sit
Down upon every chair in his shop.
MIR. Truly,
Sir, I am sorry for your fall.
Ladies and gentlewomen, pray give your
Attention to my dear deceas'd cousin's
Will. Poor young man! he was kill'd yesterday
By a duel:
He liv'd but two hours after he was hurt,
Which time he made use of, to settle something
On all you here, his worthy friends.
OMNES. A good young man.
MIR. Imprimis, I bequeath my soul, as other
People use to do, and so my body.
Item, I give to Mistress Mary, for a reason that she knows, £500. Item, £500 to Mistress Margaret, for a reason she knows. Item, £500 to Mistress Sarah, for a reason she knows. Item, £500 to Mistress Martha, for a reason she knows. Item, £500 to Mistress Alice, for a reason she knows.

Digitized by Google

Item, £500 to Mistress Eleanor, for a reason she knows. And so to all the rest. Item, To my nurses, I leave each of them £20 a year apiece for their lives, besides their arrears due to them for nursing. These sums [*speaks low*] of money and legacies I leave to be rais'd and paid out of my manor of Constantinople, in which the Great Turk is now tenant for life.

If they should hear how their legacies [*Laughs aside.*
Are to be paid, how they'd fall a-drumming on
His coffin!

Item, I leave to Master Pinguister,
A very fat man.—

PING. I am so.

MIR. An infallible
Receipt to make him lean.

PING. So I hope the
Dead may do what the living cannot.

MIR. I leave to a certain lean gentleman,
Whom I have seen in my cousin Mirida's
Company, a sure receipt to make him fat.

LEAN. I find he knew I was to marry his cousin.

MIR. I desire my body to be carried to the
Grave by the six aforesaid gentlewomen.—
So, ladies, now you have heard his will,
Be pleased to take up the body: nurses,
You are to follow next; now which o' you
Will lead me?

PING. I will, madam.

LEAN. By my bones, but you shan't.

PING. By my fat, but I will, sir.

MIR. Nay, gentlemen, pray, fall not out. Well, one
Of you lead me one half of the way. [*Exeunt.*

PING. Agreed,
Sir, take you her hand first,

Digitized by Google

A very timely proposition, for my purge
Works again. Save me !
Whereabouts is the closet ?
[*Goes out, and comes in again.*
What a loose must I run to overtake them
Now ! else I shall not lead my mistress the last
Half-way. Deliver me from love and purges !

Enter all again with a coffin ; PHILIDOR *and* MIRIDA *shut them into the vault.*

PHIL. So, there let 'em converse with the dead a
While ; I would rather have 'em there than above
Ground : here will I keep 'em till they have
All quitted me under their hands and seals.
MIR. O, the sport that we shall have by-and-by !
Well, but I must go home a little, my
Father will miss me : where shall we meet
Again ?
PHIL. Just here.
MIR. I will not fail. [*Exeunt.*

Enter AMARISSA *just arrived.*

AMA. I'm come too late, and yet too soon am here,
Since dear Zoranzo's death is now so near.
On the same block with him I'll lay my head,
That our two bodies may have but one bed.
Thus are our nuptial joys decreed by fate,
Our wedding and our burial bear one date.
Sure, I'm the first of maids that ever gave
Her body to her lover in a grave.
Alas ! in cold embraces we must meet,
With icy kisses in a winding-sheet.
Yet though this life denies us time to love,
The other life will not so cruel prove ;

Digitized by Google

Our souls so fast in lovers' knots we'll tie,
That when the headsman strikes, they both shall fly,
Twined in one another through the air,
And be at rest, whilst other souls despair.

Enter JAILOR.

This is the prison,
And here's the jailor, I believe. Pray, sir,
Do you belong unto the prison?
JAILOR. Belong!
Yes, I am the keeper of it.
AMA. Is not
Here one Zoranzo a prisoner?
JAILOR. Yes,
But he won't be here long, for he is
To die anon.
AMA. Ah me! sir, I am his
Sister; pray help me to him, that I may speak
With him before that cruel hour; I love
Him so, that I must needs die with him; I'll
Petition the duke that I may; sure, he'll not
Deny me that request.
JAILOR. I can tell you a way that you may be sure
To have that favour granted.
AMA. Tell it me, and I'll thank ye.
JAILOR. Why, if you'll try to convey him out of prison,
As another lady has already, you may
Bear them company too.
ARA. Why, has there any lady endeavour'd it?
JAILOR. Yes, one that is his mistress, and they are
Both to die together.

Digitized by Google

AMA. Ha! what is't I hear? his mistress, say you?

JAILOR. Yes, mistress; they both lie as contentedly
By one another, as if they were not two.

AMA. Curse him, good heaven, ye cannot throw too many
Curses on him. Here, jailor, take this,
And let me speak with the prisoner.

JAILOR. Madam,
You shall.

Enter ZORANZO *and* AMPHELIA *as in prison, in chains.*

ZOR. Amarissa! are my eyes false, or is it
Truly she?

AMA. Your eyes are true; but 'tis your heart that's false.

ZOR. I am deceiv'd! that cannot be her tongue.

AMA. Should it speak otherwise to thee, I'd tear
It out, devil, Zoranzo; cursed pair
Of vipers, that in chains of death can practise
Lust, as if no end were nigh. Do not
My wrongs startle thy guilty soul, to think
Of all the torments it must have, that could
With so much falseness murder love? When thou
Art gone to hell, as go thou must, 'twill be
A task for all the devils there,
To torture thee enough. Thy sin is such,
Were I thy headsman, when thou com'st to die,
I'd be a week a-cutting off thy head,
'Twixt every stroke I'd stop; and then I'd hollow
Amarissa in thy ears; thy guilt would be
An echo to my wrongs, and answer to
My cry: wrong'd Amarissa;

Digitized by Google

Which injur'd name repeated to thy ears,
Would make thy soul think hell not half such pain.
Farewell, Zoranzo, I'll come to see your
Head struck off, and your lady's.

ZOR. Base Amarissa, that can conclude me
False, because she saw this lady lie in
Chains by me, and could not ask me how we
Came together. Thus to revile me, and
Not know the truth: I'll scorn to tell her now!

Enter DUKE.

AMA. O sir, be pleas'd to hear a maid's petition,
Though a stranger to you.

DUKE. Fair maid, what is't?

AMA. Zoranzo that's condemn'd to die, may——

DUKE. Not
Live; if that be your request, pray do not
Ask; I shan't grant it.

AMA. No, sir, 'tis that he
May have a thousand deaths, instead of one;
Or one that has more pain than thousands.

DUKE. What makes you thus incens'd against him?

AMA. Heaven knows I have too much cause, sir.
I have
Lov'd him long, and the day he was your prisoner,
Should have been our wedding. News being
brought
To me in my own country, that he was
To die, in flying haste I took this tedious
Journey; with sorrow and with joy I here
Arrived; tears in my eyes for his approaching
Death, smiles on my cheeks to think of dying
With him; but when I came unto the prison gate
I met the jailor, and he told me all,
Then let me in, and to

Digitized by Google

Rejoice my eyes, I saw two devils lie
In chains together, and not half so fast
As chain'd in love.
All my intended kisses then I chang'd
Into as many curses on his heart,
Which with my eyes I spoke as well as tongue.
DUKE. Alas! poor injur'd maid, we must be one
Another's
Petitioners; thy fate is mine;
That woman which you saw with him has prov'd
As false to me, as he to you.
AMA. For heaven's
Sake, sir, let 'em die both; no sight would please
Us like their blood; the jailor
Told me they lie as close together all day
As if they were not two.
DUKE. O, curse on 'em!
AMA. O, the devil take 'em! pray, sir, give order
That they may be brought immediately
To execution.
DUKE. I will.
AMA. I'll go call the jailor, sir.
[*Steps to the prison.*

Enter JAILOR.

DUKE. Jailor, let the prisoners be brought to
Execution straight, I'll be there myself.
AMA. And I too, sir.
DUKE. You shall; we'll go together. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE V.

Enter ALL LADIES, NURSES, PINGUISTER, *and* LEAN-MAN, *as in the vault;* PHILIDOR *as a Crier.*

PHIL. O yes, O yes, O yes! did any man hear tale

Digitized by Google

Or tidings of three nurses, called Three Flanders
Mares, with three sucking colts?—
ALL NURSES. Hark, we are cried
In the streets.
PHIL. And also six maiden ladies, that should
Have been married to a certain
Promising gentleman? —
ALL LADIES. Devil! we are
Cried too.
PHIL. Also a very lean gentleman,
That must be fatter before he's married?—
LEAN-MAN. Hark, that is I?
PHIL. And the hugest loss of
All is one Master Pinguister, a lovely
Fat gentleman, whom all that knew him, doubt him
To be dead upon some privy-house; because
He purged every day for love, by reason
Mistress Mirida would not marry him till
A certain measure that she[1] has will come
About his waist—

Enter MIRIDA.

PING. Crier, I am here, I am here.
PHIL. If any can bring news of the six aforesaid
Virgin ladies, or of the three Flanders nurses
And colts, to one Master Philidor, a very
Conscientious young man—
OMNES. A pox take him!
PHIL. They shall be extremely paid for their pains.
Again, if any can bring tidings of this
Master Pinguister to Mistress Mirida,
She will be very bountiful in her

[1] [Old copy, *he*.]

Digitized by Google

Reward: the poor soul weeps most bitterly
For him.
PING. Does she so, poor wretch? [*Cries aloud.*]
Prythee, good
Crier, go tell her I am not dead, though
I have been buried a great while in the
Vault.
Mercy of my bum-gut, my purge again?
OMNES. You nasty rogue, turn your breech out
of the
Gate then.
[*Goes to do so,* PHILIDOR *kicks him down, he roars out.*
MIR. Philidor, I have broke a vein
With laughing, to hear thy rogueries. I'll call
To Pinguister. Master Pinguister? My
Love, my dear, sure, I hear thy voice?
PING. Who's that,
My dear female?
MIR. The same, fat love.
PING. O, prythee raise me from the dead.
PHIL. Well, ladies and gentlewomen, how
d'ye
Like your crier now?
OMNES. The devil take thee, was it you?
PHIL. The very same.
2D LADY. Well, won't you let us out? pray how-
soever,
Take away this fat gentleman from us;
For he has such a coming looseness, and
'Tis so dark here, that he has
Shit upon every one of us.
OMNES. Well, but won't you let us out?
PHIL. Yes, if you ladies would set your hands
To this paper, to quit me as to all promises,
I will; and also, my reverend nurses,
You must set your hands to this discharge,

Digitized by Google

To quit me from all arrears of nursing:
Else farewell t'ye—
OMNES. Well, well, stay; we will.
[*Set their hands.*
PHIL. So, now you may go take the air
Again; there's the key to let yourselves out.
OMNES. A cheating rogue!
PHIL. Come, Mirida, let's run away, for if
They catch us, murder is the best we can
Hope for. [*Exit, with* MIRIDA.
1ST NURSE. They went this way; let's run after
Them, some one way and some t'other.
[*Exeunt* WOMEN.
PING. So you may, but if I run away, then
Hang me; I am glad of my resurrection
Howsoever. On my conscience, no green
Carcase ever stunk as I did; to my best
Remembrance I went to stool some
Threescore times in the vault, *ergo*
I was beaten threescore times; the
Unmerciful nurses, with their huge
Palm'd hands, every time I went to't,
Play'd at hot-cockles[1] all the while upon
My buttocks. Well, I hope I shall ne'er be
Buried again whilst I live, and so with
That prayer I'll go to bed.

Enter MIRIDA.

MIR. My dear fat love, little dost thou think
how many
Tears I have shed for all thy sufferings; that
rogue
Philidor put a trick upon us all.
PING. Well, and has physic, heats, burial,

[1] [See Thoms' "Anecdotes and Traditions," 1839, p. 95.]

Digitized by Google

Nor resurrection, made me yet lean
Enough to be thy husband? why, I have
Lost as much grease as would furnish
A whole city with candles for a twelvemonth
And all for the love of thee, sweet Mirida.
[*Cries and sobs.*

MIR. Dear love, come sit thee in my lap,
And let me try if I can enclose thy world
Of fat and love within these arms:
See, I cannot nigh encompass my
Desires by a mile.

PING. How is my fat a rival to my joys!
[*Cries.*
Sure, I shall weep it all away.

MIR. Lie still, my babe, lie still and sleep,
It grieves me sore to see thee weep:
Wer't thou but leaner, I were glad;
Thy fatness makes thy dear love sad.
What a lump of love have I in my arms!

PING. Nay, if I had not taken all these courses
To dissolve myself into thy embraces,
One would think my looking on thee
Were enough; for I never see thee but
I am like a fat piece of beef roasting
At the fire, continually drop, drop, drop.
There's ne'er a feature in thy face, or
Part about thee, but has cost me many
A pint of fat, with thinking on thee;
And yet not to be lean enough for
Thy husband—O fate! O fate!
O fat! [*She lets him fall.*

MIR. O Lord, sir, I have let you fall,
How shall I do to get you up again!

PING. Nay, that is more than all the world can tell.

MIR. I'll e'en lie down by thee then.

PING. Nay,

Digitized by Google

But prythee lie near me; thou hadst
As good lie a league off, as that distance.
MIR. Were I thy wife, fat love, I would.

SHE *sings.*

My lodging upon the cold floor is,
And wonderful hard is my fare,
But that which troubles me more, is
The fatness of my dear.
Yet still I do cry, O, melt, love,
And I prythee now melt apace;
For thou art the man I should long for,
If 'twere not for thy grease.

PINGUISTER *sings.*

Then prythee don't burden thy heart still,
And be deaf to my pitiful moan;
Since I do endure the smart still,
And for my fat do groan;
Then prythee now turn, my dear love,
And I prythee now turn to me;
For, alas! I am too fat still
To roll so far to thee.

MIR. That were not modesty in me to turn
To you; but if you can roll to me within
This hour, I'll marry you in spite of all
Your fat.
PING. Agreed, then I shall gain thee yet;
You must lie still then.
MIR. Yes, yes.
PING. Sure, I am
Sysiphus's stone, for as fast as I turn
Over, I think I turn back again, else I
Must needs have been come to my journey's end
[*He rolls to her, and she rolls from him.*

Digitized by Google

By this time; for I am of such a breadth,
That every roll I give I pass over
An acre at least. Thou liest still, my love,
Dost thou not?

MIR. Yes, I long to have thee here.

PING. I doubt I shan't be with thee, though,
This two hours.

MIR. Then my heart will break.

PING. I'm sure mine will before I get to thee.
O woman, O woman, O woman!
They talk of woman in travail, I'm
Sure I know a man in travail at
This time, in more pain by half.
[*She rises and laughs at him.*

MIR. Why, my most extreme fat ass, dost
Thou not find that I have fool'd thee
All this while?

PING. Why, hast thou?

MIR. Yes, indeed have I.

PING. O thou woman! may'st thou grow
Fat, that thy breast and belly may
Meet together, so that all the fat
Hostesses in Christendom may appear
But eels to thee.

MIR. Farewell, my lowly love.

PING. Why, wilt thou not help me up, before
You go?

MIR. What to do? to run heats again for love?

PING. No, to fight with thee.

MIR. Fight with me? by this light, would we
Had two swords. I'd have one pass
At all thy tripes.

Enter CUTLER *with two swords.*

Faith, and yonder's a fellow with two swords:
Friend, lend me but thy swords one minute.

Digitized by Google

CUT. I am going to carry them to two gentlemen.

MIR. O, this will not hinder thee; thou shalt
See rare sport. Go, help that gentleman
Up that lies yonder, and give that sword
Into his hand. Come, are ye ready, sir?

PING. Why, you dare fight then, it seems?
Though thou art so ungodly a chit, as
To say no prayers, before thou beginn'st,
I will, I assure thee.
Good—I pray and desire ye, if I
Do miscarry in this duel, that I may
Meet with no woman in the other
World. Now, thou worst of females,
Have at thee.

MIR. Come, I'll let out all your fat and love at
One thrust. [*Fight, and she disarms him.*
Now ask thy life, and confess thou art an ass.

PING. I am an ass, and ask my life.

MIR. Then I, thy conquering Cæsar, take my leave
With this conclusion: *veni, vidi, vici.*
And so farewell. O fate, O love, O fat! [*Exit.*

PING. After all my miseries, would I were
Up again, else the next man that comes
Will make a roller of me, for to roll
Bowling-greens.
[*Makes several attempts to rise, and at last gets up.*
So, now I have a mile home at least,
And every toilsome step I take, I will
Curse women. [*Exit.*

Enter ZORANZO *and* AMPHELIA *lying upon straw together.*

ZOR. Most bless'd of women, I must tell you truth;
And yet I fear that truth will——

Digitized by Google

AMPH. Will what? I doubt he loves me—
[*Aside.*
Speak it, sir, nothing from you can
Be unwelcome.
ZOR. O yes, it will.
AMPH. I'll warrant you; out with it, sir.
ZOR. Then know, I—— 'Twill come no farther.
AMPH. Unhappy man! 'tis so, he loves me.
[*Aside.*
O sir, I have sadder truth to tell to you
Than yours can be to me—— I dare not
Speak it.
ZOR. My fears are true; she loves me. [*Aside.*
Pray tell me, what it is?
AMPH. Tell yours first, sir.
ZOR. Alas! you saw I tried, but could not get
It past my lips.
AMPH. If I should try, mine would not come so far.
ZOR. Would I knew yours, I could tell it for you.
AMPH. So could I yours, [and] yet I can't my own.
ZOR. Alas! she loves me. [*Aside.*
AMPH. Poor Zoranzo! I see he loves me. [*Aside.*
But, sir, consider we are going to die;
Let us die undeceiv'd in one another.
ZOR. O, that some one that knows each of our hearts,
Would hearken to our griefs, and bid
An angel come and speak for both!

Enter JAILOR.

JAILOR. Come, have you done your discourse? you must go
To execution.

Digitized by Google

ZOR. A little patience, jailor: [*To her*] see, we are
Called unto our deaths, pray tell me, what
You mean.
AMPH. I cannot; first do you begin.
ZOR. Nor I.
AMPH. Let us tell both together then, that one
May not blame the other.
ZOR. Agreed: are you ready now to speak!
AMPH. Yes—O no, I am not—well, now I am—
Are you?
ZOR. Yes, I am; begin—O, stay, I cannot yet.
JAILOR. Come, come, I can give you no longer time.
AMPH. Nay, then we must tell.
ZOR. Poor Amphelia! 'tis Amarissa that
I love.
AMPH. O Zoranzo, I love the duke!
ZOR. Then I am joy'd, I was afraid 'twas me
You lov'd.
AMPH. And so was I that you lov'd me.
Now we shall both die happy, never was
Two such friends as you and I.
JAILOR. Come, come.
AMPH. Good jailor, we go most willingly now.
[*Exeunt.*

Enter as on a scaffold, DUKE, AMARISSA, ORTELLUS, ZORANZO, AMPHELIA, JAILOR, *and* EXECUTIONER.

AMA. Jailor, why didst thou let them stay so long?
JAILOR. They had so much to say to one another,
That still they begged one minute, and then
Another.

Digitized by Google

AMA. D'ye hear, sir? pray let the jailor
Be turn'd out of his place, for letting them speak to
One another.
AMPH. See, Zoranzo, where they sit
In triumph o'er our deaths.
AMA. S'life, sir, they are
Whispering, d'ye see
Yonder? Executioner, why don't you
Strike off their heads, and let them whisper then.
Sir, you're melancholy.
DUKE. I am indeed.
ZOR. Now, Amphelia, to heaven and you I truly
Vow, my love is still the same to cruel Amarissa.
AMPH. Heaven and you witness the same for me:
My heart is still that undeserving duke's.
EXEC. Come, which of you will die first?
ZOR. Hast thou not
Skill enough to strike our heads off together?
AMA. Executioner, let them not have that
Satisfaction; pray, sir, let that woman
Die first, that damned Zoranzo may have
Two deaths; it will be one to him to see
Her die; shall it be so, sir?
DUKE. What you please.
EXEC. Come, lady, you must lay down your head
First, the duke says.
AMPH. That word's the sharpest axe
That I shall feel.
EXEC. Have you said all?
[*Both kneel as at prayers.*
AMPH. To earth I have,
But not to heaven.
Farewell, dear friend, for one short minute.
ZOR. My soul
Shall hasten after yours.

Digitized by Google

AMA. S'life! jailor, will you
Let them speak to one another again?
AMPH. Executioner, now I am ready.
DUKE. Hold,
The prisoner shall die first.
ZOR. With all my
Heart, I am ready.
DUKE. Nay, it is not you
I mean, sir; rise; 'tis I that am the prisoner,
I will make you a present, take your life,
Your love; nay, and my dukedom too: and to
Oblige you most of all, executioner,
Strike off my head, for I am weary of it.
AMPH. Not for ten thousand worlds, sir,
Whate'er you mean.
DUKE. Know then, I have lov'd you
All this while, but seeing your hate so great to me,
I have dissembled scorn to you. [*She swoons.*
Why dost thou swoon, Amphelia?
AMPH. Did not I hear some voice just now,
That said the duke does love me still?
DUKE. Thou didst; 'twas he himself that said so.
AMPH. If 'twere from heaven, good heaven, say it again!
DUKE. 'Twas I myself, I tell thee—and I will
Ne'er speak another word, if that displease thee.
AMPH. O, I am in heaven then, it seems, and 'tis
Some god that is telling me how the duke
Loved me still.
DUKE. Dear Amphelia, 'tis I
That loves thee, tells thee so.
AMPH. Hark, now there is a god that says he loves
Me too; blest god, I'm sorry if you do.
Since I have heard the duke does love me still,

Digitized by Google

He must be your rival, indeed I cannot
Help it. O, let me fly down to the earth
Again, only to hear him say he loves me.
I cannot promise when I shall return:
That very word from him would keep me there.
DUKE. I must answer her no more: they say
'Twill keep 'em longer in a trance. [*He rubs her.*
ORT. I am but in a scurvy condition now, if
She comes to life again, for they will
Examine one another, how the mistake
Came between them, and then I am
Sure it must come to light. [*Aside.*
AMPH. Who's that,—duke Archimedes?
DUKE. The same, sweet angel.
AMPH. O sir, I am come from heaven to see you,
Since there I heard you love me still.
DUKE. Dear Amphelia, thou hast dream'd all this while;
Heaven, 'tis true, is where thou art, but 'twas
My voice that said I love thee.
AMPH. Was not my head struck off just now?
DUKE. Canst thou ask that, while I have
A head and heart?
AMPH. Why, have you lov'd me still?
DUKE. With as much truth as ever lover did.
AMPH. So have I you with equal constancy.
AMA. Well, sir, now you are satisfied, pray let
Me be so too, and let Zoranzo's head
Be struck off quickly,
I see he's mean as well as false, to quit
Me for a woman that does not love him.
AMPH. Hold, Amarissa, hear me speak, before
Zoranzo dies; and be assur'd he loves
You still.
AMA. Would you deceive me too?
AMPH. Indeed I don't; when we were going to die,

Digitized by Google

You may remember that we whispered,
Then we called heaven and ourselves to witness,
That both our loves were true,
Mine to Archimedes, and his to you.
AMA. You can forgive me, sir? [*Kneels.*
ZOR. I cannot answer yet;
Thy civility has took away my speech.
DUKE. Dear Amphelia, how came this sad mistake
'Twixt you and I?
AMPH. I'll tell you, sir, in part;
When you were in this last war, my woman
Receiv'd a letter from one of the gentlemen
Of your chamber, wherein he did assure
Her that you had a new mistress in that
Country, and therefore bid her tell me
Of it, that I might by degrees wean my
Affections from so false a man as you.
DUKE. Here has been some foul play; for this very man
You spoke of, receiv'd a letter from your woman,
Wherein she bid him assure me, that you
Were prov'd false in my absence, and lov'd my
Cousin Ortellus. Guard, go fetch them both
Hither immediately; they shall die
Without mercy.
ORT. Nay, then, I had as good
Discover, 'twill fall th' heavier on me else.
Sir, let the guard stay,
And I will tell you all.
'Tis I have sow'd the seeds of this mistake.
I long have lov'd Amphelia, for which cause
I tried this way to draw her heart from you.
I knew this gentleman of your bed-chamber
Was in love with Amphelia's woman,
Therefore I brib'd her to write to him,
To assure the duke that Amphelia lov'd me,

Digitized by Google

And that she should also charge him, to write
Another letter to her, wherein he
Should complain of the duke's falling in love
With another woman in that country.
I knew your spirits both to be so great that
Neither of you would stoop to one another,
When you were both possess'd of either's falseness:
And so it prov'd.
For when the duke heard you lov'd me, he brought
A fair new mistress over with him, to
Let you see he did contemn you; and so
Amphelia, sir, when she heard you lov'd
Another, assur'd me then that she lov'd me,
Which now I see was only to make you
Think how much she scorn'd you, though still her heart
Was true, and so was yours. Now, sir,
I humbly beg your pardon.

DUKE. 'Twill be in vain, my lord; I cannot grant it.
O Amphelia, how many hours of joy
We two have lost!

AMPH. Base lord!

Enter ARTABELLA.

ART. O sir, I heard that people were to die
To-day; let me be one, I pray.

AMPH. Not for
The world, sweet innocent.

ART. O madam, you are she
The duke loves. Pray spare your pity, sir; can
You have the heart to let me live, and see
You married to another?

AMPH. Have patience,
Sweet young maid, I will not marry him; you won't
Blame me, if I love him, though?

Digitized by Google

ART. No;
For then I should condemn my fault in you.
DUKE. But sure, Amphelia, you did but jest,
In telling her you would not marry me?
AMPH. Indeed, sir, I am in earnest; consider
It is but justice; she loves you as well
As I: her heart was quiet till you troubled
It.
DUKE. All this is true; but how will your
Love show, if you refuse to marry me?
AMPH. Not less at all, but make my pity more.
DUKE. If I would marry her, I can't believe,
That she would be thus kind to you.
AMPH. Yes, I dare say she would; ask her and
try.
DUKE. Well, Artabella, will you marry me?
ART. You never hated me till now; can you
Believe I'd wrong so blest a woman as
Amphelia?
AMPH. See, sir, would it be justice now in me?
She will not wound my heart; should I kill hers?
DUKE. But consider, 'tis you I love, not her.
AMPH. That's her misfortune, sir, yet she de-
serves
As much as I: I can but love you, so
Does she.
DUKE. Dear Amphelia, marry me.
AMPH. I cannot
Out of pity, sir.
DUKE. Talk not of pity, if
Thou wilt show me none.
AMPH. My pity is her due:
My love is yours.
DUKE. O Amphelia, this was
A cruel way to make me happy. Thou'st
Better still have kept my joys unknown, than
let

Digitized by Google

The knowing of it be my death. Once more,
My dear Amphelia, marry me.
AMPH. Do not
Petition her; you may command in any
Thing but this.
DUKE. Monster of villains, thou hast caus'd
All this! Executioner, immediately strike
Off his head.
ORT. I'm sure you will not let me die.
DUKE. Impudent villain, dispatch him straight.
ORT. Hold, sir, 'tis only I can make you
Three happy, which if you do not confess,
When you have heard me speak, then let me die.
DUKE. Well, let's hear it.
ORT. Promise me my life
First, if I do.
DUKE. Well, you shall have it.
ORT. Then know, the lady Artabella is
Your sister.
DUKE. Ha!
ORT. I say, your sister;
You do remember that you had one once?
DUKE. Yes, I do, but she was lost at three years old.
ORT. 'Tis true it was thought so; but thus it is:—
When 'twas reported you were slain in th' battle,
I straight convey'd away this lady, then
A child, because she should not stand 'twixt me
And the dukedom. I being then acquainted
With the mother to Arbatus, I brought
This lady, and gave her a sum of money,
T' adopt her for her child. With willingness
My offer she embrac'd, the more, because
Her son Arbatus had been lost about
Seven years, thought to have been cast away
At sea, though afterwards returned home:
I had enjoin'd her secrecy, which she

Digitized by Google

Kept, therefore she told Arbatus 'twas his
Sister.

Enter ARBATUS.

DUKE. And is she then my sister? O
Arbatus, welcome, welcome! I've a crowd
Of joys about my heart to tell thee.
ARB. What! that you have broken my sister's heart?
DUKE. Thou hast no sister; 'tis I [that] possess that
Blessing; Artabella is my sister.
How blest a sound is *sister* to my ears!
I'll give command no other word but *sister*
Shall be spoke throughout my dukedom; I'll have it
Taught to infants; so that when nature lends
Their sucking tongues a means to speak one word,
They shall all babble *sister*, 'stead of *nurse*.
I'll have the name engrav'd in gold [up]on
Every post and pillar in the streets, and passers-
By shall worship it.
ARB. I am amazed.

Enter PHILIDOR *and* MIRIDA.

DUKE. Welcome, Philidor.
PHIL. I am glad
To see joy in your looks again, sir;
The time is long since I have seen you smile.
DUKE. Philidor, all that is joy I have within
This breast; it overflows
And runs into my eyes. This is my sister!
(O, what a word is sister!) and this my dear

Digitized by Google

And true Amphelia.
Come, Mirida shall be thine to-day too.
[*To* PHILIDOR.
MIR. Hold, sir, I forbid that banns.
PHIL. Troth, so do I too ; you always
Take the words out of my mouth.
You and I marry, quotha !
MIR. No, faith, we'll be hang'd first. I'd
Rather hear a long sermon, than
Hear a parson ask me : *Mirida,*
Will you have this man for your
Wedded husband, to have and to hold,
From this day forward, and so forth.
PHIL. Right, *for better for worse, in*
Sickness or in health.
MIR. Ay, and perhaps after we have been
Married half a year, one's
Husband falls into a deep consumption,
And will not do one the favour to
Die neither, then we must be
Ever feeding him with caudles.
O, from a husband in a consumption
Deliver me !
PHIL. And think how weary I should be
Of thee, Mirida, when once we were
Chain'd together : the very name of
Wife would be a vomit to me : then
Nothing but, *where's my wife ? call*
My wife to dinner, call my wife to supper ;
And then at night, *come, wife, will you*
Go to bed ?
MIR. Ay, and that would be so troublesome
To be call'd by one's husband every night
To go to bed. O, that dull, dull
Name of husband !
DUKE. Indeed you two are well met,
The world has not two more such,
I am confident.

Digitized by Google

MIR. The more the pity, sir.
PHIL. No, sir, if you please, never propose
Marrying to us, till both of us have
Committed such faults as are death
By the law; then instead of
Hanging us, marry us.
MIR. And then you shall hear how
Earnestly we shall petition your
Highness to be hang'd rather than
Married.
DUKE. No man can judge which is the
Wildest of these two.
Now, brave Arbatus, in all my dukedom
There is but one gift worthy thy
Receiving, and that's my sister;
Here, sir, take her as freely as heaven
Gave her me.
ARB. D'ye forgive me, sir?
DUKE. Or not myself, Arbatus.
This day Hymen shall light his torch for all.
PHIL. With your pardon, sir, not for me
And my female?
MIR. No, faith, I'll blow it out,
If he does.
ART. Sir, though in my own desires
I should have chose the man that you have given
me,
Yet I beg we may not marry yet; we have
Call'd brother and sister so long, that yet
We needs must think we are so still.
ARB. Pray, madam,
Let's think so as little a while as we can,
That fancy may not keep my joy in prison.
DUKE. Let's to the temple now, and there thank
Heaven for these unexpected joys.
Each day the gods shall lend me in this life,
I'll thank them for a sister and a wife. [*Exeunt.*

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

HISTORIA HISTRIONICA.

Digitized by Google

EDITION.

Historia Histrionica. An Historical Account of the English-Stage; showing the Ancient Uses, Improvement, and Perfection of Dramatic Representations, in this Nation. In a Dialogue, of Plays and Players.—Olim meminisse juvabit. *London. Printed by G. Croom, for William Haws, at the Rose in Ludgate-Street.* 1699. 8°.

This tract is said to have been the production of James Wright of New Inn, afterwards of the Middle Temple, Barrister-at-Law, who was the son of Abraham Wright, a well-known miscellaneous writer (1645–70). The former was the author of "The Antiquities of Rutlandshire," and some poems; particularly (1) "An Essay on the Present Ruins of St Paul's Cathedral." To which is annexed, "The Misfortunes of St Paul's Cathedral," in heroic verse, 4°. 1668; re-printed with two other poems under the title of (2) "Three poems of St Paul's Cathedral; viz., The Ruins, The Rebuilding, The Choire,[1] Fo. 1697," and (3) "Phœnix Paulina, a Poem on St Paul's Cathedral, 4°. 1709."[2] He was alive in 1710, being mentioned by Mr Hearne in his preface to Leland's "Itinerary," in this manner; "I could have supply'd more Lacunæ, and in all likelyhood have render'd this performance more perfect, if I had had the use of a very good transcript of Mr Leland's 'Itinerary,' taken about the time of Queen Elizabeth (before the originals took wet, as is suppos'd) and was formerly in possession of James Wright, of the Middle Temple, Esq., the worthy author of the 'Antiquities of Rutlandshire;' but this, with a multitude of other valuable curiosities, was unhappily burned in the fire at the Middle Temple, in the year 1698, as Mr Wright has been pleased to inform me." Anthony Wood says, he wrote an elegy on the death of Mr John Goad, Master of Merchant Taylor's School, who died 1689. (See Wood's "Athenæ," vol. i. p. 839.)

---

[1] British Topography, vol. 1. p. 610.

[2] Catalogue of pamphlets in the Harleian Library, p. 140.

Digitized by Google

THE PREFACE.[1]

MUCH has been writ of late *pro* and *con* about the stage, yet the subject admits of more, and that which has not been hitherto touched upon; not only what that is, but what it was, about which some people have made such a bustle. What it is we see, and I think it has been sufficiently displayed in Mr Collier's book; what it was in former ages, and how used in this kingdom, so far back as one may collect any memorials, is the subject of the following dialogue. Old plays will be always read by the curious, if it were only to discover the manners and behaviour of several ages, and how they altered. For plays are exactly like portraits, drawn in the garb and fashion of the time when painted. You see one habit in the time of Charles I., another quite different from that, both for men and women, in Queen Elizabeth's time; another under Henry VIII. different from both; and so backward, all various. And in the several fashions of behaviour and conversation there is as much mutability as in that of clothes Religion and religious matters were once as much the

[1] This preface was omitted by Mr Reed, probably because his copy was not perfect. It is reprinted from the first edition in 1699, which the former editor had not been able to procure.—*Collier.*

Digitized by Google

mode in public entertainments as the contrary has been in some times since. This appears in the different plays of several ages: and to evince this the following sheets are an essay or specimen.

Some may think the subject of this discourse trivial, and the persons herein mentioned not worth remembering. But besides that I could name some things contested of late with great heat, of as little or less consequence, the reader may know that the profession of players is not so totally scandalous, nor all of them so reprobate, but that there has been found under that name a canonised saint in the primitive church, as may be seen in the "Roman Martyrology" on the 29th March: his name *Masculas*, a master of interludes (the Latin is *Archimimus*, and the French translation *un Maître comedien*) who, under the persecution of the Vandals in Africa by Geisericus the Aryan king, having endured many and grievous torments and reproaches for the confession of the truth, finished the course of this glorious combat, saith the said "Martyrology."

It appears from this and some further instances in the following discourse, that there have been players of worthy principles as to religion, loyalty, and other virtues; and if the major part of them fall under a different character, it is the general unhappiness of mankind, that the *most* are the *worst*.

Digitized by Google

A DIALOGUE, &c.

LOVEWIT, TRUEMAN.

LOVE. Honest old cavalier, well met! faith, I'm glad to see thee.

TRUE. Have a care what you call me: old is a word of disgrace among the ladies; to be honest is to be poor and foolish (as some think); and cavalier is a word as much out of fashion as any of 'em.

LOVE. The more's the pity. But what said the fortune-teller in Ben Jonson's "Masque of Gipsies," to the then Lord Privy Seal?—

Honest and old!
In those the good part of a fortune is told.

TRUE. Ben Jonson! how dare you name Ben Jonson in these times, when we have such a crowd of poets of a quite different genius, the least of which thinks himself as well able to correct Ben Jonson as he could a country schoolmistress that taught to spell!

LOVE. We have, indeed, poets of a different genius, so are the plays; but, in my opinion, they are all of 'em (some few excepted) as much inferior to those of former times, as the actors now in

Digitized by Google

being (generally speaking) are, compared to Hart, Mohun, Burt, Lacy, Clun, and Shatterel; for I can reach no farther backward.

TRUE. I can, and dare assure you, if my fancy and memory are not partial (for men of my age are apt to be over-indulgent to the thoughts of their youthful days), I say the actors that I have seen before the wars—Lowin, Taylor, Pollard, and some others—were almost as far beyond Hart and his company as those were beyond these now in being.

LOVE. I am willing to believe it, but cannot readily; because I have been told that those whom I mentioned were bred up under the others of your acquaintance, and followed their manner of action, which is now lost: so far that, when the question has been asked why these players do not revive the "Silent Woman" and some other of Jonson's plays (once of highest esteem), they have answered, "Truly, because there are none now living who can rightly humour those parts; for all who related to the Blackfriars (where they were acted in perfection) are now dead and almost forgotten."

TRUE. 'Tis very true, Hart and Clun were bred up boys at the Blackfriars, and acted women's parts. Hart was Robinson's boy or apprentice; he acted the Duchess in the tragedy of the "Cardinal," which was the first part that gave him reputation. Cartwright and Wintershal belonged to the Private House in Salisbury Court; Burt was a boy, first under Shank at the Blackfriars, then under Beeston at the Cockpit; and Mohun and Shatterel were in the same condition with him at the last place. There Burt used to play the principal women's parts, in particular Clariana, in "Love's Cruelty;" and at the same time

Digitized by Google

Mohun acted Bellamente, which part he retained after the Restoration.

LOVE. That I have seen, and can well remember. I wish they had printed in the last age (so I call the times before the Rebellion) the actors' names over against the parts they acted, as they have done since the Restoration, and thus one might have guessed at the action of the men by the parts which we now read in the old plays.

TRUE. It was not the custom and usage of those days, as it hath been since. Yet some few old plays there are that have the names set against the parts, as "The Duchess of Malfy," "The Picture," "The Roman Actor," "The Deserving Favourite," "The Wild-Goose Chase" (at the Blackfriars), "The Wedding," "The Renegado," "The Fair Maid of the West," "Hannibal and Scipio," "King John and Matilda" (at the Cockpit), and "Holland's Leaguer" (at Salisbury Court).

LOVE. These are but few indeed. But pray, sir, what master-parts can you remember the old Blackfriar's men to act in Jonson, Shakespeare, and Fletcher's plays?

TRUE. What I can at present recollect, I'll tell you. Shakespeare (who, as I have heard, was a much better poet than player), Burbage, Hemmings, and others of the older sort, were dead before I knew the town; but in my time, before the wars, Lowin used to act with mighty applause Falstaff, Morose, Volpone, and Mammon in the "Alchymist," Melantius in the "Maid's Tragedy;" and at the same time Amyntor was played by Stephen Hammerton (who was at first a most noted and beautiful woman-actor, but afterwards he acted with equal grace and applause a young lover's part); Taylor acted Hamlet incom-

Digitized by Google

parably well; Jago, Truewit in the "Silent Woman," and Face in the "Alchymist." Swanston used to play Othello. Pollard and Robinson were comedians; so was Shank, who used to act Sir Roger in the "Scornful Lady:" these were of Blackfriars. Those of principal note at the Cockpit were Perkins, Michael Bowyer, Sumner, William Allan, and Bird, eminent actors, and Robins, a comedian. Of the other companies I took little notice.

LOVE. Were there so many companies?

TRUE. Before the wars there were in being all these play-houses at the same time. The Blackfriars and Globe on the Bank-side, a winter and summer house, belonging to the same company, called the King's Servants; the Cockpit or Phœnix, in Drury Lane, called the Queen's Servants; the Private House, in Salisbury Court, called the Prince's Servants; the Fortune, near Whitecross Street;[1] and the Red Bull, at the upper end of St

[1] This is afterwards said to be a large round brick building. Mr Steevens supposes, from the extent of it, that all the actors resided within its precincts. It was pulled down about the time of the Restoration, soon after the appearance of the following advertisement in the *Mercurius Politicus*, Tuesday, Feb. 14, to Tuesday, Feb. 21, 1661. "The Fortune Play-house, situate between Whitecross Street and Golding Square, in the parish of St Giles, Cripplegate, with the ground thereunto belonging, is to be let to be built upon; where twenty-three tenements may be erected, with gardens; and a street may be cut through for the better accommodation of the buildings." (See edition of Shakespeare, 1778, i. 267.) From the following passage of "The English Traveller," by Heywood, 1633, sig. I 3, we find there was a picture or statue of Fortune before the building.

> "I'le rather stand here
> Like a statue in the forefront of your house
> For ever; like the picture of Dame Fortune
> Before the Fortune Play-house."

Digitized by Google

John's Street: the two last were mostly frequented by citizens and the meaner sort of people. All these companies got money, and lived in reputation, especially those of the Blackfriars, who were men of grave and sober behaviour.

LOVE. Which I admire at; that the town, much less than at present, could then maintain five companies, and yet now two can hardly subsist.

TRUE. Do not wonder, but consider that, though the town was then, perhaps, not much more than half so populous as now, yet then the prices were small (there being no scenes), and better order kept among the company that came; which made very good people think a play an innocent diversion for an idle hour or two, the plays themselves being then, for the most part, more instructive and moral. Whereas, of late, the play-houses are so extremely pestered with vizard-masks and their trade (occasioning continual quarrels and abuses), that many of the more civilised part of the town are uneasy in the company, and shun the theatre as they would a house of scandal. It is an argument of the worth of the plays and actors of the last age, and easily inferred, that they were much beyond ours in this, to consider that they could support themselves merely from their own merit, the weight of the matter, and goodness of the action, without scenes and machines; whereas the present plays, with all that show, can hardly draw an audience, unless there be the additional invitation of a Signor Fedeli, a Monsieur l'Abbé, or some such foreign regale expressed in the bottom of the bill.

LOVE. To waive this digression, I have read of one Edward Alleyn, a man so famed for excellent action, that among Ben Jonson's epigrams I find

Digitized by Google

one directed to him, full of encomium, and concluding thus—

Wear this renown; 'tis just that who did give
So many poets life, by one should live.

Was he one of the Blackfriars?

TRUE. Never as I have heard (for he was dead before my time). He was master of a company of his own, for whom he built the Fortune Playhouse from the ground, a large round brick building. This is he that grew so rich, that he purchased a great estate in Surrey and elsewhere; and having no issue, he built and largely endowed Dulwich College in the year 1619[1], for a master, a warden, four fellows, twelve aged poor people, and twelve poor boys, &c. A noble charity!

LOVE. What kind of play-houses had they before the wars?

TRUE. The Blackfriars, Cockpit, and Salisbury Court were called private houses, and were very small to what we see now. The Cockpit was standing since the Restoration, and Rhodes's company acted there for some time.

LOVE. I have seen that.

TRUE. Then you have seen the other two in effect, for they were all three built almost exactly alike for form and bigness. Here they had pits for the gentry, and acted by candlelight. The Globe, Fortune, and Bull were large houses, and lay partly open to the weather, and there they always acted by daylight.

LOVE. But prythee, Trueman, what became of these players when the stage was put down, and the Rebellion raised?

[1] The Letters Patent under the Great Seal bear date the 21st June 1619.

Digitized by Google

TRUE. Most of them, except Lowin, Taylor, and Pollard (who were superannuated) went into the king's army, and, like good men and true, served their old master, though in a different, yet more honourable capacity. Robinson was killed at the taking of a place (I think Basing House) by Harrison, he that was after hanged at Charing Cross, who refused him quarter, and shot him in the head when he had laid down his arms; abusing Scripture at the same time in saying, *Cursed is he that doth the work of the Lord negligently.* Mohun was a captain, and (after the wars were ended here) served in Flanders, where he received pay as a major. Hart was a lieutenant of horse under Sir Thomas Dallison, in Prince Rupert's regiment; Burt was cornet in the same troop, and Shatterel quartermaster. Allen of the Cockpit was a major, and quartermaster-general at Oxford. I have not heard of one of these players of any note that sided with the other party, but only Swanston; and he professed himself a Presbyterian, took up the trade of a jeweller, and lived in Aldermanbury, within the territory of Father Calamy. The rest either lost or exposed their lives for their king. When the wars were over, and the Royalists totally subdued, most of 'em who were left alive gathered to London, and for a subsistence endeavoured to revive their old trade privately. They made up one company out of all the scattered members of several; and in the winter before the king's murder, 1648, they ventured to act some plays, with as much caution and privacy as could be, at the Cockpit. They continued undisturbed for three or four days; but at last, as they were presenting the tragedy of the "Bloody Brother" (in which Lowin acted Aubery; Taylor, Rollo; Pollard, the Cook; Burt, Latorch; and, I think,

Digitized by Google

Hart, Otto), a party of foot-soldiers beset the house, surprised 'em about the middle of the play,[1] and carried 'em away in their habits, not admitting them to shift, to Hatton House, then a prison, where, having detained them some time, they plundered them of their clothes, and let 'em loose again. Afterwards, in Oliver's time, they used to act privately, three or four miles, or more, out of town, now here, now there: sometimes in noblemen's houses, in particular, Holland House at Kensington, where the nobility and gentry who met (but in no great numbers) used to make a sum for them, each giving a broad piece, or the like. And Alexander Goffe, the woman-actor at Blackfriars (who had made himself known to persons of quality), used to be the jackal, and give notice of time and place. At Christmas and Bartholomew Fair, they used to bribe the officer who commanded the guard at Whitehall, and were thereupon connived at to act for a few days at the Red Bull,[2] but were sometimes, notwithstanding,

[1] This is confirmed by Kirkman who, in his preface to "The Wits; or, Sport upon Sport," 1672, says, The small compositions of which his work was made up, being scenes and parts of plays, were at this period "liked and approved by all, and they were the fittest for the actors to represent, there being little cost in cloaths, which often were in great danger to be seized by the then soldiers; who, as the poet sayes, *Enter the red coat, exit hat and cloak*, was very true, not only in the audience but the actors too, who were commonly not only stripp'd, but many times imprisoned, till they paid such ransom as the souldiers would impose upon them: so that it was hazardous to act any thing that required any good cloaths: instead of which painted cloath many times served the turn to represent rich habits."

[2] "When the publique Theatres were shut up, and the actors forbidden to present us with any of their tragedies, because we had enough of that in earnest: and comedies, because the vices of the age were too lively and

Digitized by Google

disturbed by soldiers. Some picked up a little money by publishing the copies of plays never before printed, but kept up in manuscript. For instance, in the year 1652, Beaumont and Fletcher's "Wild-Goose Chase" was printed in folio, for the public use of all the ingenious, as the title-page says, and private benefit of John Lowin and Joseph Taylor, servants to his late majesty; and by them dedicated to the honoured few lovers of dramatic poesy, wherein they modestly intimate their wants, and that with sufficient cause; for whatever they were before the wars, they were after reduced to a necessitous condition. Lowin, in his latter days, kept an inn, the Three Pigeons at Brentford, where he died very old, for he was an actor of eminent note in the reign of King James I.; and his poverty was as great as his age. Taylor died at Richmond, and was there buried. Pollard, who lived single, and had a competent estate, retired to some relations he had in the country, and there ended his life. Perkins and Sumner of the Cockpit kept

---

smartly represented; then all that we could divert ourselves with, were these humours and pieces of plays which, passing under the name of a merry conceited fellow, called "Bottom the Weaver," "Simpleton the Smith," "John Swabber," or some such title, were only allowed us, and that but by stealth too, and under pretence of rope-dancing or the like; and these being all that was permitted us, great was the confluence of the auditors; and these small things were as profitable and as great get-pennies to the actors as any of our late famed plays. I have seen *the Red Bull Playhouse*, which was a large one, so full, that as many went back for want of room as had entered; and as meanly as you may now think of these drols, they were then acted by the best comedians then and now in being; and I may say by some that then exceeded all now living, by name, the incomparable Robert Cox, who was not only the principal actor, but also the contriver and author of most of these farces."—Kirkman's Preface to "The Wits, or Sport upon Sport," 1672.

Digitized by Google

house together at Clerkenwell, and were there buried. These all died some years before the Restoration; what followed after, I need not tell you; you can easily remember.

LOVE. Yes; presently after the Restoration, the king's players acted publicly at the Red Bull for some time, and then removed to a new-built play-house in Vere Street, by Clare Market. There they continued for a year or two, and then removed to the Theatre Royal in Drury Lane, where they first made use of scenes, which had been a little before introduced upon the public stage by Sir William Davenant, at the Duke's Old Theatre in Lincoln's-Inn-Fields, but afterwards very much improved, with the addition of curious machines, by Mr Betterton, at the New Theatre in Dorset Garden, to the great expense and continual charge of the players. This much impaired their profit o'er what it was before; for I have been informed by one of 'em, that for several years next after the Restoration every whole sharer in Mr Hart's company got £1000 *per ann.* About the same time that scenes first entered upon the stage at London, women were taught to act their own parts; since when we have seen at both houses several actresses, justly famed, as well for beauty as perfect good action. And some plays, in particular the "Parson's Wedding," have been presented all by women, as formerly all by men. Thus it continued for about twenty years, when Mr Hart, and some of the old men, began to grow weary, and were minded to leave off. Then the two companies thought fit to unite; but of late, you see, they have thought it no less fit to divide again, though both companies keep the same name of His Majesty's Servants. All this while the play-house music improved yearly, and is now arrived to greater perfection than ever

Digitized by Google

I knew it. Yet for all these advantages, the reputation of the stage and people's affection to it are much decayed. Some were lately severe against it, and would hardly allow stage-plays fit to be longer permitted. Have you seen Mr Collier's book?

TRUE. Yes, and his opposers'.

LOVE. And what think you?

TRUE. In my mind, Mr Collier's reflections are pertinent, and true in the main; the book ingeniously wrote, and well intended; but he has overshot himself in some places, and his respondents perhaps in more. My affection inclines me not to engage on either side, but rather mediate. If there be abuses relating to the stage—which, I think, is too apparent—let the abuse be reformed, and not the use, for that reason only, abolished. 'Twas an old saying, when I was a boy—

Absit abusus, non desit totaliter usus.

I shall not run through Mr Collier's book; I will only touch a little on two or three general notions, in which, I think, he may be mistaken. What he urges out of the primitive councils and fathers of the Church seems to me to be directed against the heathen plays, which were a sort of religious worship with them, to the honour of Ceres, Flora, or some of their false deities. They had always a little altar on their stages, as appears plain enough from some places in Plautus. And Mr Collier himself, p. 235, tells us out of Livy that plays were brought in, upon the score of religion, to pacify the gods. No wonder, then, they forbid Christians to be present at them, for it was almost the same as to be present at their sacrifices. We must also observe that this was in the infancy of Christianity, when the Church was under severe

Digitized by Google

and almost continual persecutions, and when all its true members were of most strict and exemplary lives, not knowing when they should be called to the stake, or thrown to wild beasts. They communicated daily, and expected death hourly; as their thoughts were intent upon the next world, they abstained almost wholly from all diversions and pleasures (though lawful and innocent) in this. Afterwards, when persecution ceased, and the Church flourished, Christians, being then freed from their former terrors, allowed themselves, at proper times, the lawful recreations of conversations, and among other, no doubt, this of shows and representations. After this time, the censures of the Church indeed might be continued or revived upon occasion against plays and players; though, in my opinion, it cannot be understood generally, but only against such players who were of vicious and licentious lives, and represented profane subjects, inconsistent with the morals and probity of manners requisite to Christians, and frequented chiefly by such loose and debauched people as were much more apt to corrupt than divert those who associated with them. I say, I cannot think the canons and censures of the fathers can be applied to all players, *quatenus* players; for if so, how could plays be continued among the Christians, as they were, of divine subjects and scriptural stories? A late French author, speaking of the Hotel de Bourgogne, a play-house in Paris, says that the ancient dukes of that name gave it to the Brotherhood of the Passion, established in the church of Trinity Hospital, in the Rue St Denis, on condition that they should represent here interludes of devotion; and adds, that there have been public shows in this place six hundred years ago. The Spanish and Portuguese continue still to have, for the most

Digitized by Google

part, such ecclesiastical stories for the subject of their plays; and if we may believe Gage, they are acted in their churches in Mexico and the Spanish West Indies.

LOVE. That's a great way off, Trueman; I had rather you would come nearer home, and confine your discourse to Old England.

TRUE. So I intend. The same has been done here in England; for otherwise, how comes it to be prohibited in the 88th Canon, among those passed in convocation, 1603? Certain it is that our ancient plays were of religious subjects, and had for their actors, if not priests, yet men relating to the Church.

LOVE. How does that appear?

TRUE. Nothing clearer. Stow, in his "Survey of London," has one chapter *Of the Sports and Pastimes of old time used in this City;* and there he tells us, that in the year 1391, which was 15 Richard II., a stage-play was played by the parish clerks of London, at the Skinner's Well beside Smithfield, which play continued three days together, the king, queen, and nobles of the realm being present. And another was played in the year 1409, 11 Henry IV., which lasted eight days, and was of matter from the creation of the world, whereat were present most part of the nobility and gentry of England. Sir William Dugdale, in his "Antiquities of Warwickshire," p. 116, speaking of the Grayfriars or Franciscans at Coventry, says: "Before the suppression of the monasteries, this city was very famous for the pageants that were played therein upon Corpus-Christi Day; which pageants, being acted with mighty state and reverence by the friars of this house, had theatres for the several scenes very large and high, placed upon wheels, and drawn to all the

Digitized by Google

eminent parts of the city, for the better advantage of the spectators, and contained the story of the New Testament, composed in old English rhyme." An ancient manuscript of the same is now to be seen in the Cottonian Library, *Sub Effig. Vesp. D.* 8. Since the Reformation, in Queen Elizabeth's time, plays were frequently acted by quiristers and singing-boys; and several of our old comedies have printed in the title-page, "acted by the children of Paul's" (not the school, but the church); others, "by the children of her majesty's chapel:" in particular, "Cynthia's Revels" and "The Poetaster" were played by them, who were at that time famous for good action. Among Ben Jonson's epigrams you may find an epitaph on S. P. (*Sal. Pavy*), one of the children of Queen Elizabeth's chapel, part of which runs thus—

Years he counted scarce thirteen,
When fates turn'd cruel,
Yet three fill'd zodiacs he had been
The stage's jewel;
And did act (what now we moan)
Old men so duly,
As, sooth, the Parcæ thought him one,
He play'd so truly.

Some of these chapel-boys, when they grew men, became actors at the Blackfriars; such were Nathan. Field[1] and John Underwood. Now I

[1] [Concerning Field the actor and dramatist, see introduction to his "Woman is a Weathercock," &c., xi. 3–6, 89–91, and Collier's "Memoirs of Actors," p. 206, *et seq.*]

Nathaniel Field, on the authority of Roberts the player (see his answer to Mr Pope's preface to Shakespeare), has been considered as the author of two plays: "A Woman is

Digitized by Google

can hardly imagine that such plays and players as these are included in the severe censure of the councils and fathers; but such only who are truly within the character given by Didacus de Tapia, cited by Mr Collier, p. 276, viz., *The infamous playhouse; a place of contradiction to the strictness and sobriety of religion; a place hated by God, and haunted by the devil.* And for such I have as great an abhorrence as any man.

LOVE. Can you guess of what antiquity the representing of religious matters on the stage hath been in England?

TRUE. How long before the Conquest, I know not, but that it was used in London not long after, appears by Fitz-Stephen, an author who wrote in

---

a Weathercocke," 1612, and "Amends for Ladies," 1618. He is also supposed to be the same person who assisted Massinger in "The Fatal Dowry." I suspect that Roberts was mistaken in these assertions, as I do not find any contemporary writer speak of Field as an author; nor is it mentioned by Langbaine, who would have noticed it, had he known the fact. It seems more probable that the writer of these plays was Nathaniel Field, M.A., Fellow of New College, Oxford, who wrote some Latin verses, printed in "Oxoniensis Academiæ Parentalia, 1625," and who, being of the same university with Massinger, might join with him, while there, in the composition of the play ascribed to them. Nathaniel Field above mentioned was celebrated in the part of "Bussy D'Ambois," first printed in 1607. On the republication of that play in 1641, he is thus spoken of in the Prologue:—

"*Field* is gone,
Whose action first did give it name, and one,
Who came the neerest to him, is denide
By his gray beard to shew the height and pride
Of D'Ambois youth and braverie; yet to hold
Our title still a foot, and not grow cold
By giving it o're, a third man with his best
Of care and paines defends our interest;
As Richard he was lik'd, nor doe wee feare,
In personating Dumbois, hee'le appeare
To faint, or goe lesse, so your free consent
As heretofore give him encouragement."

Digitized by Google

the reign of King Henry the Second.[1] His words are, *Londonia pro spectaculis theatralibus, pro ludis scenicis, ludos habet sanctiores, representationes miraculorum, quæ sancti confessores operati sunt, seu repræsentationes passionum quibus claruit constantia martyrum.* Of this the manuscript which I lately mentioned, in the Cottonian library, is a notable instance. Sir William Dugdale cites this manuscript by the title of *Ludus Coventriæ;* but in the printed Catalogue of that library, p. 113, it is named thus, A Collection of Plays in Old English Metre; h. e. *Dramata sacra, in quibus exhibentur historiæ Veteris et N. Testamenti, introductis quasi in scenam personis illic memoratis, quas secum invicem colloquentes pro ingenio fingit poeta. Videntur olim coram populo, sive ad instruendum, sive ad placendum, a fratribus mendicantibus repræsentata.* It appears by the latter end of the prologue, that these plays or interludes were not only played at Coventry, but in the other towns and places upon occasion. And possibly this may be the same play which Stow tells us was played in the reign of King Henry IV., which lasted for eight days. The book seems by the character and language to be at least 300 years old. It begins with a general prologue, giving the arguments of 40 pageants or gesticulations (which were as so many several acts or scenes) representing all the histories of both testaments, from the creation to the choosing of St *Matthias* to be an apostle. The stories of the New Testament are more largely expressed, viz., the Annunciation, Nativity, Visitation; but more especially all matters relating to the Passion, very particularly, the Resurrection, Ascension, the Choice of St *Matthias.* After which is also represented the Assumption,

[1] P. 73, 4°. Edit. 1772.

Digitized by Google

and Last Judgment. All these things were treated of in a very homely style, as we now think, infinitely below the dignity of the subject; but it seems the *goût* of that age was not so nice and delicate in these matters; the plain and incurious judgment of our ancestors being prepared with favour, and taking everything by the right and easiest handle. For example, in the scene relating to the Visitation:

Maria.[1] *But, husband, of oo thyng I pray you most mekely,*
I have knowing that our cosyn Elizabeth with childe is,
That it please yow to go to her hastyly,
If ought we myth comfort her, it were to me blys.

Joseph. *A Gods sake, is she with child, sche?*
Than will her husband Zachary be mery.
In Montana they dwelle, fer hence, so mot y[2] *the,*
In the city of Juda, I know it verily;
It is hence, I trowe, myles two a fifty,
We ar like to be wery, or we come at that same,
I wole with a good will, blessyd wyff Mary;
Now go we forth then in Goddys name, &c.

A little before the Resurrection:—*Nunc dormient milites, et veniet anima Christi de inferno, cum* Adam *et* Eva, Abraham, John Baptist, *et aliis.*

Anima Christi. *Come forth, Adam, and Eve with the,*
And all my fryndes that herein be,
In paradys come forth with me
In blysse for to dwelle.
The fende of hell that is your foo
He shall be wrappyd and woundyn in woo:
Fro wo to welth now shall ye go,
With myrth evyrmore to melle.

[1] [This and the other quotations were not correctly printed. See Halliwell's "Ludus Coventriæ," 1841, p. 121.
[2] [*Ibid.*, p. 343.]

Digitized by Google

Adam. *I thank the, Lord, of thy grete grace*
That now is forgiven my gret trespace,
Now shall we dwellyn in blyssful place, &c.

The last scene or pageant, which represents the day of judgment, begins thus:[1]

Michael. Surgite, *All men aryse,*
Venite ad judicium,
For now is set the High Justice,
And hath assignyd the day of dome:
Rape you redyly to this grett assyse.
Both gret and small, all and sum,
And of your answer you now avise,
What you shall say, when that yow com, &c.

These and such like were the plays, which in former ages were presented publicly. Whether they had any settled and constant houses for that purpose, does not appear; I suppose not. But it is notorious that in former times there was hardly ever any solemn reception of princes or noble persons, but pageants, that is, stages erected in the open street, were part of the entertainment: on which there were speeches by one or more persons, in the nature of scenes; and be sure one of the speakers must be some saint of the same name with the party to whom the honour is intended. For instance, there is an ancient manuscript at Coventry, called the "Old Leet Book," wherein is set down in a very particular manner, p. 168, the reception of Queen Margaret, wife of Henry VI. who came to Coventry; and, I think, with her young son, Prince Edward, on the Feast of the Exaltation of the Holy Cross, 35 Hen. VI. 1456. Many pageants and speeches were made for her

[1] See Halliwell's "Ludus Conventriæ," 1841, p. 401.]

Digitized by Google

welcome; out of all which I shall observe but two or three in the old English, as it is recorded :—

St. Edward. *Moder of mekenes, dame Margarete, princes most excellent,*
I king Edward wellcome you with affection cordial,
Testefying to your highnes mekely myn entent.
For the wele of the king and you hertily pray I shall,
And for prince Edward my gostly chylde, who I love principal,
Praying the, John Evangelist, my help therein to be,
On that condition right humbly I give this ring to the.

John Evangelist. *Holy Edward, crowned king, brother in verginity,*
My power plainly I will prefer thy will to amplefy.
Most excellent princes of wymen mortal, your bedeman will I be.
I know your life so vertuous that God is pleased thereby.
The birth of you unto this reme shall cause great melody:
The vertuous voice of prince Edward shall dayly well encrease,
St Edward his Godfader, and I shall prey therefore doubtlese.

St Margaret. *Most notabul princes of wymen earthle,*
Dame Margarete, the chefe myrth of this empyre,
Ye be hertely welcome to this cyte.
To the plesure of your highnesse I will set my desyre;
Both nature and gentlenesse doth me require,
Seth we be both of one name, to shew you kindnesse;
Wherefore by my power ye shall have no distresse.

I shall pray to the prince that is endlese
To socour you with solas of his high grace;

Digitized by Google

He will here my petition, this is doubtlesse,
For I wrought all my life that his will wace.
Therefore, lady, when you be in any dredfull case,
Call on me boldly, therof I pray you,
And trust in me feythfully, I will do that may pay you.

In the next reign, as appears in the same book, fol. 221, another Prince Edward, son of King Edward IV., came to Coventry on the 28th of April, 14 Edward IV. 1474, and was entertained with many pageants and speeches, among which I shall observe only two; one was of St Edward again, who was then made to speak thus:—

Noble Prince Edward, my cousin and my knight,
And very prince of our line com yn dissent,
I St Edward have pursued for your faders imperial right,
Whereof he was excluded by full furious intent.
Unto this your chamber, as prince full excellent,
Ye be right welcome. Thanked be Crist of his sonde,
For that that was ours is now in your faders honde.

The other speech was from St George, and thus saith the book:—

"———— *Also upon the condite in the Croscheping was St George armed, and a king's daughter kneling afore him with a lamb, and the fader and the moder being in a towre aboven beholding St George saving their daughter from the dragon, and the condite renning wine in four places, and minstralcy of organ playing, and St George having this speech underwritten*"—

O mighty God, our all succour celestiall,
Which this royme hast given in dower
To thi moder, and to me George protection perpetuall:

Digitized by Google

It to defend from enimys fer and nere,
And as this mayden defended was here
By that grace from this dragons devour,
So, Lord, preserve this noble prince and ever be his socour.

LOVE. I perceive these holy matters consisted very much of praying; but I pity poor St Edward the Confessor who, in the compass of a few years, was made to promise his favour and assistance to two young princes, of the same name indeed, but of as different and opposite interests as the two poles. I know not how he could perform to both.

TRUE. Alas! they were both unhappy, notwithstanding these fine shows and seeming caresses of fortune; being both murdered, one by the hand, the other by the procurement, of Richard, Duke of Gloucester. I will produce but one example more of this sort of action or representations; and that is of later time, and an instance of much higher nature than any yet mentioned; it was at the marriage of Prince Arthur, eldest son of King Henry VII., to the Princess Catherine of Spain, ann. 1501. Her passage through London was very magnificent, as I have read it described in old MS. chronicle of that time.[1] The pageants and speeches were many; the persons represented, St Catherine, St Ursula, a senator, noblesse, virtue, an angel, King Alphonse, Job, Boetius, &c. Among others, one is thus described:— "*When this spech was ended, she held on her way tyll she came unto the standard in Chepe, where was ordeyned the fifth paygend made like an hevyn, theryn sytlyng a personage representing the fader of hevyn,*

[1] [See a description of the espousals in Stow's "Chronicle," ed. 1615, fol. 483–4.]

Digitized by Google

beyng all formyd of gold, and brennyng beffor his trone vii candyilis of wax standyng in vii candylstykis of gold, the said personage beyng environed with sundry hyrarchies off angelis, and sytting in a cope of most rich cloth of tyssu, garnishyd wyth stoon and perle in most sumptuous wyse. Foragain which said pagend upon the sowth syde of the strete stood at that tyme, in a hows wheryn that tyme dwellyd William Geffrey habyrdasher, the king, the queene, my lady the kingys moder, my lord of Oxynford, wyth many other lordys and ladys, and perys of this realm, wyth also certayn ambassadors of France lately sent from the French king: and so passyng the said estatys, eyther guyving to other due and convenyent saluts and countenancs, so sone as hyr grace was approachid unto the sayd pagend, the fadyr began his spech as folowyth"

Hunc veneram locum, septeno lumine septum.
Dignumque Arthuri totidem astra micant.

I am begynyng and ende, that made ech creature
My sylfe, and for my sylfe, but man esepecially
Both male and female, made aftyr myne aun fygure,
Whom I joyned togydyr in matrimony,
And that in paradyse, declaring opynly
That men shall weddying in my chyrch solempnize,
Fygurid and signifyed by the erthly paradyze.

In thys my chyrch I am allway recydent
As my chyeff tabernacle, and most chosyn place,
Among these goldyn condylstikkis, which represent
My catholyk chyrch shynyng affor my face,
With lyght of feyth, wisdom, doctryne, and grace,
And mervelously eke enflamyd toward me
Wyth the [un]*extyngwible fyre of charyte.*

Wherefore, my welbelovid dowthyr Katharyn,

Digitized by Google

Syth I have made yow to myne awn semblance
In my chyrch to be maried, and your noble childryn
To regn in this land as in their enherytance,
Se that ye have me in speciall remembrance:
Love me and my chyrch yowr spiritual modyr.
For ye, dispysing that oon, dyspyse that othyr.

Look that ye walk in my precepts, and obey them well:
And here I give you the same blyssyng, that I
Gave my well beloved chylder of Israell;
Blyssyd be the fruyt of your bely;
Yower substance and frutys I shall encrease and multyply;
Yower rebellious enimyes I shall put in yowr hand,
Encreasing in honour both yow and your land.

LOVE. This would be censured now-a-days as profane to the highest degree.

TRUE. No doubt on't: yet you see there was a time, when people were not so nicely censorious in these matters, but were willing to take things in the best sense; and then this was thought a noble entertainment for the greatest king in Europe (such I esteem king Henry VII. at that time) and proper for that day of mighty joy and triumph. And I must farther observe out of Lord Bacon's "History of Henry VII." that the chief man who had the care of that day's proceedings was Bishop Fox, a grave counsellor for war or peace, and also a good surveyor of works, and a good master of ceremonies; and it seems he approv'd it. The said Lord Bacon tells us farther that, whosoever had those toys in compiling, they were not altogether pedantical.

LOVE. These things, however, are far from that which we understand by the name of a play.

Digitized by Google

TRUE. It may be so; but these were the plays of those times. Afterwards, in the reign of King Henry VIII., both the subject and form of these plays began to alter, and have since varied more and more. I have by me a thing called "A Merry Play between the Pardoner and the Friar, the Curate and Neighbour Pratt." Printed the 5th of April 1533, which was 24 Henry VIII. (a few years before the dissolution of monasteries.) The design of this play was to ridicule Friars and Pardoners. Of which I'll give you a taste. To begin it, the Friar enters with these words:[1]

Deus hic; *the holy trynyte*
Preserve all that now here be.

Dere bretherne, yf ye will consyder
The cause why I am com hyder,
Ye wolde be glad to knowe my entent:
For I com not hyther for mony nor for rent,
I com not hyther for meat nor for meale,
But I com hyther for your soules heale, &c.

After a long preamble he addresses himself to preach, when the Pardoner enters with these words:

God and St Leonarde send ye all his grace,
As many as ben assembled in this place, &c.

and makes a long speech, showing his bulls and his reliques, in order to sell his pardons, for the raising some money towards the rebuilding

Of the holy chappell of sweet saynt Leonarde,
Which late by fyre was destroyed and marde.

[1] [Compare vol. i. pp. 199, 201, &c.]

Digitized by Google

Both these speaking together with continual interruption, at last they fall together by the ears. Here the curate enters (for you must know the scene lies in the church):

Hold your hands; a vengeance on ye both two,
That ever ye came hyther to make this ado,
To polute my chyrche, &c.

Friar. *Mayster Parson, I marvayll ye will give lycence*
To this false knave in this audience
To publish his ragman rolles with lyes.
I desyred hym ywys more than ones or twyse
To hold his peas tyll that I had done,
But he would here no more than the man in the mone.

Pard. *Why sholde I suffre the, more than thou me?*
Mayster Parson gave me lycence before the.
And I wolde thou knowest it I have relykes here,
Other maner stuffe than thou dost bere:
I wyll edefy more with the syght of it,
Than with all thy pratynge of holy wryt;
For that except that the precher himselfe lyve well,
His predycacyon wyll helpe never a dell, &c.

Par. *No more of this wranglyng in my chyrch:*
I shrewe yowr hertys bothe for this lurche.
Is there any blood shed here between these knaves?
Thanked be God they had no starys,
Nor egotoles, for then it had ben wronge,
Well, ye shall synge another songe.

Here he calls his neighbour Prat, the constable, with design to apprehend 'em, and set 'em in the stocks. But the Friar and Pardoner prove sturdy, and will not be stocked, but fall upon the poor Parson and Constable, and bang them both so

Digitized by Google

well-favouredly, that at last they are glad to let 'em go at liberty: and so the farce ends with a drawn battle. Such as this were the plays of that age, acted in gentlemen's halls at Christmas or such like festival times by the servants of the family or strollers who went about, and made it a trade. It is not unlikely that the[1] lords in those days and persons of eminent quality had their several gangs of players, as some have now of fiddlers, to whom they give cloaks and badges. The first comedy that I have seen, that looks like regular, is "Gammer Gurton's Needle," writ,[2] I think, in the reign of King Edward VI. This is composed of five acts, the scenes unbroken, and the unities of time and place duly observed. It was acted at Christ's College in Cambridge, there not being as yet any settled and public theatres.

LOVE. I observe, Trueman, from what you have said, that plays in England had a beginning much like those of Greece; the Monologues and Pageants, drawn from place to place on wheels, answer exactly to the cart of Thespis, and the improvements have been by such little steps and degrees as among the ancients, till at last, to use the words of Sir George Buck (in his "Third University of England"), "Dramatic poesy is so lively express'd and represented upon the public stages and theatres of this city, as Rome in the auge (the highest pitch) of her pomp and glory, never saw it better performed, I mean (says he)

[1] Till the twenty-fifth year of Queen Elizabeth, the queen had not any players; but in that year twelve of the best of all those who belonged to several lords were chosen, and sworn her servants.—*Stow's Annals*, p. 698.

[2] [An error. This play, which has been long known not to be the first regular comedy, was probably performed about 1566.]

Digitized by Google

in respect of the action and art, and not of the cost and sumptuousness." This he writ about the year 1631. But can you inform me, Trueman, when the public theatres were first erected for this purpose in London?

TRUE. Not certainly; but I presume about the beginning of Queen Elizabeth's reign. For Stow, in his "Survey of London" (which book was first printed in the year 1598), says—"Of late years, in place of these stage-plays (*i.e.*, those of religious matters) have been used comedies, tragedies, interludes, and histories, both true and feigned: for the acting whereof certain public places, as the Theatre, the Curtine, &c., have been erected." And the continuator of "Stow's Annals," p. 1004, says that in sixty years before the publication of that book (which was Ann. Dom. 1529), no less than seventeen public stages, or common playhouses, had been built in and about London. In which number he reckons five inns or common hostelries to have been in his time turned into playhouses—one Cockpit, Saint Paul's Singing-school, one in the Blackfriars, one in the Whitefriars, and one in former time at Newington Butts. And adds: Before the space of sixty years past, I never knew, heard, or read of any such theatres, stages, or playhouses, as have been purposely built within man's memory.

LOVE. After all, I have been told that stage-plays are inconsistent with the laws of this kingdom, and players made rogues by statute.

TRUE. He that told you so strained a point of truth. I never met with any law wholly to suppress them: sometimes, indeed, they have been prohibited for a season; as in times of Lent, general mourning, or public calamities, or upon other occasions, when the government saw fit. Thus, by proclamation 7th of April, in the first

Digitized by Google

year of Queen Elizabeth, plays and interludes were forbid until All-hallow-tide next following. Hollinshed, p. 1184.[1] Some statutes have been made for their regulation or information, not general suppression. By the stat. 39 Eliz. cap. 4[2] (which was made for the suppression of rogues, vagabonds, and sturdy beggars) it is enacted "*That all persons that be, or utter themselves to be, proctors, procurers, patent gatherers, or collectors for goals, prisons, or hospitals, or fencers, bearwards, common players of interludes and minstrels, wandering abroad (other than players of interludes belonging to any baron of this realm, or any other honourable personage of greater degree, to be authoris'd to play under the hand and seal of arms of such baron or personage) all juglers, tinkers, pedlars, and petty chapmen, wand'ring abroad, all wand'ring persons, &c., able in body, using loytering, and refusing to work for such reasonable wages as is commonly given, &c. These shall be adjudged and deemed rogues, vagabonds, and sturdy beggars, and punished as such.*"

LOVE. But this privilege of authorising or licensing is taken away by the stat. Jac. I., ch. 7, s. 1., and therefore all of them, as Mr Collier says, p. 242, are expressly brought under the aforesaid penalty without distinction.

TRUE. If he means all players, without distinction, 'tis a great mistake. For the force of the queen's statute extends only to wandering players, and not to such as are the king or queen's servants, and established in settled houses by royal authority. On such the ill character of vagrant players (or, as they are now called, strollers) can cast no more aspersion, than the wandering proctors, in the same statute mentioned, on those of

[1] [See "English Drama and Stage," edit. Hazlitt, p. 19.]
[2] [*Ibid.*, p. 37.]

Digitized by Google

Doctors'-Commons. By a stat. made 3 Jac. I.[1] ch. 21, it was enacted, "*That if any person shall, in any stage-play, interlude, shew, may-game or pageant, jestingly or prophanely speak or use the holy name of God, Christ Jesus, or of the Trinity, he shall forfeit for every such offence* 10*l.*" The stat. 1 Charles I. ch. 1,[2] enacts, "*That no meetings, assemblies, or concourse of people shall be out of their own parishes, on the Lord's day, for any sports or pastime whatsoever, nor any bear-baiting, bull-baiting, interludes, common-plays, or other unlawful exercises and pastimes used by any person or persons within their own parishes.*" These are all the statutes that I can think of, relating to the stage and players; but nothing to suppress them totally, till the two ordinances of the Long Parliament, one of the 22d of October 1647, the other of the 11th [9th] of Feb. 1647;[3] by which all stage-plays and interludes are absolutely forbid; the stages, seats, galleries, &c., to be pulled down; all players, tho' calling themselves the king or queen's servants, if convicted of acting within two months before such conviction, to be punished as rogues according to law; the money received by them to go to the poor of the parish; and every spectator to pay five shillings to the use of the poor. Also cock-fighting was prohibited by one of Oliver's Acts of 31st March 1654. But I suppose nobody pretends these things to be laws. I could say more on this subject, but I must break off here and leave you, Lovewit; my occasions require it.

LOVE. Farewell, old Cavalier.

TRUE. 'Tis properly said; we are almost all of us now gone and forgotten.

---

[1] ["English Dramas and Stage," p. 42.]
[2] [*Ibid.*, pp. 59, 60.] [3] [But see *Ibid.*, pp. 63-70.]

Digitized by Google

ERRATA.

Vol. I.	Page	62,	for *goodness*	read	*goddess.*
Vol. II.	...	135	... *knotted*	...	*notted.*[1]
...	...	216,	... *noboby*	...	*nobody.*
Vol. III.	...	58,[2]	... *oppose*	...	*appose.*
...	...	59,	... *maketh*	...	*keepeth.*
...	...	71,	... *fault*	...	*faults.*
...	...	82,	... *so sore*	...	*to fore.*
...	...	*ib.*	... *be fed*	...	*to be fed.*
...	...	83, l. 17.	The correspondent thinks this line belongs to *Omnes Famulæ.*		
...	...	88,	for *had chid*	read	*chid.*
...	...	95,	... *I ever*	...	*ever I.*
...	...	97,	... *wage-pasty*	...	*wag-pasty.*[3]
...	...	99,	... *he*	...	*ye.*
...	...	*ib.*	... *ield*	...	*yelde.*
...	...	105,	... *to please*	...	*it please.*
...	...	108,	... *a master*	...	*an M.*
...	...	117,	... *as much*	...	*so much.*
...	...	118,	... *make a*	...	*make me a.*
...	...	121,	... *another than*	...	*another but.*
...	...	*ib.*	... *readiness*	...	*a readiness.*
...	...	122,	... *other's*	...	*others'.*
...	...	*ib.*	... *point whereof*	...	*point wherefore.*
...	...	125,	... *draw ye*	...	*draw we.*
...	...	128,	... *thou goose*	...	*you goose.*
...	...	139,	... *Not if all the*	...	*Nor if all the.*
...	...	140,	... *where or how*	...	*where nor how.*
...	...	158,	... *all men*	...	*of all men.*
...	...	178,	... *halse-aker*	...	*half-acre.*[4]
Vol. V.	...	115,	... *Alvearic*	...	*Alvearie.*
...	...	285,	... *Got*	...	*Get.*
Vol. IX.	...	98,	... *collection*	...	*collation.*
...	...	*ib.*	... *moldash*	...	*molash.*
...	...	332,			
...	...	205,	... *Amoretta*	...	*Amoretto.*
Vol. X.	...	274,	... *Foresaw*	...	*Foresin.*
Vol. XI.	...	436,	... *Sir Thomas*	...	*St Thomas.*

---

[1] See Nares, ed. 1859, v. Nott. We still have the vulgarism *nut* for the head; but it more properly means a head with the hair cut close

[2] These errors in "Ralph Roister Doister" have been pointed out by a correspondent, who states that he has detected them on a personal collation of the original copy at Eton College. But many of the variations noticed by this gentleman have been intentional corrections of the old copy.

[3] Yet in "Jack Juggler" (ll. 141), *wage-pasty* occurs.

[4] So in "Appius and Virginia" (iv. 136)—

"Hard by Hodge's half-acre, at Gaffer Miller's stile."

Digitized by Google

INDEX TO NOTES.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

INDEX TO THE NOTES.

ABHOMINABLE, ii. 69
Abraham-men, iii. 171
Absolutions, tariff for, xi. 465
Accointenance, i. 79
Accombred, i. 299
Accomplished Woman, 1656, xiv. 483
Acquaince, i. 105
Actors' Remonstrance, x. 348
Addison, Joseph, ix. 490
Address, xiv. 326
Adonai, i. 109
Adultery, punishment for, xiv. 475–6
Adventures of Five Hours, a play, xv. 185–320
Adventures or insurances, xi. 137
A friend in court is worth a penny in purse, prov. i. 178
After kissing comes greater kindness, prov. xiii. 114
Agnes' Eve, St, xii. 21
Aim, to cry, v. 225
Ajax Oïleus, x. 132
Albricias, xv. 292
Albumazar, a play, xi. 294–421
Alcazar, battle of, xi. 213
Alder speed, i. 135
Alimony, Lady, a play, xiv. 273–367
Ale, i. 161, 185
—— Derby, xi. 234
Ales, church and other, xiii. 503
Ale-stake, i. 191
Alexander and Lodwick, a play, xi. 239
Algates, i. 237
Almond for a parrot, an, x. 534
Alva, Duke of, xv. 231
Amadis of Gaul, xv. 91
Amain, xiv. 182
Ambergris, xiii. 490
Ambree, Mary, xi. 111
Amends for Ladies, a play, xi. 88–172
America, viii. 406; xii. 135
Amias [Emaas]. i. 333
Amphitruo of Plautus, xi. 314
Anagrams, xiv. 483
Ancients, xiii. 291
Andromana, a play, xiv. 194–271
Angoulême, Earl of, viii. 251
Antiquary, the, a play, xiii. 411–523
Apollo Shroving, a play, xi. 196
Apollonius of Tyana, xi. 310
Appaireth, i. 101
Appius and Virginia, a play, 1575, iv. 100–55
Apple-squires, xiii. 125
Appoline, St, vi. 74

Digitized by Google

Apricocks, xiv. 344
Arcadia, Sydney's, xiii. 468
Aretine's pictures, xiii. 309
Argiers, xiv. 327
Argosies, xii. 100
Aristippus, iv. 15 *et seq.*, v. 286
Aristophanes, ix. 376
Armada, the Spanish, vi. 447
Arrayed (or rayed), i. 78, 178
Arride, xiii. 445
Artemisia (or southern-wood), xii. 144
Arthur, King, iv. 255 *et seq.*
Arundel, xi. 70
As brisk as a body-louse, prov. iii. 209
Asinigo, xiii. 519
Assoil, vii. 169; xv. 253.
As soon goeth to market the lamb's fell as the sheep's, prov. i. 78
Astræa, D'Urfe's, xiii. 468
Astrology, xi. 301–2 *et seq.*
As true as the skin between thy brows, prov., iii. 244
Athelwold, vi. 27
At nale, i. 166
Audience, direct allusions to, from the stage, vi. 288, 327; viii. 456
Aums-ace, ii. 35; xii. 243
Aunt, xiii. 70, 160; xiv. 448.
Autolycus, xiii. 486
Automatons, xiii. 230
Avoutry, i. 175; iii. 151, &c.
Away the mare, i. 57
A young man's darling, an old man's warling, prov., x. 303

BABYLON, i. 162
Backare, quod Mortimer to his sow, iii. 65
Backrag (or Baccarach), xiii. 216
Bacon, Francis, iv. 251; xiii. 462
Bacon, Friar, vii. 357; xi. 84, 252
Baker, Henry, an actor, viii. 78
Bale, John, i. 278 *et seq.*
Bale or pair of dice, xi. 221
Bales, Peter, viii. 41
Ball, John, xiv. 488
Balloon, a game, vii. 50
Banbury, xii. 248
Bandello, M., x. 115
Bands, starched, xi. 328–9
Bankes's horse, xiv. 508–9
Barbary, xi. 213, 215
Barclay, Alexander, viii. 47
Barkley (or Barclay), Sir R., xii. 538
——Sir W., xii. 538–627
Barrey, Lodowick, x. 266–380
Bate me an ace, quoth Bolton, prov., iv. 77
Batteries, xiii. 218
Bayard, xiii. 94
Bay-window, xiv. 403
Bear and Ragged Staff, viii. 174
Bear in hand, to, x. 303
Beau Disconu, Le, a romance, i. 401
Beaumont and Fletcher, xii. 19; xiv. 194
Bedlams, iii. 170–1
Beer, broken, xii. 228
—— four and six shilling, xiii. 12, 43
Beggars, frauds of, xii. 108
Beggars'-bush, vii. 335
Behight, i. 248
Behu, Mrs, ix. 469; xiii. 178
Bell, book, and candle, x. 309
Bells, to ring the, backwards, xiii. 230
Belsavage, the, a sign, viii. 116

Digitized by Google

Belvidere, or the Garden of the Muses, 1600, ix. 111
Benchers, xiii. 290–1
Benefit of clergy, viii. 244
Benlowes, E., xiv. 11.
Berew, i. 246
Bergen-op-Zoom, ix. 293
Bermondsey, i. 335
Bermudas, the, xi. 137; xiv. 333
Bestial, i. 12, 13
Betso, xiii. 460
Betterton, Tho., xv. 196
Bevis of Hampton, xi. 70
Beyond Lawrence of Lancashire, prov., xi. 85
Bias, xiv. 454
Biggon, xiii. 288
Bilboa blades, x. 218
Bill of the plague, xiv. 449
Bills, x. 342; xi. 469
Birdbolt, xi. 200
Black, note on the word, xii. 245
Blackfriars, xi. 111
Black's her eye, prov., ix. 78
Blank, the, ii. 35
Ble, i. 251
Blind eats many a fly, the, prov., x. 503
Blind [men] can judge no colour, prov., v. 293
Blowpoint, xiii. 435
Blue coats or badges, x. 349
Boccaccio, Gio. xiii. 105
Bodenham, John, ix. 112
Booker, John, xiv. 396–7
Book-holder, viii. 17, 87
Boot, the Scotch, xi. 66.
Bold, v., i. 182
Bonduca, a play, xii. 19
Bonerly, i. 243
Bongrace, Master, ii. 113
Bonner, Bp. iv. 244
Borachio, xv. 215
Bordella's blouses, xiv. 344
Boston, our Lady of, i. 337
Bothwell, Lord, xi. 224
Botolph, St, i. 334
Boulogne, our Lady of, iii. 199–200
Bourbonne-les-Bains, xiv. 52
Bowyer, Mich., xiii. 102
Brach, i. 185
Brai, the story of the physician of, vi. 207
Brandt, Sebastian, viii. 47
Brathwaite, R., xii. 23
Brennus, xii. 449 *et seq.*
Brewen (or Bruin), Alderman, xii. 91, *et seq.*
Brigand harness, i. 251
Bright, Dr Timothy, viii. 41
Brimstone, quick, i. 179
Bristol, George Digby, Earl of, xv. 1–107, 187
Britain, ancient divisions of, xii. 516
Brome, Richard, xiv. 480
Bromfield, Mr, xiii. 209
Broom, i. 65
——, "A new broom sweeps clean," prov., iv. 21
Brothers of the blade, xiv. 330
Browne, Robert, xiii. 227
Buck, Paul, vi. 13
Buckets, fire, names inscribed on, xiii. 230
Buckingham, Duke of, v. 15, 37
Burbage, R., xi. 5
Burport—"taw halts of Burport," i. 158
Butcher (or Boucher), Richard, xiii. 413
Butler, S., xiii. 329
Butler's box, the, ix. 103; x. 299
Buxton, i. 334
Buzzardism, xiv. 357
Bye and main, xiv. 427
By the lock, a phrase, xiii. 168

Digitized by Google

Cacus, xii. 516
Calderon, Pedro, xv. 187, 193–4
Calisto and Melibœa, i. 52 *et seq.*
Calvary, Mount, i. 332
Calvinists, exiled, xiii. 295
Camoëns, Lois de, x. 468
Camomile, xiii. 138
Candles, holy, iii. 188
Cannon Street, x. 547
Cape, i. 162
Caperhay, vii. 421
Cap of maintenance, xii. 109
Caracts, xiv. 325
Carew, Thomas, xi. 510; xiv. 372
Carfax, vii. 333
Carouches, x. 336; xi. 202
Carpet-knight, viii. 173
Carry-coals, a phrase, viii. 417
Carta blanca, xv. 72
Cartwright, W., xii. 204–318; xiii. 203
Cary, Henry, Viscount Falkland, xv. 111
Case, Thomas, xiv. 516
Cassandra, x. 132
Castara [Lady Lucia Herbert], xiii. 324
Casti, Luigi, xiv. 480
Cat in pan, to turn, a phrase, iv. 41
Cats, gibbed or gib, xiii. 31
Catwade, i. 341
Cauls, xv. 90–1
Caveare, xii. 236
Cervantes, xiii. 105
Chadders, xiii. 231
Chains of gold worn by persons of quality, xi. 324–5
Chalk, to sin in, xiii. 287; xiv. 331
Challenges, etiquette of, xi. 224, 389
Chamberlain, Robert, xiv. 3, 9
Chanticleers, the London, a play, xii. 320–60
Charles I., xii. 206
—— II., xv. 194
Charmers, xii. 505
Chase, the, vii. 41
Chaucer, Geffrey, xii. 240–2, 286
Chelsea College, xii. 277–8
Cherry-pit, i. 246
Chess, game of, ix. 387
Cheston [Cheshunt] nunnery, x. 215
Chettle, Henry, viii. 95–6, 200–327
Chopines, x. 367
Christ-cross, ix. 42
Christmas, xiii. 20–1
Chrysome, xiii. 280
Churchyard, T., ix. 118
Cicero's treatise, "De Republicâ," xiii. 476
Citizenship, xii. 136
City Match, a play, xiii. 200–320
City Nightcap, the, a play, xiii. 99–197
Clerkenwell Green, xi. 98
Cloak for every rain, to have a, prov., xiii. 56
Clocks, German, xii. 231
Cloth, flinching of, xii. 259
Cloth-dealers in Watling Street, iv. 243
Clouds, the, by Aristophanes, ix. 376
Clown, the, in plays, iv. 160
Coaches, x. 336–7
Cob's pound, xv. 32
Cockatrice, xiii. 499–500
Cock-sure, vi. 67
Cole, old, vii. 476
Coll my dog, iii. 8, 9
Cologne, three kings of, iii. 200
Combat, laws of, x. 129

Digitized by Google

Complaisant Companion, the, a jest-book, x. 115
Comptes du Monde aventureux, xiv. 480
Conduits, speeches delivered from, xiii. 243
Constable, Henry, ix. 113–14
Content—"To go look content," a phrase, xiii. 141
Contention between Liberality and Prodigality, a play, viii. 330–83
Convey, i. 159
Cooke, John, xi. 174–289
Cooke, Joshua, ix. 2
Cool his heels, to, a phrase, xiii. 52
Cooling card, xiii. 505
Coomb House, xiii. 14, 16
Cooper's "Thesaurus" referred to, x. 218
Copernicus, i. 38
Copesmate, xiii. 30
Copland, Robert, viii. 19
Corbet, Bp., xii. 248
Cornelia, a play, v. 176–252
Cornelys, St, i. 336; vi. 74
Corner-cap, iii. 11
Corney, Bolton, ix. 100; xiii. 203
Coryat, Thomas, iii. 200; xi. 313; xii. 227
Costermongers, xiii. 125
Cotswold or Cotsol, iii. 137
Cotterel, Sir Clement, i. xv.
Counters, the London, x. 344; xiii. 41
Coventry Mysteries, the, i. 374
Cow-cross, xi. 98
Cowley, Abr., xv. 199
Coxcomb Park, xiii. 14
Crabbed age and youth, &c, a song, quoted, xiii. 89
Cramp-rings, xii. 255–6
Crane, Sir Francis, xiii. 233
Cranes in the Vintry, the three, iv. 87; vii. 357
Creature, i. 123
Creeping to the cross, x. 236; xii. 255–6
Cries of London, xi. 436
Crofts, Cecilia, xiv. 372
Crome, i. 341
Cromwell, Oliver, ix. 334, 348; xii. 316; xiv. 475–6
Cross, red, houses marked with a, xiv. 405
Crotchets, xiii. 15
Crowned cups, xii. 39
Croydon sanguine, iv. 80
Crystals, pair of [the eyes], xiii. 55
Cucking-stool, xii. 127
Cue, xi. 225
Cuerpo, xiii. 278
Cupboard-beds, xv. 216
Cupid's arrows, fable of, xii. 31
Cupid's Revenge, a play, xiv. 194
Curfew-bell, the, x. 251
Curtains at theatres, xiv. 97
Curtal, iii. 211
Cushion, beside the, x. 237
Custom, xiv. 74
Cut, xiii. 85
Cut and long tail, xiii. 84–5
Cutpurse, Moll, xi. 90
Cutter, xiii. 16, 17

DAGENHAM, i. 336
Daisy, to leap at a, iii. 251
Danes, red-haired, v. 121
Daniel, S., ix. 114; xi. 449; xiii. 438
Danter, John, ix. 120
Darby's bands, ii. 362
Darius' doleful strain, King, iv. 159
Daubing—"There is craft in daubing," prov., i. 159

Digitized by Google

Davenant, Sir W., xi. 504; xv. 199
Davenport, Robert, xiii. 99 197; xiv. 7
David's, St, i. 339
Davies, Sir John, ix. 115
Daw, a fool, i. 8
Day, John, ix. 100
Daylight, to burn, prov., v. 115
Day's-man, iii. 14
Death, to die the, i. 291–2
Deboshed, xiii. 195
Dedekindus, viii. 73
Deep Ditch, xii. 127
Dejanira, ix. 169
Delayed, i. 81; xiii. 114
Demains, xiv. 346
Denham, Sir John, xiv. 245
Denis, St, i. 339
Derby ale, xi. 234
Deuce-ace, ii. 35
Devil, the, as a character in plays, ii. 307; iii. 205
——, "The devil is in the horologe," prov., iii. 101
——, "Who dips with the devil hath need of a long spoon," prov., iv. 118
——, a tavern so called, xiii. 22; xiv. 454
——, "The devil is dead," prov., xiii. 141
Dewes, Sir Simonds, xiii. 21
Dice, bale or pair of, xi. 221
Digby, Sir Kenelm, xii. 245, 362; xv. 4
—— George, Earl of Bristol, xv. 1–107, 187
—— Lady Venetia, xii. 362
Dionysius of Syracuse, iv. 29
Dismissed, xiv. 350
Divining-rod, the, v. 402
Doccy, i. 188
Dod, John, xii. 299
Dod's blessing, xii. 299
Dodsley, R., i., xv., *et alibi*; xi. 360–1
Dodsley's Plays, note on the edit. of 1825–8, vi. 4
Dogberry, Shakespeare's, xiv. 333.
Dole, xi. 208–9
Dolent, i. 82
Dormer, Sir Clement, i., xv.
Dottrel, the, iv. 68
Dovercourt in Essex, viii. 399
Downton, Thomas, viii. 19
Drake, Sir F., xiii. 256
Drawers at taverns, xiii. 19
Dreaming of husbands on St Agnes' Eve, xii. 21
Drolleries and interludes, xv. 410
Drought, great, of 1592, viii. 37
Drunkenness, statute against, x. 335, 354
——, excess of, xi. 251, 345
Dryden, John, vii. 7–8, 78
Ducarel, Dr, xiii. 419
Ducie family, xiv. 4
Ducking, xii. 127
Duels in England, xi. 390
Dulwich College, xv. 408
Dumb Knight, the, a play, x. 108–200
Duns Scotus, x. 57
Dunstan, St, viii. 391 *et seq.*
Duppa, Brian, xiii. 201
Duretta, xiii. 222
D'Urfé, Honoré, xiii. 468
Dutch, the, iii. 325
Dyer, Sir Edward, viii. 73; ix. 455

EAGLES, young, v. 319
Earle's Microcosmography, xiii. 475
Early up, and never the near, prov., xi. 146
Echineis, the, xiii. 525

Digitized by Google

Echo poetry, vii. 148; xi. 477
Ecstasy, xiii. 511
Edmondsbury, St, i. 337
Edmund Ironside, xii. 287
Edward I., xii. 309
Edward VI., i. 431
Edwards, Richard (the elder), iv. 3–104; viii. 387
Eggs for money, xiii. 92
Elements, Interlude of the Four, i. 4–50
Elfrid, vi. 27
Elfrida, vi. 27
Elinor, Queen, xii. 309
Elizabeth, Q., viii. 22; ix. 161; x. 487; xv. 427-30
Elms, the, in Smithfield, iii. 324
Eltham, Sir John, viii. 105
Elvira, a play, xv. 1–107
Embalming, i. 60
England—"If England to itself," &c., xii. 468
Englishmen for my Money, a play, x. 470–564
Ennewed, i. 62
Erastus and Perseda, v. 255
Erragon, i. 162
Eschewed, i. 77
Essex man, an, xiv. 467
Eterne, i. 11
Eudoxus of Cnidus, xiii. 452
Eulenspiegel, vii. 358
Euphorbium, i. 178
Euripides, the "Hecuba" of, iv. 263
Euripus Euboicus, vii. 37
Evans, Dr, xii. 20
Evelyn, John, xi. 251; xv. 199
Everichone, i. 138
Every Man, the Summoning of, an interlude, i. 94–142
Exchange, the Royal, x. 487
Eyes, kissing the, xi. 396
——, eloquence of the, xiii. 438
FABELL, Peter, x. 207
Faces about, xiv. 380
Fagaries, xiv. 289
Fair Quarrel, A, a play, xi. 139
Fair words maketh fools fain, prov., i. 117
Falantado (or Falanta), viii. 22
Falkland, Henry, Viscount, xv. 111–184
Fall, *v.*, i. 285
Falstaff originally called *Oldcastle*, xi. 152
Farewell, fortypence, prov., x. 526
Far fetched and dear bought is good for ladies, prov., iii. 223
Fast and loose, xiii. 174
Faustulus, xii. 490
Favell, i. 164
Fere, i. 188
Fescennine poetry, xii. 312
Field, Nathaniel, xi. 2–172; xv. 416
Fifteens, x. 299–300
Firedrakes, ix. 572
Fisher, Jasper, xii. 446–536
Fishes, strange, xiii. 248, 259, 267
Fit, i. 246; ii. 48
Fitz-geoffrey, Charles, x. 110
Flageolet, the, viii. 31
Flemings, iii. 325
Fletchers' Company, iv. 19; xiii. 40
Fliegen, Eve, story of, xiii. 236–7
Floods, notices of, viii. 38
Floralia, xiii. 435
Flout, xiv. 190
Flower, Francis, iv. 251
Flowers, language of, xii. 144
Flute, the, viii. 31
Fodes, i. 243, 247

Digitized by Google

Foist, xiv. 385
Fool, i. 71
Fools—Begging for a fool, xiii. 246
—— bauble, xi. 57
—— coat, xiii. 30
Fools have fortune, xiv. 474
Fordoth, i. 68
Fortune theatre, xi. 136, 434; xv. 406
Foster, Sir Stephen, xii. 90, *et seq.*
Found, i. 244
Fountain, the, a tavern, xiii. 14
Fox, a sword, xiv. 387
Fox, intoxicate, xiii. 28
Free jug or bottle, the, xii. 336
French, broken, &c., put into the mouths of speakers (often improperly), vi. 200; vii. 139, 162
—— pedlars, vi. 202; viii. 169
Friar Fox and Gillian of Brentford, a play, viii. 19
Friars-Limiters, i. 216
Fuimus Troes: the True Trojans, a play, xii. 446–536
Fulbeck, W. iv. 251
Fullam, xii. 124
Fulwell, Ulpian, iii. 304–59; ix. 367
Funeral customs, xiii. 81–2
Funeral of Richard Cordelion, a play, viii. 206

GALAOR, Sir, xv. 91
Gale, Samuel, xiii. 419
Galileo, xi. 317
Gallant, treatise of a, i. 174
Gallo-belgicus, xi. 513
Games, statute against unlawful, iii. 9
—— noticed, ix. 387–8; xii. 120-1; xiii. 238–9
Gaming at Christmas, xiii. 20–1
Gammer Gurton's Needle, a comedy, iii. 164–256; x. 427
Garden-houses, xii. 119
Garlands, xiii. 37
Garlic, supposed to be a play or ballad, xi. 434
Garnier, Robert, v. 178 *et seq.*
Gazet, xiii. 477
George, the, at Waltham, xiv. 405
George-a-Green, viii. 151
Gerbier, Charles, xiv. 7
Gillivors, xii. 144
Girdle — "May my girdle break," a phrase, xiii. 10
Give a thing, and take a thing, xiv. 463
Glass House, the, xiv. 449
Glaucus and Scilla, x. 507
Gleek, a game, xiv. 396
Goad, Dr John, xv. 400
God, i. 100
—— is a good man, ii. 73
—— refuse me, xiii. 5
God's sonties, an oath, xiv. 145
Godfrey of Boulogne, xii. 137
Golding Square, xv. 406
Gold used in medicine, xii. 116
Gomersall, Robert, xiv. 488
Good, i. 152
Goodman, Nicholas, xiii. 414
Goshawk, haggard, xiii. 161
Got—"be got," i. 107
Gough, John, x. 384; xiv. 10
——, Robert, x. 384
Grandmother, to see one's, xiii. 33
Grange, Laird of, xi. 224
Gredaline petticoat, xiv. 418
Green gowns, to give, a phrase, viii. 25–6

Digitized by Google

Greene, Robert, viii. 5, 8, 10–11; xi. 519; xiii. 105
——, Thomas, actor, xi. 176 *et seq.*
"Green's Tu Quoque," a play, xi. 174–289
Gresham, Sir T., x. 487
—— family, xi. 503
Grim the Collier of Croydon, a play, viii. 386–470
Groom, i. 252; iv. 283
Groom-porter or box-keeper, xii. 121
Grotius, Hugo, xiii. 254
Guardon, i. 206
Guilpin, Edward, vi. 15
Gwendoline, xii. 521
Gypsies, xiii.174

Habington, Thomas, xiii. 323
——, W., xiii. 321–409
Hair, combing the, on the stage, xiv. 394
Haled, xiv. 479
Hales, blood of, i. 338
Half-moon, xiv. 456
Hall, Old, viii. 24
Hampden, John, xii. 316
Handsel, vi. 403
Happily, xiii. 362
Happy man, happy dole, prov., iv. 21
Harbinger, xi. 307
Harlot, i. 253
Harlotry, viii. 351
Haro, clameur de, xii. 253
Harold Harefoot, viii. 233
Harpocrates, xii. 469
Harry groats, xiii. 232, 256
Harvey, Gabriel, viii. 3, 4 *et seq.* 10, 11
Haslewood, Joseph, i. 391–3
Hats worn by women, x. 16
Hatton, Sir Chr., vii. 75
Haught, xiv. 442
Haughton, W., x. 470–564
Hawkins, Sir Richard, xiii. 256
——, W., xi. 196
Haxter, xiv. 282, 322
Hay, the, a dance, xii. 341
Haydigee, xii. 507
Hazard, a game, ii. 34
Hazlitt, W., x. 205
Heal, i. 212
Health-drinking, practices at, xiii. 441
Hearne, Thomas, xv. 400
Heart of grace, xii. 212
Hector, xi. 447
Heildom, xiii. 43
Heir, the, a play, xi. 502–84
Heirlooms, xi. 354
Hele, i. 129
Helmets plumed with ostrich feathers, xiv. 45
Hend, i. 250
Hengistus, xii. 287
Henslowe, P., xi. 4, 55
Herbs and flowers strewed at weddings, x. 366
Hercules and Lychas, xiii. 515
Hercules, x. 169; xii. 516
He who sups with the devil has need of a long spoon, prov., viii. 460–1
Heywood, John, i. 196–238, 325 *et seq.*
——, Thomas, i. 329; iv. 348; xi. 177, 179; xii. 95
Hickscorner, an interlude, i. 143–95
Hieronimo, part of, iv. 361
——. See *Jeronymo*
Highgate, viii. 380
High men and low men, xii. 244
Hight (or hyght), i. 129
Highwayman, xiv. 382
Hill, Aaron, vi. 27
Historia Histrionica, xv. 400–31

Digitized by Google

Histriomastix, Prynne's, xiii. 226
Hobby-horse, viii. 24; xi. 267
——, "The hobby-horse is forgot," xi. 267
Hofman, Goody, xiii. 228
Hogsnorton, ii. 31
Holland's Leaguer, xiii. 414
Holt, i. 148
Homer, xi. 303
Hoodman-blind, x. 221
Horse-stealing, viii. 27
Hot-cockles, ix. 102; xv. 381
How a Man may Choose a Good Wife from a Bad, a play, ix. 2–96
Howard, Mr Henry, xv. 189–90
How can that be? xiv. 458
Howleglass, Tyl, vii. 358
Hudson, Thomas, ix. 116
Hugger-mugger, x. 90
Hughes, Thomas, iv. 251
Humorous, xiv. 296
Humphrey, to dine with Duke, vi. 553; xiii. 31, 264
Hundred Merry Tales, A, a story-book, i. 25
Hungarians, x. 227, 244
Huntley, Dick, viii. 17
Hussey, xiv. 331
Hymen's Triumph, a masque, xi. 449

I AM sorry for thee, but I cannot weep, prov., vi. 319
Iceland (or Isling) dogs, x. 321
If you know not me, you know nobody, prov., vii. 213
Image of Idleness, viii. 72
In danger, iii. 62
Indies, West, xi. 213
In dock, out nettle, prov. iii. 90
Ingelend, Thomas, ii. 266–320
Ingenious and ingenuous, xiii. 53; xiv. 281
Inkhorn phrases, viii. 70
Ink in the pen, ii. 92
Ink-pot terms, viii. 70
Inns of Court, Christmas at the, xiii. 20–1
Intellection, i. 124
Intreat, i. 237
Ireland, xi. 187
Irish, ii. 34
Irish earth, properties of, xii. 486
Irish footmen, xi. 121
Irus, xi. 548
Isle of Dogs, a play, viii. 6–8
Italian poets, study of the, viii. 5, 29, 72

JACK, the, at bowls, xii. 165
Jack Drum's Entertainment, prov., vi. 324
Jack Juggler, an interlude, ii. 104–57
Jack o' Lent, xi. 262
Jack Straw, a play, vi. 376–414
Jack will be a gentleman, prov., xii. 156
Jacob and Esau, an interlude, ii. 186–264
Jacques, Holy, xiv. 65
James I., ix. 114; xi. 328–9
James in Gales, St, i. 336
Janty, xiv. 401
Jehosaphat, i. 332
Jeronimo, a play in two parts, iv. 346–96; v. 3–173; xiv. 82
——, go by, go by, v. 109
Jet, i. 69
Jews furnished with large noses on the stage, x. 481
Jis (for Jesus), iii. 225
John, King, Shakespeare's play of, xiv. 136

Digitized by Google

John, Sir, ii. 25; x. 224–5
Jonson, Ben. iv. 361; v. 3, 4, 56, 70, 103, 147; viii. 97; ix. 393; xi. 504
Jordan, Thomas, xiv. 9
Judas colour, v. 121
Julian (or Jyl) of Brentford, viii. 19
Jumped, xiv. 248
Jump out, to, xiii. 62–3

Ka kob, jackdaw's, ii. 215
Kempe, W., viii. 4, 7; ix. 194
Kest, i. 179
Killigrew, Anne, xiv. 375
——, Henry, xiv. 375
——, Sir Robert, xiv. 371
——, Thomas, xiv. 370–535
——, Sir Will., xiv. 375
Kind-heart, a dentist, xii. 139
Kind will creep, &c., prov. i. 113
King and queen chosen on Twelfth Day, xii. 132
King's-evil, xii. 256
Kirkman, Francis, xv. 410–11
Kirksley, Prioress of, viii. 248
Knack, a, to Know a Knave, a play, vi. 504–91
Knight, J., xiv. 13
Knight of the Bath, creation of a, iv. 349
—— Post, vi. 533
—— Sun, x. 322; xii. 12; xiii. 42; xiv. 478
Knights, King James I.'s, x. 272; xi. 59
Knowles, Sir Robert, xii. 193
Knox, John, xii. 300; xiii. 228
Kyd, Thomas, iv. 346–96; v. 3 *et seq.*; xiv. 82

LADIES' garden, xiv. 343
Lamb, Charles, x. 87
Lame, to do, i. 252
Lamphire, John, xiii. 203
Lance-prisado, xiv. 328
Lapis lasuli, viii. 239
Latten, i. 183; ix. 393
Lattice, the red, viii. 241; ix. 510
Laud, i. 131
Laundress, x. 275, 317; xiii. 231
Lawrence of Lancashire, xi. 85
Lay the country, to, xiii. 253
Lead apes in hell, to, prov. x. 518
Leather, to cut thongs out of other people's, xiv. 315
Le Brun, Hugh, Earl of March, viii. 251
Legs, to make, viii. 81; xiv. 443
Leicester, Earl of, viii. 174
Leman, xiii. 499
Leme, i. 64
Lesing, i. 159, 246
Lest, i. 80, 247
Let the cat wink, prov. i. 265
Levite's Revenge, the, xiv. 483
Lewt, i. 255
Libbards, xiii. 282; xiv. 325
Lieger, xiii. 271
Lightening before death, the, viii. 266
Like lettuce, like lips, prov., iii. 23
Lincolnshire bagpipes, vi. 393
Lind, i. 255
Lindabrides, xiv. 478
Lingua, a play, ix. 332–463
Liripup, iii. 322
Litchfield, Rich. *pseud.* viii. 67
Lithgow, W., xii. 226
Little John, viii. 106, *et seq.*
Loave-ears, xiv. 321
Lob's pound, xv. 32
Locrine, a play, xii. 484

Digitized by Google

Lodge, Thomas, vii. 98, *et seq.*; ix. 114
Lok (or Lock), Henry, ix. 116
Lombards, i. 266
London Bridge, the building of, on wool-packs, xii. 341
Longeth, i. 254
Long Meg, a play, xi. 115, 434
Look about you, a play, vii. 386–506
Lost Lady, the, a play, xii. 538–627
Love me little, and love me long, prov., viii. 83
Loves, for all the, iii. 254
Lucan, v. 244
Ludgate prison, xii. 127, 192–3
Ludus Coventriæ, xv. 418
Lues Venerea, x. 10; xii. 296
Lug, i. 231
Lust's Dominion, a play, xiii. 178; xiv. 93–192
Lute-strings and grey paper, viii. 26
Luxur, x. 8
Lye, xiii. 38
Lyly (or Lily), John, viii. 45

MACHIAVELLI, N., viii. 72, 391
Machin, Lewis, x. 108–200
Macke, the, a play, ix. 388
Macquerellas, xiv. 296
Magisterium, i. 359
Mahomet and the mountain, vi. 410
Mahometans, xi. 318
Maids say nay and take, prov., viii. 308; x. 140
Maked, i. 252
Malacoton, xii. 236
Mandevile, Sir John, xii. 227
Mandubratius, xii. 508
Man of war, i. 185
Mantichora (or Mandragora), ix. 559
Mantle, Sir Thomas, viii. 105
Mapes, Walter, xii. 240
Marchpanes, xii. 235
Mare Liberum and *Mare Clausum*, xiii. 254
Marian, Maid, viii. 113 *et seq.*
Marius and Sylla, Wars of, vii. 105 *et seq.*
Markham, Gervase, x. 108–200
—— Robert, x. 111
Mark's at Venice, St, i. 340
Marlowe, Chr., viii. 8; ix. 117; xiv. 93–6
Marmion, Shakerly, xiii. 411–523
Marriage customs, xiii. 81–2
Marriage Night, the, a play, xv. 111–184
Marriage of Wit and Science, an interlude, ii. 322–94
Marshall, Mrs, an actress, xiv. 377
——, Stephen, xiv. 516
Massinger, Philip, xi. 3
Marston, John, ix. 116
Master of the game, xiv. 441
Match at Midnight, a play, xiii. 1–98
Matron, i. 72
Maw, a game, x. 539
Maw, the, a play, ix. 388
May, Richard, xi. 503
——, Sir Thomas, xi. 503
——, Thomas, xi. 502–84; xii. 2–83
Mayfield Place, Sussex, xi. 503
Mayne, Jasper, xiii. 200–320
Mayor of London, Lord, his inauguration sermon, xiii. 214
—— show, xiii. 214
Mean, i. 62
Medoro, a hero of romance, xiv. 62

Digitized by Google

Meet with one, to, xiii. 62
Meg of Westminster, Long, iii. 215; xi. 111
Merchant, i. 69; ii. 255; xiii. 97, &c.
Merchants' marks, xii. 100
Mercuries (early newspapers so called), xi. 513
Meriell, John, xiv. 13
Merlins or Marlins, iv. 70–1
Mermaid, the, a tavern, xiii. 263
Merry Devil of Edmonton, a play, x. 202–64
Meve, i. 244
Microcosmos, ix. 336
Middleton, T., xii. 89, 94–5
Mightly, i. 248
Milton, John, iv. 273; xiii. 193
Mirror of Knighthood, x. 322; xi. 70; xiii. 42
Miseries of Enforced Marriage, a play, ix. 466–576
Miss, i. 186
Mistress, the, at bowls, xii. 165
Mistrist, i. 203
Misusing, i. 193
Mitre tavern in Bread Street, x. 313; two taverns of this name, xiii. 48
Mole, the French, x. 10
Mons, siege of, xv. 231
Monsieur Mingo, a song, viii. 55
Montague, the Hon. Walter, xiv. 413
Moorgate Prison, xii. 127, 192–3
Mooting and Reading Days, xii. 276
More, Sir Thomas, a play, ii. 269
Morglay, xi. 70; xii. 286
Mortlake, xiii. 233
Morvidus, xii. 520
Motions, xiii. 420
Mouchatoes, xiv. 305
Mount-saint, a game, x. 186
Mow, i. 246; x. 493
Mucedorus, a play, vii. 200–60; xi. 164
Much in my nock, Nichols, prov., vi. 242
Mulmutius Dunwallo, a play, xii. 484, 495
Mumblecrust, Jack, iii. 69
Munday, Anthony, viii. 94–327
M. under your girdle, to have an, x. 531
Mundungo, xiv. 291
Muscadel, xi. 491
Music between the acts of plays, iii. 211
Musicians, itinerant, x. 347–8
Muswell, i. 341

NAKED, i. 44; xiv. 334, 511
Nash, Thomas, viii. 3–92; ix. 119
Neale, Richard, Bp. of London, i. 342
Need maketh the old wife trot, prov. iii. 43
Needlework, xiii. 227
Nemesis, xiv. 188
Nessary, i. 253
Nessus, xiv. 533
Nevile, Henry, xi. 503
Newcastle, xiv. 446
New Custom, an interlude, iii. 2–52
New England, xii. 316; xiii. 228
New-found-island (or Newfoundland), i. 162; xii. 165
New guise, the, ii. 260
Newington theatre, xi. 55, 115, 434
New Queen Street, iv. 87

Digitized by Google

Next, i. 194
Nice Wanton, an interlude, ii. 160–84
Niggler, xiv. 313
Nineveh, the sight of, a show, ix. 406
Nipitaty, viii. 60
Noble—"To bring a noble to ninepence," prov. iii. 344
Noel (or Nowell), Henry, vii. 50
Noise of fiddlers, xii. 281
Nonsense verses, i. 49, 50
Novem (or Novum), a game, xi. 219
Nowl, hairy, iii. 23
Nuddled, xiv. 62
Nuns, change of name by, x. 240

OATHS, viii. 304–5, 307
Odd holes, xiii. 224
Oldcastle the original name of Falstaff, xi. 152
Old Couple, the, a play, xii. 2–83
Old fish and young flesh, xiii. 432
Olived, a term of cookery, xii. 239
Olivet, Mount, i. 332
One-and-thirty, a game, ii. 34
Onions—"Who'll buy my rope of onions?" a cry, xi. 436
Orange, Prince of, xv. 231.
Ordinary, the, a play, xii. 204–318
Orlando, a phrase, xiv. 62
Ostend, siege of, ix. 170
Our Lady in the Oak, i. 342.
—— of Boston, i. 337.
—— of Boulogne, iii. 199-200
Outcry, xiv. 445
Out of his danger, i. 54, 132. *Compare* iii. 62
Out of his peril, i. 132
Overbury, Sir Thomas, xi. 328–9
Owe, i. 202
Oyster, a cant term, xiv. 463

PALERMO, razors of, iv. 80; vii. 190
Palmer, i. 331
Palmerin of England, viii. 99
Pancridge (Pancras), viii. 380
Pancridge parson, xi. 33
Pantofle, iv. 67; xv. 105
Pardoner, i. 343
Paris (or Parish) Garden, viii. 124
Parismus, xii. 12
Parson's Wedding, the, a play, xiv. 370–535
Part, i. 243
Pasquil, x. 163
Passage, a game, i. 266; xi. 431
Passing measures pavin, ix. 408
Passions (love-poems), xi. 200
Pastance, i. 79; iii. 88
Patch, iii. 186–7; x. 493
Patrick's Purgatory, St, i. 337
Paul's, St, x. 341; xi. 313, 407; xiii. 264; xv. 400
Pee-dee, xiv. 289
Pembroke, William, Earl of, xiii. 326, 329
Peele, George, xii. 309
Pennycuicke, Andrew, xiii. 101
Pericles, a play, ix. 467; xi. 239, 428
Pepper in the nose, to take, xiii. 166
Perplexities, the, a play, xv. 199
Petticoat, to have on the, a phrase, ii. 252
Phantasia of Memphis, xi. 303
Pheer (or Fere), xiii. 425

Digitized by Google

Phlegm, vii. 193.
Pickthatch, xi. 19, 119
Pigeon-holes, a game, xii. 101
Pight, i. 249
Pilgrim, i. 331
Pimlico, xi. 233; xiii. 243–4
Pin of the wheel, xiv. 65
Pinder (or Pinner), of Wakefield, viii. 151
Pintas, a game, xv. 265
Pinion, ii. 35
Pink, ii. 35
Piot, Lazarus, pseud., viii. 99
Pirates, execution of, xi. 188
Pirate, the, a play, xiii. 101
Pissing-while, a, iii. 224
Pitiful, i. 81
Plagues, notices of, viii. 90; x. 342; xiv. 487
Plantain-leaf, xi. 399
Platform, xiii. 336
Platonists, xiv. 441
Plautus, xi. 314
Plays, Latin, performed at Cambridge, xi. 295, 299
——, old, corrupt texts of, xii. 192
Plutarch's Lives, North's translation of, a Shakespeare book, vii. 105
Point-device, i. 44
Poking (or poting) sticks, viii. 161
Polydorus, xiii. 512
Pomanders, ix. 419
Pompey the Great, a play, xv. 188
Pope, Alex., xii. 19, 42
Porta, Battista, xi. 301
Porter, Henry, vii. 262–383
Portous, ii. 74; iii. 24; viii. 393
Poser, ix. 139
Possems, xiv. 296
Possess (inform), ix. 483; xiii. 144
Post, a game, ii. 35
Posts, i. 75
—— set up at the sheriffs' doors, xii. 107
Powis, William, Lord, xiii. 324
Prague, Battle of, xiii. 45
Praty, i. 71
Prayers at the end of plays, iii. 51–2, 157–8; vi. 11.
Prefe, i. 179
Preston, Tho., ii. 158–248
Prest, i. 248
Prevent, xiii. 473
Primero, a game, xi. 363
Print well, i. 16
Prior, M., xii. 19; xiv. 421; xv. 204
Prisons, divisions of the old, ix. 514
Privy Seals, xiii. 267
Progresses, royal, customs at, xi. 330
Pro in my purse, to put, a phrase, iv. 60
Prologues, speakers of, xiii. 299–300
Promise is debt, prov. i. 137
Prompter (or book-holder), viii. 17, 87
Properties, theatrical, xi. 360; xiii. 274–5
Property, xiv. 78
Propriety, xiv. 364
Provand, xiv. 385
Proverbs on concealment of love, xi. 73
Prynne, W., xiii. 226
Ptolemy the geographer, xii. 226–7
Pudder, xiv. 444
Pudding—"You may draw me about the town with a pudding," ii. 78
——, "In pudding-time," prov., iii. 319
——, St Stephen's, xii. 235

Digitized by Google

Pudding, white, xi. 20
——, "Everything hath an end," &c., xv. 61
Puddle Dock, xiii. 69
Puff (or Face), Captain, a character, x. 268
Pueriles confabulatiunculæ, a school-book, viii. 444.
Pugle, i. 162
Punto, xiv. 284
Purganti, Paulo, xiv. 421
Puritans, xi. 111; xii. 248, 316; xiii. 14

Q, ix. 195; x. 298
Quadragesimal wits, xii. 268
Quarry, xiv. 379
Quatre and trey, terms at dice, xii. 122
Quaver, xiii. 15
Queen of Arragon, the, a play, xiii. 321–409
Queen's-game, the, ii. 34
Quit, i. 132

RAGMAN-ROLLS, i. 234, 241–2
Ram-Alley, a play, x. 266–380
——, a place so called, x. 271
Randolph, T., v. 54
Rare Triumphs of Love and Fortune, a play, vi. 144–243
Ravenscroft, E., vi. 27
Rawlins, T., xiv. 1–92
Readers at Inns-of-Court, xiii. 290–1
Reason, to do one, xv. 214
Rebellion, the, a play, xiv. 1–92
Recorder, the, an instrument, viii. 31
Red Bull theatre, xi. 175
Redburn, i. 338
Reed, i. 179
Refuse me! an oath, xiii. 5
Regent, the, a ship, i. 371
Rehearsal, the, a play, v. 15, 37
Return from Parnassus, a play, viii. 8; ix. 98–217; x. 267
Revenger's Tragedy, the, a play, x. 3–105
Richards, Nath., xiv. 6
Reynard the Fox, xiii. 58
Ridley, Samuel, viii. 19
Ring Irish, vii. 497
Rings, wedding, xiv. 417
Ris, i. 252
Roaring boys, xi. 125, 135; xii. 102
Robert of Sicily, King, i. 255
Robin Goodfellow, viii. 442 *et seq.*
Robin Hood, plays upon the history of, viii. 95–327
Robinson, Richard, an actor, x. 451; xiii. 102
Rock, i. 65
Rock (or Roch), St, i. 342; vi. 74
Roger de Coverley, Sir, ix. 490
Rogues, vagabonds, &c., statutes against, iii. 195
Rome—"To go to Rome with a mortar on one's head," prov., iii. 80
Rood of Dovercourt, the, viii. 399
Rosamond, Fair, ballad of, xiii. 50
Rosemary, x. 342; xiii. 81–2, 296
Rose royals, xiii. 232
Roses of Poestum, x. 186
Rowena, xi. 487
Rowley, Ralph, xii. 87–8
——, S., xii. 87
——, W., ix. 467; xi. 139, 178; xii. 86–202; xiii. 1–98
Rub, rub! an exclamation in bowling, xi. 54
Ruddock, iv. 72

Digitized by Google

Ruffs, long story about, xi. 192–3
Rumbelow, i. 162
Rush, Friar, iii. 213
Rushes, viii. 87 ; x. 213
Rutter, Joseph, xii. 362–444

SACK with sugar, ix. 516–17
Sacring-bell, x. 235
Sadness, i. 187
Saints, list of unregistered, vi. 74
Sale, i. 243
Salisbury Plain, iii. 326
Salt-cellars, xi. 403
Samers, i. 251
Sasarara, x. 76
Saunce-bell, x. 422
Saw, old, xiii. 8
Scaledrake, xiv. 290
Scathlock, viii. 151 *et seq.*
Schemers, the, 1755, xiii. 209
Scholastic discipline, early, ii. 270–4
Scogin, vi. 340 ; viii. 16, 462
Scolds, punishment of, xii. 127
Sconce, xiii. 47
Se, i. 244
Second Maiden's Tragedy, x. 383–468
Selden, John, xiii. 254
Sellenger's round, ix. 195, 409 ; xiii. 492
Seller, i. 157
Seneca, the "Thyestes" of, iv. 263, 291
Servant, xiv. 407
Set a beggar on horseback, &c., prov., x. 17
Seymour, Queen Jane, i. 431
Shakespeare, W., note on his "Measure for Measure," iv. 174
——, v. 54, 109, 139 ; ix. 101, 202, 393, 467 ; x. 158–9 ; xi. 246 ; xii. 88, 626 ; xiii. 89
Shaking of the sheets, a dance, x. 365 ; xiii. 59
Sheldon, Will., xiii. 233
Shepherds' Holiday, a play, xii. 362–444
Ship, the, a play, xi. 115
Shirley (or Sherley) Brothers, the, xi. 213
—— James, xiv. 194
Shit, i. 183
Shoe, flinging an old, xiv. 501
Shoemaker of Bradford, the, viii. 151
Shoes, xiii. 217
Shooter's Hill, i. 185.
Shope, i. 163
Shoreditch, xii. 195
Shorn at Canterbury, Master John, i. 340
Shrove-Tuesday, xi. 195–6, 436–7
Sick man's salve, the, x. 153–4
Sickness, the, xiv. 486
Sidney, Sir Philip, viii. 63 ; ix. 114 ; xiv. 194
Siesta, xv. 22
Sims's, a house of entertainment, xiv. 453
Sin, i. 76, 175
Skelton, Merry Tales of, a story-book, i. 33 ; viii. 39, 105, *et seq.*
Skeltonical verse, viii. 110
Sleepers, the Seven, i. 362
Slot, xiv. 520
Smith, Wentworth, xi. 425
Soft fire makes sweet malt, prov., iii. 70
Soldiers, sham or swaggering, viii. 69 ; xi. 68
Solf, i. 71
Solyman and Perseda, a play, v. 254–374

Digitized by Google

Songs in old plays, iii. 70, 72, 189, 339, 358; xi. 146; xiv. 328–31; 346–7
Sons, literary, xi. 9
Sooner named, sooner come, prov., vi. 66
Sophy, the, a tragedy, xiv. 245
South, Robert, xiii. 203
Southwell, our Lady of, i. 341
Spain, xi. 213
Spanish Lady's Love, the, a ballad, xiii. 92
Spanish Tragedy, the, a play, v. 8–173; ix. 196; x. 370; xi. 12, 29, 248, 331, 386
Speck (or spick) and span, xi. 334; xiv. 433
Spectatrix, xiii. 513
Spere, i. 321
Sports, Book of, xii. 212, 316
Springal, xiii. 159.
Spring Garden, xiv. 350
Spurs, iii. 207
—— gilt, ix. 469
Stafford, Robert, xii. 226
Stage, construction of the, ix. 540
Staniel, xiv. 284, 357
Stanielry, xiv. 351
Starch, yellow, xi. 328–9
Statist, xiii. 421
Stench, xiv. 329
Still, John, iii. 164–256; xv. 427
Stilo novo, xiii. 478
Stirling, W. Alexander, Earl of, xi. 477
Stirrups, i. 184
Stitchel, xiv. 357
St Nicholas' clerks, xiii. 15
Stowe, John, xiii. 209
Stra, i. 255
Strabo, xii. 226
Strain'd, xiii. 9
Strange (coy), xiii. 61
Strene, i. 55
Strow, xiv. 311
Stubbes, Katherine, xii. 272
——, Philip, xii. 272
Studs, Andalusian, xiv. 342
Stukeley, Captain, xi. 213, 215
Successive, xiv. 325
Suckling, Sir John, xii. 4; xiii. 414; xv. 4
Summer's Last Will and Testament, viii. 15–92
Summers (or Sommers), Will., viii. 15 *et seq.*; xi. 535; xiv. 473
Super naculum, viii. 58
Surplices, xiii. 14
Sussex, Countess of, v. 179
Sutcliffe, Dr Matthew, xii. 277
Swearing, form of, borrowed from the Old Testament, vii. 92
Sweat, the, an epidemic, iv. 119
Swetnam, Joseph, xiv. 278
Swinnerton, Sir John, xi. 425

TAG, rag, and bobtail, xiii. 84–5
Tailor, Robert, xi. 424–599
Tailors, Italian, xi. 21
Talc, xiii. 225
Tallies, xii. 138
Tampion, i. 370
Tancred and Gismunda, vii. 27 *et seq.*
Tane, i. 254
Tapestry, ancient, v. 121; xiii. 233
Tappes, my Lord, ix. 421
Tappis, xiv. 322
Tarlton, Richard, his "Jig of the Horseload of Fools," vi. 12
——, vi. 396–8; viii. 16
Tatham, John, xiv. 12

Digitized by Google

Taverns, list of, vii. 286; xiv. 342
Tax of the Roman Chancery, xi. 565
Taylor, John, the water-poet, xi. 6
——, Joseph, xiv. 505
Tene, i. 251
Terence, versions of, viii. 263
—— referred to, xv. 199
Termagant, x. 322–3
Terrent, Mr, xii. 205
Tester, xii. 125
That would I see, quod blind Hew, prov., i. 232
The, *v.*, i. 155
Theatres, closing of the, xv. 410–11
The devil is good when he is pleased, prov., viii. 425
Theon, ix. 205
There are more maids than Malkin, prov., viii. 266
There are more ways to the wood than one, prov., ix. 352; xv. 142
There goes the hare away, prov., v. 108; xiv. 321
Thersites, an interlude, i. 389–431; iii. 145; iv. 176
Thing of nothing, iii. 22
This seven year, i. 47
Thomas of Kent, St, i. 249
Thornton, Roger, xiv. 446
Threatened men live long, prov., vii. 495
Three Ladies of London, a play, vi. 246–370
Three Lords and Three Ladies of London, a play, vi. 372–502
Three men's songs, viii. 48
Three merry men, and three merry men, &c., x. 298
Thrist, i. 138
Thule, xii. 459
Tice, i. 116
Tide, i. 249
Tiresias, x. 283
'Tis better to be a shrew than a sheep, prov., viii. 425
Titles of old plays hung up, v. 157
Toad, the, xi. 399
Tobacco, xiii. 441
Toll-book, x. 44
Tom Essence, a play, xiv. 3
Tomkis, John, xi. 294–421
——, Thomas, musician, xi. 295
Tom Titivile, iii. 58
To-morrow is a new day, prov., i. 86; xv. 41
Tooth-drawers, xii. 139
Top, William, xii. 205
Torture, instruments of, xi. 66, 97
Tourneur, Cyril, x. 3–105
Toy, supposed to be an actor, viii. 59
Tracy, Little, viii. 105 *et seq.*
Tray-trip, a game, xiii. 238–9
Treatment, xiv. 350
Trencher-analects, xii. 269
Trenchmore, x. 316
Trentals, xiv. 170
Treygobet, ii. 34
Trinobantes, &c., xii. 516
Trial of Treasure, an interlude, iii. 258–301
Trithemius, Johannes, xii. 218–19
Triump (or Trump), ii. 34; iii. 199
Trott, Nicholas, iv. 251 *et seq.*
Trouchman, xiii. 344
Trow, i. 62
Trump, iii. 199
Trumpets sounded at theatres and shows, xiii. 250
Trumpington, ii. 30
Trundletail, xii. 121

Digitized by Google

Trunnion, St, i. 334
Tuck, Friar, viii. 105 *et seq.*
Tuke, Sir Samuel, xv. 4, 184
Turbervile, George, iv. 9
Turnbull (or Turnmill) Street, xi. 98
Turner, Mrs, xi. 328–9
Twelfth-Day, xii. 132
Twin, i. 244

UDALL, Nicholas, ii. 274; iii. 54–161
Uncumber, St, i. 334
Undeserved, i. 71
Unfortunate Jack, History of, xii. 329
Unhappily, xiv. 243
Unicorn, i. 81
Unready, xiii. 79
Upse, xiv. 471
Up-se-fricze, viii. 58
Usurers, practices of, viii. 26
Utopian trunks, xiii. 86

VANBRUGH, Sir J., xii. 20
Venue (or Veney), xiii. 169–70
Verse, blank, vi. 20
Vice, the, ii. 307; iv. 160; vii. 386
Villiers, Colonel George, xii. 19
Vine-dee, xiii. 272
Vinegar used to represent blood, iv. 217; ix. 106
Virginia, xi. 187
Vortigern, xi. 487
Vox Piscis, or the Book-Fish, 1627, xii. 90

WAGE, to take, i. 247
Waggons and other carriages impressed, xi. 330
Wait, i. 248
Waking Man's Fortune, a story, iv. 8
Walsingham, our Lady of, i. 335
Waltham, cross at, i. 335
Wanion, xiii. 158–9
Wapping, xi. 188
Warning for Fair Women, a play, v. 123
Wase, Chr., xv. 199
Wassail, xi. 487; xii. 285
Watch and ward, v. 75
Watching-candle, xi. 352
Watling Street, iv. 243; xi. 207
Watson, Thomas, v. 36–7; ix. 114
Wat Tyler, v. 376 *et seq.*
Wax, to bite the, xii. 256
Weakest goeth to the wall, prov., x. 124
Wealth, i. 73
Webbe, W., vii. 7, 13
Webster, John, xii. 89
Wed, i. 165
Weeping-Cross, vii. 337
Wenefrid (or Winifred), St, i. 337
Went, i. 119
Werewolf, the, ix. 351
Wever, R., ii. 42–102
Whales in maps, xiii. 267
Wheels laid for pike, xiii. 267
Whe'r for whether, xiii. 47
Whetstone, to throw the, a phrase, viii. 28
Whiffler, xiii. 244
White, to hit the, xiii. 177–8; xiv. 144
Whitecross Street, xv. 406
Whittington and his cat, xiv. 446
Who can sing so merry a note, &c., a ballad, viii. 28
Widow's phrase, the, x. 306; xi. 142
Wild, i. 245
Wildness, i. 149

Digitized by Google

Wilkins, George (the elder), ix. 466–576
Willesden, i. 341
Willowby, Lady (the rod), ix. 27
Wilmot, Robert, vii. 3 *et seq.*
Wilson, Robert, vi. 246–502
Wilson's "Art of Rhetoric," passage from "Ralph Roister Doister," cited in, iii. 112
Wily Beguiled, a play, ix 220–330
Wind—"Let the world wind," i. 20
Wine at marriages, xiii. 82
Wines, xi. 194; xiii. 82, 93, 216, 441, 500
Wisdom, Robert, xii. 271
Wished, xiii. 65
Wisp, xii. 127
Witch, the term applied to both sexes, xiii 259
Witched, xiii. 453
Witches, viii. 65
With a wet finger, prov., vi. 180
Wits, the Five, i. 130
Wizard, xiv. 358
Wizzel, xiii. 271
Woman, a, is a Weathercock, a play, xi. 2–86
Woman Never Vexed, a play, xii. 86–202
Women, note on the occupations, &c., of, *temp* Eliz., ix. 538
Women are forgetful, &c., prov., xii. 200
Wondersly, i. 16
Wood, i. 351
Woodes, Nath., vi. 4–9, 30 *et seq.*
Woodman, Richard, iii. 35
Wood Street counter, xii. 179
Woollen manufacture, xiii. 295
World and the Child, the, an interlude, i. 241-75
World, it is a, a phrase, i. 35
Worthies, the Nine, xi. 447
Wrapped in his mother's smock, xiii. 74
Wreaths, oaken, xiii. 459
Wright, Abraham, xv. 400
——, James, xv. 400–431
Wrought, i. 249

YELLOW, to wear the, vii. 474
Yeomen of the collar, i. 157
Ying, i. 245
Young, Edward, xiii. 178
Youth, Interlude of, ii. 5–40

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

GLOSSARIAL INDEX.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

GLOSSARIAL INDEX,

BY RICHARD MORRIS, LL.D.

A, *in*, i. 49; xv. 217; viii. 313; *of*, viii. 369; *he*, iii. 241; vi. 183
Abashed, *downcast*, i. 88
Abide, *to remain*, xi. 456; *to endure*, i. 308
Abide, } *to atone for*, xi. 38;
Abi, Aby, } i. 406; iii. 95
Abiden, *endured*, ix. 425
Abject, *an abject creature*, vi. 95
Aboarding, *coming to the coast* (?), v. 265
About, *round*, i. 19
Aboven, *above*, xv. 422
Abroach, *on broach*, xiii. 93
Abusion, *abuse*, ii. 89
Accointance, *acquaintance*, i. 79
Accompt, *account*, xv. 119
Accomptant, *accountant*, xiv. 325
Accord, *to agree*, i. 229
Accumber, *to destroy*, i. 299
Accumbred, *troubled*, iii. 133
Acold, *cold*, iii. 189
Acquaince, *acquaintance*, i. 105
Acquittance, *quittance*, i. 127
Acrook, *crookedly*, iii. 125
Adamant, *a magnet, loadstone*, v. 300
Adauntrely (= avauntlay), *a hunting term*, ix. 149
A doors, "forth a doors" = *out of doors*, x. 561
Adrabbing, *a-wenching*, vii. 348
Adreamed, *dreamed*, x. 241; xiii. 169
Adry, *dry*, vi. 568
Advenient, *coming, future*, vii. 158
Advertise, *to warn*, xv. 23
Advertisement, *counsel*, i. 293
Advisement, *advice*, i. 106; vii. 109; *consideration*, i. 292
Advoutress, *adultress*, iii. 151
Advoutry, *adultery*, xii. 301
Af, *of*, vi. 73
Afeard, *afraid*, i. 110
Affect, *to love*, xi. 141, 453; xiv. 303
Affected, *well disposed*, xi. 454, 518
Affiance, *trust*, i. 107
Afine, *lastly*, iii. 246; *lastly*, i. 266
Affright, *frightened*, v. 213
Affront, *to face, to meet face to face*, v. 211; xi. 265; xii. 469
Agate, *agoing, on the road*, ii. 25, 306; ix. 400
Aggress, *to approach*, iv. 172
Aggrievance, *grievance*, xiv. 309
Aggrieves, *grievances*, xiv. 309
Aglet, *point of a tag*, v. 113
Ago, *gone by*, i. 107, 167, 168
Agone, *ago*, i. 28
Agood, *goodly*, iii. 116

Digitized by Google

Agooding, *agadding* (?), iii. 317
Ahungry, *hungry*, vi. 296
Akenning, *being discerned*, v. 354
A las pintas, *note*, xv. 265
Alate, *late*, *lately*, ii. 114; ix. 164; x. 444.
Alchochoden, *an astronomical term*, xi. 345
Alder of all, i. 135
Ale, *to heel*, i. 161, 185
Alestake, *sign of an alehouse*, i. 191
Alfridaria, *a term used in astronomy*, xi. 344
Algate, Algates, *always*, i. 237; xii. 288
Alimonial, *pertaining to alimony*, xiv. 314
Almicantarath, *astronomical term*, *note*, xi. 326
Almight, *Almighty*, i. 147
Alms, *a charity*, i. 72; ii. 285
Almuten, *astronomical term*, *note*, xi. 345
Alonely, *only*, i. 67
Along on, *on account of*, ix. 101
Alouten, *utterly*, xii. 241
Aloyse, iv. 79
Altogether (for), *once for all*, iii. 135
Alum-plumb, i. 178
Aly, *holy* (?), *but see note*, iii. 66
Amain, *fast*, vii. 281
Amate, *to daunt*, *confound*, vii. 79, 137
Amaze, *amazement*, x. 133
Ambassadress, xv. 208
Ambassage, *embassy*, vi. 463
Ambages, *ambiguous*, *equivocal sayings*, v. 30; ix. 265
Ambergrease, xi. 341; xiii. 490
Ambitiousness, *ambition*, xv. 161
Ambrosiac, xiv. 316
Ambry, *pantry*, vi. 412
Amebly, *trotting* (?), xii. 284
Amend, *to mend*, iii. 176
Ames ace, *note*, xii. 243; xiii. 118
Ameved, *moved*, iii. 240
Amiss, *fault*, vi. 525
Among, *now and then*, *at intervals*, i. 71
Amorist, *a lover*, xiii. 376
Amort, *melancholy*, viii. 198; ix. 305; x. 310
Amuse, *musing*, x. 175
An, and, *if*, i. 142; xii. 259; xiii. 80; xv. 128; *on*, ii. 193
Ancient, *ensign*, viii. 174; xiii. 58
Anent, *along*, iv. 313
Angerly, *angrily*, iv. 136
Annoy, *annoyance*, iv. 317; xv. 120
Antiphon, *alternate singing*, xii. 503
Apace, *quickly*, i. 88
Apaid, *pleased*, i. 175; iii. 18
Apluck, *in pluck*, *lustily*, i. 146; ii. 368
Apoplex, *apoplexy*, x. 182
Appair, *to impair*, i. 100
Appealed, *accused*, i. 70
Appetite, *desire*, ii. 47
Apply, *to apply one's self*, ii. 284
Appointed, *accoutred*, *equipped*, i. 376; xii. 213
Apprehensive, *perceptive*, xii. 505
Approbate, *approved*, i. 7
Approve, *to prove*, x. 117
Arayed. Arrayed, *defiled*, *soiled*, *disfigured*, i. 78. 178; iii. 175; *disconcerted*, ii. 119
Areadiness, *readiness*, iv. 234
Arear, *back*, i. 166
Argosies, *merchant ships*, xii. 100
Armipotent, *powerful in arms*, iii. 282

Digitized by Google

Aroom, *abroad*, i. 154
Arow, *in succession*, xv. 91
Arre, *to snarl*, viii. 44
Arride, *to please*, xiii. 445
Arsyversy, xii. 137
Articulated, *put down as articles of a treaty*, v. 67
Ascendant, *note*, xi. 309
Ashen, *ashes*, xii. 240
Asinigo, *a fool*, xiii. 519
Aslake, *to assuage*, i. 400
Aspect (of planets), vii. 185
Aspy, *to spy*, i. 156
Assail, *to essay*, ii. 241
Assay, *to essay, try*, i. 19; ii. 389
Assoil, *to remove doubts, explain*, i. 70, 75, 179; vii. 169; xv. 253
Assurance, security, xii. 153
Assure, *to make sure of*, x. 139
Astonied, *thunderstruck*, vii. 80; ix. 570
At, *with*, x. 123
At odds, *at variance*, ix. 457
At one (with), *to reconcile to*, iii. 139
Atrust, *on trust*, x. 308
Attach, *to seize*, vii. 24, xii. 503
Attournment, x. 218
Aunt, *a bawd*, xiii. 70; xiv. 448
Autocousticon, *note*, xi. 314
Ayenst, *against*, i. 149
Azimuth, *note*, xi. 326

Bab, *babe*, vi. 73
Babble, *to talk like a child, to prate*, i. 8.
Babbling, *chattering*, i. 19
Baberlipped, *thick-lipped*, ix. 404
Bable, *bauble*, vii. 359
Backside, *backyard*, x. 341; xi. 233; *a house in the rear of another*, x. 341
Backster, *a female baker*, i. 424
Baconpig, v. 104
Bade, *an abode*, iv. 307
Badst, *invitedst*, viii. 290
Baffle, xii. 174; xiv. 305
Balance, (*pair of*) *scales*, viii. 408
Bale (of dice), *pair*, xi. 221; xii. 121
Balk, *beam of a house*, iii. 173
Balladising, *ballad-making*, viii. 258
Ban, *to curse*, iii. 181
Band, *bound*, ix. 569; *bond*, iii. 361
Banding, *bandied*, vii. 116
Bandoliers, xii. 229
Bandy, *game at tennis*, ix. 381
Bane, *death*, v. 262
Banket, *a banquet*, i. 44; ii. 82
Bankrout, *bankrupt*, x. 361
Bannerets, v. 213
Bannings, *curses*, viii. 315
Bare, *did bear*, i. 165
Barm, *yeast*, xii. 269
Barmuthes, *Bermudas*, xi. 137
Barmy, *yeasty*, ix. 110
Barnacles, *spectacles*, iv. 81
Barren (of), *devoid of*, vii. 288
Barricado, *to barricade*, x. 260
Barrow gutlings, *a pig's guts*, x. 347
Base (at), *game of base*, viii. 400
Baseful, *low*, ix. 176
Bashaw, *pashaw*, v. 150
Basilisk, *a piece of ordnance*, x. 325
Bass, *to kiss*, i. 74, 181
Baste, *to beat*, xiv. 305
Bat, Bate, } *to abate, decline in courage*, x. 33; *to flutter*, xi. 353
Bate, *to debate*, xii. 524
Batteries, xiii. 218, *note*
Battoon, *a staff*, xii. 238
Bawson, *badger*, ix. 452
Bayard, *a bay horse*; "blind as bayard," iv. 118

Digitized by Google

Bay, *by*, vi. 71
Be, *been*, i. 413
Bead, *prayer*, x. 234 ; viii. 393
Bead-folk, *pensioners*, i. 85
Bead-roll, *a list of persons to be prayed for*, v. 197
Bear in hand, x. 303
Beastly, *like a beast*, i. 30
Bebang, *to bang*, vii. 309
Beck, *a beckoning (with the hand)*, xi. 262, 307; *a nod*, viii. 88 ; *salutation*, i. 373
Bedlam, *a madman*, iii. 245 ; *mad*, ii. 131
Bedstaff, xi. 337; xiii. 35
Bedward, *bed-time*, xi. 333
Beetle-browed, *having overhanging brows*, ix. 404
Beforne, *before*, i. 273
Behete, *to promise*, i. 258
Behyht, *promised*, i. 248
Being, *existence, state, welfare*, xi. 454, 464
Being that, *since*, x. 262
Beknave, i. 430
Beldam, *old*, xi. 247
Belike, *perhaps*, xi. 245
Belith, *belongs*, i. 258
Belive, *quickly*, viii. 158 ; xii. 507
Bemonster, *to make a monster of*, x. 157
Benedicite, i. 54
Benison, *blessing*, ii. 230
Bent, *biassed*, x. 118
Benters, *coal-sacks*, iv. 77
Beray, *to dirt, mess*, iii. 197, 329
Berew, *by row, a-row*, i. 246
Beseem, *to suit*, xii. 505
Beshrew, *to curse*, i. 20
Beside herself, *out of her wits*, i. 66
Beslaver, *to slobber over*, ix. 121
Besnow, *cover with snow*, xii. 457
Bestial, *animal*, i. 12
Bet, *beaten*, iii. 237 ; *do better*, ii. 127 ; *better*, xii. 257
Betruss'd, *hanged*, viii. 199
Bever, *luncheon*, ix. 366
Bevy, i. 20 ; *a bevy*, vii. 322
Bewray, *to betray*, ii. 241 ; xi. 239
Beyond, *over*, i. 152
Bias, *term in game of bowls*, vii. 283
Bib, *to drink*, x. 335
Bickering, *fighting*, iii. 217
Bid, *did abide*, viii. 296
Bidden, *refrained*, ii. 218
Bidding prayer, viii. 393
Bide, *to endure*, iv. 185 ; *to suffer*, vi. 588; *to abide, stay*, i. 137
Bidene, *forthwith, together*, i. 268
Biggon, *see note*, xiii. 288
Bilbo, *sword*, xiii. 35
Bill, *a petition*, viii. 378
Birdbolt, *an arrow*, xi. 200
Birdsnie, *term of endearment*, xiii. 124
Bis, *fine silk*, i. 252
Bitched (ale), i. 254
Bitter, *a bittern*, i. 424
Bi wi ye, (*good*) *bye*, vii. 312
Blackguard, iii. 323
Blackjack, viii. 57 ; ix. 471 ; xi. 470
Blank, *white of a target*, ii. 35
Blather, *a bladder*, vi. 114
Ble, *complexion*, i. 251
Blea, *to bleat like a kid*, ii. 237, 239
Bleat, iii. 243
Blin, *to cease*, i. 248, 424 ; viii. 320
Blive, *quick*, xii. 311 ; *to be quick*, xii. 507
Bloat, *a bloater (herring)*, xiii. 5
Blot, *a term used in card-playing*, vii. 276

Digitized by Google

Blot, *to defile*, iii. 202; *defame*, iv. 143
Bluebottle, *a liveried servant*, ix. 471
Bluster, *to blow*, xii. 219
Bob, *a blow*, iv. 81; vii. 168; *to strike*, iv. 121: vii. 456, 490; *taunt*, iv. 81; vii. 309; *to send away empty*, xi. 435
Bob (for eels), xii. 166
Bobb'd, *beaten, baffled*, x. 358; *tricked*, xiii. 129
Bode, *to portend*, viii. 47
Bodkin, *a dagger*, vii. 335
Body politic, xii. 230
Bold, *to encourage*, i. 182
Boll, *bowl*, i. 179
Bombard, *a drinking-vessel*, xi. 24; *a piece of ordnance*, i. 370
Bomfay, *by my faith*, iii. 272
Bonable, *abominable*, iii. 212
Bona robas, *note*, ix. 530
Bone, "a bone in your hood," ii. 169, 170
Bonerly, bonnerly, *debonairly, mannerly*, i. 243, 250
Bones, *dice*, xiii. 124; "make no bones," *make no delay*, i. 398
Bongrace, Boongrace, *a bonnet, hood*, i. 203; vi. 466
Boon, *good*, ix. 147
Boon sparks, *fine fellows*, xii. 270
Boot, *remedy, medicine*, i. 84
Boots, *avails*, xi. 81
Bord, *jest, game*, iii. 78
Borrels, *peasants*, xii. 567
Borrow, *to preserve, save, secure*, i. 269; ii. 120
Botkin, *a dagger*, ii. 301
Bots, *worms*, ii. 300; x. 491; *venereal disease*, vi. 257
Bottle, *a bundle*, xi. 22; vi. 176; vii. 208; "bite bread out of a bottle," i. 411
Bottom, *a vale*, i. 371; x. 247; *foundation*, i. 17
Bouget, *cask, bucket*, iv. 72
Bought, *redeemed*, i. 141
Bounce, *to beat*, iii. 218; *bang*, ix. 263
Bound, *boon*, iv. 143
Bounty, *goodness*, i. 248
Bountyhood, *bounty*, viii. 36
Bow, *to bend*, i. 77
Bowr, "hall and bowr," i. 247
Bowyer, *a maker of bows*, viii. 152; xiii. 60
Box, xii. 121, *note*
Boying, *playing the boy*, ii. 211
Bracha, *shelves, shoals*, i. 185
Brachygraphy, *shorthand*, viii. 41
Brag, *fine*, ii. 108, 336; iii. 209; vi. 394
Brainpan, *skull*, vii. 309
Brangled, *encumbered*, x. 228
Brast, *burst*, i. 148, 252
Brave, *fine, well dressed*, iii. 28; iv. 81; x. 125
Bravely, *finely*, xiii. 129
Bravery, *finery*, ix. 17; x. 125
Brawl (=broll), *brat, child*, iii. 201
Brawn, *muscle*, ii. 209
Brawnfallen, *chapfallen*, v. 207
Bray'd, *pounded*, xi. 333
Break up, *to open*, vii. 132
Breast, *breath, voice*, i. 353; iii. 61
Breech, *to flog, whip*, viii. 21; x. 282; xi. 148
Bren, *to burn*, i. 12, 54, 58, 211
Breviates, *briefs*, x. 166
Brewis, *broth*, vii. 218; x. 478
Brigand (harness), i. 251
Briggen (irons), i. 402
Brim, *top of a hill*, i. 371; *fierce*, iii. 138

Digitized by Google

Brocket, *a hart of two years*, ix. 148
Broderd, *embroidered*, iv. 243
Broideries, *embroideries*, x. 199
Brokage, xiv. 314
Broke (=broken), *spoken with*, iv. 483
Broken beer, xii. 228
Broken-bellied, *ruptured*, xii. 215
Brook, *to endure*, xi. 456
Broom, *rushes, twigs of broom*, i. 65
Brothel, *a wicked woman, whore, a wretch*, i. 82, 255
Brunt, *burnt*, vi. 76
Brusten, *burst*, iii. 197
Budge, *to stir*, ix. 525
Buffling, *foolish*, x. 370
Bug, *a goblin*, iv. 72 ; v. 172
Bugle-gown, x. 347
Bugle-horn, viii. 47
Buke, *a book*, vi. 73
Bulohin, *a bull calf*, viii. 369
Bulk, *body*, iv. 357 ; xi. 356
Bullbeggar, *a bogy, goblin*, xii. 122
Bully, *a term of endearment*, x. 260 ; *fellow*, ix. 494, 515 ; *friend*, xii. 120
Bum, *by my*, iv. 62 ; viii. 364 ; (?) *to brand*, vii. 466 ; (?) *bumping*, iv. 122
Bumbard, *a cannon*, xi. 263
Bumbast, *to fill out*, xii. 181
Bumbasting, *stuffing out*, x. 357
Bumfay, } *by my faith*, ii. 375 ;
Bumvay, } iv. 219
Bumming, *drinking*, xiii. 8
Bunny, *a term of endearment*, ix. 252
Bur, *by our*, viii. 338
Burbolt (=bird-bolt), *an arrow*, iii. 101.
Burden (of a song), i. 49
Burgh, *a town*, i. 338
Bursemen, xii. 120
Bursting, *breaking*, iii. 180
Burtherous, *burdensome*, vi. 108
Busk, *fine, trim*, x. 235 ; *a bush*, iii. 81 ; *part of a dress*, ix. 17, *note* ; ix. 368 ; xiii. 334
Buskle, *to buckle*, v. 242
Buss, *to kiss*, iv. 233 ; ix. 244 ; xii. 308 ; *voice* (?), iv. 81
But, *without*, x. 187
Buzzes, *gossamers*, xi. 37
Buzzing, *spreading about rumours*, iv. 366
B' w' y', *be with you*, vi. 532 ; *God be with you, good-bye*, xii. 297
By (=aby), *atone for, pay for*, iii. 139
Bye and main, *on all sides*, xiv. 427
By kind, *naturally*, vii. 294
By-word, *a proverb*, vi. 47

Caitiff, *vile*, xii. 10
Calf, *a fool*, ii. 288, 305
Caliver, xiii. 345
Callet, *a drab*, iii. 209, 215, 217 ; xiii. 499 ; x. 501 ; *craven*, iii. 219
Calverd (salmon), xiv. 450
Camerade, *comrade*, xv. 213, 215
Camp, *to wrangle, nag*, ix. 251.
Can, *knows*, i. 7 ; *to acknowledge*, i. 147, 364
Can (thanks) *to acknowledge*, iii. 66
Can of Catowe, *Khan of Cathay*, i. 32
Canicular, xiv. 336
Cannibal, *the venereal disease*, xi. 247.
Canst, *knowest*, i. 261 ; v. 129
Cant, *to sing*, xiv. 356
Capric (wine), i. 24
Caracts, *ships*, xiv. 325

Digitized by Google

Carantoman, xiv. 300
Carraways, *caraway comfits*, ii. 300
Carbonadoe, vii. 505
Carcanet, *necklace, bracelet*, v. 261
Card (to cool), *note*, xiii. 505
Care, *sorrow*, i. 120, 250
Carefully, *sorrowfully*, ii. 318
Cargo, *courage*, ix. 533
Cargohai, *note*, xi. 421
Cark, *care*, i. 225
Carl, *a churl*, viii. 50; ix. 215
Carlishness, *churlishness*, xii. 311
Carouch, } *a coach*, x. 336; xi.
Caroch, } 202
Carping, *talking*, i. 267
Carriage, *behaviour*, xi. 117
Carriages, *deeds*, xiv. 202
Carta blanca, *a fool*, xv. 72
Cartel, xv. 92
Cartiff, *wretch*, i. 29, 106
Case, "if case," *if it be*, iv. 123
Casques, *helmets*, v. 243
Cassock, *a riding-coat*, ix. 372
Cassy, *Cassia*, i. 366
Cast, *sleight*, ii. 113; *to vomit*, vii. 303; *to contrive*, x. 312; *suppose*, iii. 68, 90; *cast off*, x. 341
Casten, *cast*, xiv. 290
Casting, *spitting, expectoration*, xi. 43
Casting-bottle, *note*, xi. 339.
Cataclysm, *deluge*, xii. 468
Cat-a-mountain, *a panther*, xi. 67
Catch, *a song*, xv. 119
Catchpole, *thief-catcher*, i. 156; *a policeman*, x. 330
Catchpole-bribed = *bribed to be a catchpole*, viii. 118
Cater, *caterer*, xii. 122
Cates, *dainties*, xi. 486; xii. 25
Cat in the pan, iv. 41
Caul, xv. 90, *note*
Cautelous, *cautious*, xi. 15
Cautelously, *cautiously*, xv. 280
Cautility, *deceit*, iii. 284
Caveary, xii. 236
Caviare, ix. 366
Cazimi, *the sun's centre*, xi. 344
Cees, *note*, iv. 367
Censing, *incensing*, iii. 11
Censings, *incensings*, ii. 66
Ceremonious, *religious*, xi. 449
Certain, *for certain, certainly*, i. 32, 129
Certify, *to assure*, xiii. 81
Cha, *I have*, iii. 179
Chad, *I had*, iii. 75; viii. 362
Chafe, *a chafing, anger*, iv. 332; viii. 412
Chafen, *to chafe*, iii. 39
Chalk, "sin in chalk," xiii. 287
Chall, *I will*, iii. 182
Challenge, *to claim*, xi. 34
Cham, *I am*, iii. 175; viii. 338
Champion, *a level field*, vii. 282
Champion-haxter, xiv. 322
Channot, *I cannot*, iii. 195
Chap, *jaw*, iv. 353; vi. 389
Chapfallen gums, x. 339
Chapman, *a dealer, merchant*, xi. 183; xii. 158; xiv. 427
Char, *business, job, turn of work*, ii. 375
Char'd, *done*, iii. 375
Chargeable, *expensive*, xii. 101
Charger, *a dish*, xi. 339
Charity, St., i. 112
Charmer, *enchanter*, xii. 505
Chat, *jaw, jangling*, iii. 243
Chave, *I have*, iii. 178
Chawbon, *jawbone*, i. 424
Che, *I*, viii. 388
Cheap, *bargain*, i. 184
Cheapen, *to buy*, xi. 183, 190
Cheaping, *market*, i. 260

Digitized by Google

Cheard, *I heard*, iii. 205
Cheatee, *one cheated*, xi. 404
Check, *to check, abuse*, ii. 315, 347
Checks, *reproofs*, vii. 156
Cheerly, *cheerfully*, xi. 72
Cherrypit, i. 246
Chests, *chess*, ix. 387
Chieve, *to achieve*, iii. 74
Chill, *I will*, iii. 184; iv. 219
Chirurgeon, *surgeon*, xi. 363
Chitterlings, iii. 310
Chittyface, *having face like a chit*, viii. 188.
Choose, *to help*, xi. 251
Chop logic, x. 126.
Chope, *I hope*, iii. 205
Chopines, *high shoes*, x. 367
Choploge, *chop logic*, iii. 101
Chops, *jaws*, xi. 67
Chrisom clothes, *chrisom clothes*, vi. 72
Christcross row, *alphabet*, vii. 324
Christen'd, *baptized*, i. 148
Chrysome, *note*, xiii. 280
Chuck (= chick), *a term of endearment*, ix. 499; xii. 214
Chud, *I would*, viii. 347
Chuff, *a churl*, viii. 367
Churchman, *a parson*, xii. 110
Chwas, *I was*, iii. 75; iv. 73
Chwere, *I were*, iii. 179
Chwine, *I ween*, iii. 75
Chwould, *I would*, iii. 177
Cinque, *term in dancing*, ii. 91
Cinque-pace, *name of a dance*, xi. 478
Clang, *withered*, i. 269
Clap dish, Clapperjaw, } *a chatterer*, viii. 446; xi. 274
Clap hands, xi. 42
Clary (wine), i. 24
Clave, *did cleave*, i. 147
Cllaw, *to scratch*, x. 122
Clean, *quite, altogether*, i. 25, 213
Clear, *quit*, v. 379; *clearness*, vii. 118
Clenchpoop, *a fool*, vi. 256
Clepe, *to call*, i. 245
Cleped, *called*, i. 200; viii. 347, 394
Clept, *called*, vi. 515
Clerk, *a scholar*, i. 6, 7; iii. 190; *a parson*, xii. 112
Clerkish, *learned*, ii. 9
Clerks (St Nicholas'), *thieves*, xiii. 15
Cling, *to embrace*, xvi. 22; (?), x. 22.
Clip, *to embrace*, ii. 180; ix. 254; x. 173; xiii. 182
Clock, *to cluck*, ix. 480
Cloister, *to imprison*, xiv. 190
Close, *secret*, viii. 64; xi. 61
Closely, *secretly*, viii. 62; xi. 306
Closeness, *secrecy*, xiv. 213
Clotter'd, *clotted*, vii. 82
Cloudy, *gloomy*, xi. 485
Clout, *to patch*, i. 183; *a patch*, iii. 181; *centre of a target*, xi. 249; *used contemptuously of clothes*, xv. 114
Clouted, *clothed*, xi. 197
Clownical, *clownish*, xi. 237
Clubbish, *blockish*, ii. 192
Clutchfist, *a miser*, xii. 233
Clyppen, *to call*, xii. 241
Coals (to carry), *to bear injury*, viii. 417
Coat, *escutcheon*, viii. 296
Cobblestones, *pebblestones*, iii. 210
Cock, *God*, iii. 71
Cock and pie (by), *an oath*, v. 274
Cock's, *God's*, i. 155
Cockatrice, xiii. 500, *note*

Digitized by Google

Cocker'd, *pampered*, xi. 254
Cockerill, *a little cock, a term of contempt*, iv. 68
Cockering, *indulgence*, iii. 8
Cocking, *cock-fighting*, xi. 364
Cockle, vi. 46
Cockney, i. 403; *a pet*, viii. 360
Cocksure, x. 309
Cod's, *God's*, iv. 221
Coddled, xv. 216
Cog, *to cheat*, vi. 257; viii. 416; x. 497; *to flatter, deceive*, viii. 157; *falsity*, viii. 134
Cogfoist, *a cheat*, ix. 239
Cogging, *cheating*, ix. 238
Coggled, *swallowed* (?), ii. 215
Coifs, xi. 181
Coil, *cuff*, iii. 130; *noise*, iii. 124; x. 123
Coil'd, *torn*, iv. 232
Coistrell, viii. 339
Coll, *name of a dog*, iii. 8
Collar, "yeoman of the collar," *prisoners' chains*, i. 157
Collaud, *to praise*, xi. 235
Collet, *part of a ring in which a stone is set*, x. 18
Colloge, *to talk*, xi. 256
Collop, *a slice*, v. 334
Colphise, *to beat, buffet*, iv. 60
Come off, *to pay dearly for*, ix. 185
Comen, *come*, i. 202
Commaudment, *committa'*, vi. 488
Commendadore, xiii. 521
Commerce, *intercourse*, xiv. 198
Commix, *to mix*, i. 11, 12
Commodious (to), *according (to)*, ii. 271; *fit, proper*, ii. 318
Commodity, *interest*, iii. 52
Common, *to commune*, vi. 33
Commutative, *exchangeable*, xv. 240
Compact, *compacted*, viii. 76
Companion, *equal, fellow*,' vi. 179; x. 119
Compare, *comparison*, vii. 72; x. 119
Comparisons are odious, xiv. 147
Compass, *to achieve, comprehend*, xi. 435, 553; xv. 12
Compeer, *equal*, ii. 13
Complement, *requisite*, ix. 367
Complet, *crown*, vii. 241
Complexion, *nature*, i. 287; xv. 281
Complice, *an accomplice*, xiv. 305
Complot, *a plot*, x. 519
Comport, *to bear, behave*, xv. 25
Comportment, *behaviour*, xv. 89
Composition, *terms, agreement*, x. 208; xv. 226
Compound, *compounded*, i. 12
Con, *to acknowledge*, iii. 198; ix. 257
Conceit, *thought, imagination*, i. 7, 10; v. 409; x. 178
Conceive, *to understand*, xi. 562; *think, conceive*, viii. 82; xii. 101
Concent, *adherent*, iv. 147
Concerner, xiii. 210
Concernment, *concern*, xv. 10, 40, 45; *importance*, xiv. 217
Concertation, *a meeting*, i. 409
Concordance, *agreement*, xiii. 119
Concurrents, xv. 29
Conditions, *terms*, xv. 52
Conduct, *a guide*, xiv. 337
Conduyter, *conductor*, i. 123
Coney, *a rabbit, a term of endearment*, ii. 286; iii. 159
Coney-catching, xii. 125
Coneygreen, *a rabbit-burrow*, vii. 336
Congies, *good-byes*, x. 121

Digitized by Google

Congruence, i. 285
Conjoin, *to unite*, xii. 114
Conjuration, *adjura'ion*, xiv. 240
Connant, *covenant*, i. 265
Conserve, *to preserve*, vii. 56.
Conserver, *preserver*, xiv. 135
Consiliadory, xiii. 108
Consort, *concert*, xii. 355
Content, *contentment*, xi. 452, 459
Contentation, *contentment*, iii. 290; xi. 526
Continent, *chaste*, x. 141
Contrivement, *contrivance*, xii 214
Controlment, *control*, vii. 69
Controversy, *litigation*, xi. 467
Conveniency, *convenience*, xiv. 395, 506
Convenient, *fit*, ii. 302
Conversation, *life*, iii. 270
Converse, *conversation*, xi. 484
Convey, *to put, place*, xi. 484; *steal*, i. 159
Conveyance, *theft*, iii. 135, 136
Convince, *to conquer*, iii. 267; iv. 174
Convinced, *convicted*, vi. 94
Cope, *to exchange*, vi. 331
Copesmate, *companion*, vi. 395; vii. 449; xiii. 30
Corner-cap, iii. 11
Cornute, *a cuckold*, x. 173
Corporal, *corporeal*, i. 12
Corregidor, xv. 203
Correspondent (to), *according (to)*, iv. 12.
Corrigidor, v. 125
Corrival, *a rival*, xi. 100
Corse, *body*, iv. 341; *corpse*, i. 408
Corsive, *corrosive*, ix. 558
Coscinomancy, xi. 338
Cosenage, *cheating*, x. 276; xi. 80, 547
Cosener, *a cheat*, xi. 532
Cosmography, *geography*, i. 7, 10, 27
Cost, "do cost," i. 156; "not worth a cost" (*cost = coss = curs*), *not worth a cress*, i. 259
Costard, *apple*, ii. 119; *pate, head*, i. 168: iii. 121; vii. 167; x. 552; xiv. 164
Costermonger, *an applemonger*, xii. 340; xiii. 125
Costomable, *usual*, i. 312
Costreling, iii. 82
Cot, *cottage*, i. 30
Coted, ix. 149
Cothurnal, xiv. 183
Cotswold lion, *a sheep*, iii. 137
Cotton, *to agree*, iv. 215; *succeed*, xi. 204
Couch, *to crouch in fear*, i. 84; *to collocate*, xi. 303
Couch-quarl, *a game*, i. 396
Counsel, *secresy*, iii. 199
Count, *a reckoning*, i. 103
Countenance, *pretence*, i. 65
Counter, *a term in hunting*, ix. 454.
Counter-check, *to oppose*, v. 45, 329; xiv. 115
Counter-checking, *reproving*, vii. 203
Counterfeit, *likeness*, iv. 376; vi. 565; vii. 466; xi. 562; *to imitate*, xiii. 127
Counterly, iv. 233
Counter-match, xi. 320
Counter-mine, xiv. 167
Counter-puff, *a return blow*, v. 243
Counter-scarp, ix. 362
Counter-vail, *to make up for, balance*, vi. 96; viii. 30; xii. 8, 41
Counterview, vi. 464
Counting-book, i. 105

Digitized by Google

County, *count*, vii. 23
Courage, *devotion*, i. 27
Court-martialist, xiii. 158
Coutelace, *cutlass*, v. 240
Covent, *convent*, i. 252; viii. 240
Coverture, *covering*; viii. 77; x. 178
Covet, *to desire*, i. 257
Covetise, *covetousness*. i. 100, 206; v. 184; viii. 77
Covin, *deceit*, xii. 284
Cowardish, *cowardly*, i. 401
Cowr, *to bend, crouch*, iii. 177
Cox, *a coxcomb*, iii. 250
Coy, *to act coy*, v. 47
Crack'd, *bankrupt*, xii. 167
Crackrope, *a term of contempt*, iv. 63
Crake, *boast*, i. 410, 430; ii. 385
Craker, *a boaster*, iv. 67
Cramping, xii. 255, *note*
Crazed, *broken*, iv. 337
Cream (holy), ii. 65
Create, *created*, i. 12, 54
Creature, *Creator*, i. 123, 263
Credit, *to believe*, x. 123
Creke, *see* crik, iv. 222
Cresset-light, vi. 450
Crevis, *crawfish*, iv. 118
Crik, "to cry crik," *to be afraid, to desist*, i. 399
Crinkled, *shrunk*, x. 339
Crishcross, *alphabet*, ix. 42
Crismatory, vi. 71.
Crispy, *rippled*, v. 229
Croak, *a croaking*, xii. 160
Croch, iii. 280
Crock, *a pot*, xii. 351
Crone, *an old woman*, xi. 105
Crotchets, *devices*, x. 366
Crouch-cross, ii. 65
Crowded, *crowed*, iii. 201
Crown'd cup, *a bumper*, xii. 39
Cruel (garters), (*garters*) *of fine worsted*, vii. 286
Crust, *curst, ill-tempered, cross*, ii. 179; *crushed*, iii. 242; *a term of abuse*, vi. 539
Crusty, *angry*, iv. 184
Cry aim, *to consent*, v. 225
Crystals, *eyes*, xiii. 55
Cuckally, *cuckoldy*, vi. 200
Cucking-stool, xii. 127, *note*
Cuckold, *to make a cuckold of one*, xi. 119
Cuckoldy, *like a cuckold*, xi. 110
Cuerpo, xiii. 278
Cues, *note*, iv. 367
Cullies, *fine broths*, ix. 366
Culling, *thrashing, beating*, iv. 120
Cullion, *a base fellow*, iii. 239
Cullon, *cullion*, ii. 305
Culm, *top*, iv. 313
Culver, *a dove*, x. 153
Culverings, x. 325
Cumber'd, *troubled*, i. 54, 101
Cumbrance, *encumbrance*, i. 256
Cunning, *knowledge, learning*, i. 7, 10; *learned*, i. 7
Cunningly, *learnedly*, i. 37
Curchy, *to crouch, bend*, iii. 272
Cure, *care*, i. 13, 294
Curmudgeonly, vi. 380
Curst, *ill-tempered, angry*, iii. 273; vii. 474
Cursy, *courtesy*, viii. 339
Curtain lectures, xiv. 303
Curtal horse, *a short-tailed horse*, iii. 210; viii. 124
Cusp, see *note*, xi. 344
Customage, *freight*, xii. 99
Cut, *a short-tailed horse, a term of abuse*, iii. 216; x. 224; xi. 69
Cut and long-tail, xiii. 84
Cuts, *lots*, xv. 130
Cutter, *swaggerer*, xiii. 16

Digitized by Google

Dad, *father*, x. 359
Daintrels, *dainties*, iii. 192
Dainty, *rare*, i. 365
Dalliance, *gossip*, i. 293, 355; iii. 167; xii. 240
Dally, *vb. trs.*, vii. 134
Dallying, *toying*, xi. 58
Dam and brat, *mother and child*, viii. 284
Damn, "a damn-me," *a swearer* xi. 139
Dandiprat, *dwarf*, ix. 390
Danger, *control*, i. 54; *power*, iii. 62
Dangerous, *suspicious*, iii. 309
Dapper, *spruce, smart*, iv. 84; ix. 229
Darby's bands, ii. 362
Dare net, *a net for frightening birds into*, x. 149
Darkling, *in the dark*, iii. 105; vii. 339, 358
Daster, *a dastard*, i. 395
Date, *end or term of life*, vii. 90; viii. 465
Daubing, *deceit*, i. 159
Daw, *a fool*, i. 8; ii. 285
Dawcock, *a fool*, iv. 119
Day's eyes, *daisies*, viii. 31, 33
Daysman, *an umpire*, iii. 14
Dazzle, *a dazzling array*, xv. 116
Dealt, *distributed*, xi. 470
Debate, *strife*, i. 411; vi. 178
Deboshed, *debauched*, xiii 195; *spoilt*, xii. 512
Decard, *to throw away a card*, x. 187
Decay, *ruin*, i. 293
Deepness, *depth*, i. 18; ii. 263
Defail, *to fail*, x. 128
Defame, *defamation*, vii. 56, 376; x. 311; xii. 104
Defend, *to forbid*, iv. 143
Defendam, xv. 143
Deft, *handy, dexterous*, ix. 394
Defy, *to deny*, iii. 228; *refuse*, viii. 199
Degenerous, *degenerate*, xii. 507
Deject, *dejected*, i. 101
Delayed, *checked*, i. 81; *diluted*, xiii. 114
Dele, *whit*, xii. 284; xv. 426
Delibate, *to taste of*, xiii. 468
Delicates, *delicacies*, ii. 220
Delices, *delicacies*, ix. 171
Deliver, *active*, viii. 197
Dell, *deal, bit, part*, i. 235
Delve, *to dig*, iii. 183
Demand, *to ask, question*, i. 85; vi. 80
Demanding, *a request*, i. 84
Demean, *to behave*, vii. 290
Demeaning, *behaviour*, i. 84
Demesnes, *estates*, ix. 473
Demi-assignation, xv. 61
Demi-culverings, x. 325
Demi-deity, *demi-god*, xiv. 74
Denay, *to deny, refuse*, i. 257; vii. 52, 330
Dent, *dint*, iv. 215
Deny, *to refuse*, vii. 298
Depardieu, *by God*, xii. 240
Depart, *to separate, part*, i. 129, 404; ii. 6; viii. 134; ix. 479
Deprave, *to depreciate, defame*, i. 32; iv. 257; viii. 64; xi. 119; xiii. 172
Dere, *to injure*, i. 252
Dern, *secret*, xii. 284, 311
Derogate, *to detract from*, xi. 479
Derogation, *detraction, depreciation*, xi. 499
Descant, *a musical term*, v. 218; ix. 407
Descried, *discovered*, vii. 344
Descrive, *to describe*, i. 32
Desertful, *meritorious*, viii. 186

Digitized by Google

Desertfully, *meritoriously*, viii. 132
Designments, *designs*, xiv. 147
Desperateness, *despair*, x. 149
Despite, "in despite of," *in spite of*, i. 132; vii. 153; *to treat cruelly*, vi. 150; *spite, cruelty*, xi. 478
Despiteful, *cruel, spiteful*, v. 22
Devoir, *duty*, ii. 231; x. 128
Dice, *to lose by dice*, xi. 94
Dicker, *ten*, "*a dicker of hides*," vii. 303; *name of a coin*, xv. 131
Dict, *a saying*, i. 54
Dight, *prepared, arrayed*, i. 24, 227, 252, 409; *arraign* (?), i. 274
Dighter, *preparer*, i. 422
Digne, *worthy*, xii. 242
Diligence, *a spy*, xv. 58
Ding'd, *struck*, v. 26
Dis, *Pluto*, x. 349
Disaster, *disastrous*, vii. 481
Disbowelled, *disembowelled*, vii. 83
Disburse, *disbursement*, x. 199
Discern'd, *distinguished*, xi. 481
Discommend, *to dispraise*, i. 343
Disconsonancy, *unfitness*, (?), xv. 125
Discurtain, xiv. 280
Disdain, *to treat disdainfully*, ii. 167
Disease, *distress, trouble*, i. 87; *to trouble, disturb*, i. 203; ii. 191
Disfeature, *to deform*, xiv. 291
Disgest, *digest*, vii. 310
Dishonest, *to disgrace*, ix. 258
Dishonurate, *dishonourable*, viii. 297
Dismissed, *dispersed*, xiv. 350
Disobediency, *disobedience*, xi. 464
Dispilled, *spilled*, i. 251
Disport, *sport*, i. 45; ii. 111
Dispose, *disposal*, vi. 556
Dispossess, *to disinherit*, xiv. 190
Disquietness, *unrest*, vii. 304
Disrank, *to disarray*, xi. 264
Disrelish, *dislike*, xiv. 314, 352
Dissard, } *a fool*, ii. 304; ix.
Dizard, } 383
Dissemblance, *a dissembling*, ix. 255
Distain'd, *stained*, vii. 111, 179
Distaste, *displeasure*, xi. 454; xiv. 242
Distemper, *to disturb*, vii. 64, 123; *ill-temper*, xi. 197; xiv. 206
Distemperature, *distemper*, ix. 453; x. 116
Distemper'd, *unreasonable*, x. 209
Distempering, viii. 113
Distinctiveness, *power of distinguishing*, xv. 22
Distraught, *distracted*, v. 113
Distressful, *distressed*, v. 68
Diversely, *differently*, i. 14
Divinity, *divine institution*, i. 133
Do, *done*, i. 156
Doat, *to rave, be mad*, iii. 211; *to act the fool*, xiv. 185
Doccy, *doxy, a loose wench*, i. 188
Dock, *tail*, i. 247, 425
Documents, *teachings*, ii. 50
Doff (=do off), *a put-off, the cold shoulder* (?), ix. 276
Dog's, *God's, an oath*, ii. 84
Dole, *lot*, iv. 21; *allowance to poor*, xi. 208; *grief*, vii. 205

Digitized by Google

Dolent, *invalid, sufferer*, i. 82
Doll, *mistress, sweetheart*, ii. 169
Dolour, *pain, grief*, i. 55, 119; ii. 314
Dolt, *a fool*, iii. 343
Dolted, *acted like a dolt*, iii. 19
Doltish, *foolish*, ix. 440
Don, *a lord*, xiv. 285
Done, *to do*, xii. 257
Doom, *judgment*, "day of doom," i. 111
Dop, *to dip*, i. 318
Dossers, *panniers*, x. 224; *a basket*, xi. 43
Dotard, *a fool*, xii. 190
Dottrel, } *a fool*, xiii. 43; xiv.
Dotterel, } 300, 319
Doubt, *fear*, i. 252, 256, 257; vii. 400
Doughty, *doughtily*, i. 252
Dowdy, *a slattern*, vii. 475
Down, *a hill*, i. 250
Downflat, *plain*, xv. 140
Doxy, *a whore, a loose wench*, xiv. 281, 285, 291; xv. 68
Drab, *a loose woman, a term of abuse*, iii. 202
Draff, *dregs, rubbish*, i. 25
Drawlatch, *a thief*, ii. 222; xi. 249
Dreariment, *dreariness*, vii. 152
Drench, *potion, drink*, vii. 303
Drifts, *devices*, xii. 52
Drivel, *slave, wretch, fool*, i. 222; iv. 119
Drolling, *droll* (?), xiv. 278, 356
Dronel, *a drone*, iv. 151
Drumble, *a sleepyhead*, iv. 118
Drumsler, *a drummer*, v. 303
Drunk as a mouse, ii. 300
Duck, *to make a salutation by bending the head*, iii. 78; xiv. 125
Ducks and drakes, xi. 212; xii. 150
Dudgeon, *a dagger*, v. 271
Duello, *a duel*, xi. 44
Dulcet, *sweet*, iv. 143
Dulsome, *sweet*, ii. 297
Dump, *the dumps*, iii. 180
Dumps, iii. 87; xii. 214
Duns, *writings of Duns Scotus*, iii. 19; *one versed in writings of*, iii. 20; *Duns Scotus*, x. 57
Dup, *to do up*, iv. 69
Durance, *a kind of cloth*, vi. 344
Duretta, *a kind of cloth*, xiii. 222
Dust, *a broil*, "a doughty dust," ii. 390
Duteous, *dutiful*, vii. 400; xi. 452

Eachwhere, *everywhere*, vi. 88
Eanlings, *lambs*, ix. 480
Earst, *first*, iv. 12
Eaths, *easily*, v. 209
Ecstasy, xiii. 511, *note*
Eftsoons, *soon again, forthwith*, i. 11; ii. 246; vi. 47; ix. 355
Egg, *to urge on*, iv. 67
Eighths, *octaves*, xii. 507
Eild, *to requite*, iii. 240
Eke, *also*, i. 203; iv. 11
Eld, *age*, vii. 121
Eldeth, *troubleth*, i. 414
Elect, *elected*, i. 101
Election, *choice*, x. 131
Elemental, *elementary*, i. 11
Elfish, *elf-like*, i. 399
Embalming, *using cosmetics*, i. 60
Embas'd, *dishonoured*, v. 210
Embossed, *a hunting term*, xi. 406
Embowelled, *embedded*, vii. 275
Embracement, *embrace*, v. 208
Empery, *empire, rule*, v. 191, 233; xii. 520: xiv. 105
Enamoret, xi. 289

Digitized by Google

Endamage, *to damage*, viii. 76
Endark, *to cause to be dark*, i. 62
Endeavour, *to try to bring about*, x. 156
Endentus (=entendu), *understood*, iii. 263
Ends, "no ends of," xi. 547
Ene, *one*, vi. 72
Enfeoff, *to endow*, ix. 256
Enforcement, *compulsion*, ix. 506
Engender'd, *produced*, i. 11
Enginer, *engineer*, xi. 63
Engorged, *disgorged*, ix. 211
Engraven, *engraved*, iv. 296
Enlumine, *to illumine*, i. 126
Ennewed, *painted*, i. 62
Ensample, *example*, i. 70
Ensconced, *hidden*, xiii. 47, *note*
Ensuing, *following*, iii. 264
Ensure, *to assure*, i. 62
Ensured, *plighted, affianced*, iii. 90
Enthronised, *enthroned*, xi. 485
Entituled, *entitled*, ii. 10
Entreat, *entreaty*, viii. 140
Entreative, ix. 341
Environ, *all round*, i. 6
Envy, *hatred*, x. 58; xiii. 355
Ephemeris, xi. 320
Epitaph, *to write an epitaph*, xii. 506
Epitheton, *epithet*, v. 266
Epythite, *a beggar*, ix. 527
Equivalence, *an equivalent*, vi. 96
Ere, *before*, i. 31
Eremite, *a hermit*, xii. 231
Erewhile, *previously, formerly*, i. 32; vii. 211
Errant, *arrant*, xi. 57
Erst, *before*, iv. 125
Eschew, *to avoid*, i. 89; xii. 24
Eschieved, *achieved, gained*, i. 77
Espied, *discerned*, i. 78
Essay, *to try*, i. 181
Essex man, *a fool*, xiv. 361, 467
Estate, *state*, i. 7
Estridge, *an ostrich*, xiv. 41
Eterne, *eternal*, i. 11
Eternised, *made eternal*, v. 234
Evenness, *indifference, impartiality*, xiv. 200
Ever-each, *every*, v. 242
Everichone, **Everychone**, *every one*, i. 38, 163 (*the note is wrong*)
Every deal, *every whit*, i. 33
Excuse, *defence*, ix. 494
Exigent, *exigency*, vi. 546; xiv. 325; xv. 78
Expectance, *expectation*, xi. 95; xiv. 365
Explicate, *to explain*, iv. 236
Expound, *expounded*, i. 37
Express, *expression*, xv. 332
Expression, *a proverb*, xii. 262
Expulsed, *expelled*, i. 59
Extinct, *put out*, i. 375
Extirp, *to extirpate*, v. 226
Extromers, *astronomers*, i. 78
Exulcerate, *to form an ulcer*, xiv. 362
Eyen, **Eyne**, *eyes*, i. 254; iii. 217; xii. 311

Fable, *lie*, i. 224; *to lie*, i. 29; *cajole*, i. 63; *deceive*, i. 199
Fabler, *liar*, x. 47
Fablyng, *lying*, i. 78
Face, *pretence*, iii. 17
Face-physick, *a cosmetic*, xi. 133
Faces about, *changes*, xiii. 463
Facts, *deeds*, iii. 66; iv. 167
Fader, *a father*, xii. 99
Fadge, *to go, proceed, succeed*, vii. 418; x. 230; *do, suit*, x. 481
Fadock, *faggot*, vi. 77

Digitized by Google

Fagaries, *vagaries*, xiv. 289
Fair, *beauty*, viii. 255
Fairings, viii. 225
Fall, *to come, fall out*, i. 252; *cadence*, ix. 406
Fall (the French), x. 122
Famine, *hunger*, vii. 64
Famish (to), ii. 217
Famishment, *death by starving*, viii. 319
Fand, *found*, ii. 15
Fantastic show, *fancy* (?), xii. 81
Fantasy, *fancy*, i. 7, 312
Far, *for*, vi. 71
Farcing, *stuffing*, ii. 236
Fardingale, ix. 426
Fare, *to go*, i. 251; "fare fore," *to go before*, xiii. 154; *to play*, ii. 115
Farfet, *farfetched*, xi. 401
Farforth, *far*, i. 207
Far-forth day, *late in the day*, ii. 312
Faring, *playing at dice*, ii. 115
Fat, *to fatten*, xii. 451; "to feed fat"=*to fatten*, xi. 515
Fatting, *fattening*, ix. 516
Faulted, *faulty*, x. 157
Favelle, *flattery*, i. 164
Favour, *look, appearance*, i. 78; x. 340
Favoured (ill), *looking*, xi. 520
Fay, *faith*, i. 111, 183; iii. 113
Faynd, *find*, vi 74
Fear, *to terrify*
Feard, *terrified*, i. 83
Feat, *neat*, i. 62
Featly, *neatly*, i. 266; ii. 375
Fea'ty, *fealty, fidelity*, i. 54, 173
Feebled, *enfeebled*, x. 117
Fegary, *vagary, trick*, x. 366
Fell, *cruel, fierce*, i. 252; v. 36; xi. 556; *skin*, i. 78
Fellness, *fierceness*, iv. 323
Felt, *felt hats*, xi. 268
Feofee, xii. 33
Ferdegew, iii. 92
Fere, "in fere," *in company*, i. 247
Feres, *a-do*, i. 168
Ferk, *to urge on, hasten*, x. 254
Fescennine, *note*, xii. 312
Festination, *haste*, iv. 216
Fet, *to perform* (?), ii. 384; *to fetch*, i. 43, 83; *fetched*, i. 381; vii. 165
Fetch, *a trick*, ii. 309; xii. 79
Fete, *feet*, i. 31
Fetting, *fetching*, ii. 234
Feutred, *equipped*, i. 376
Fewl, *foul*, xii. 507
Fib, *a liar*, ii. 254
Fierse, *verse*, vii. 190
Fifteens, x. 299
Figary, *vagary*, xiii. 166
File, *to defile*, ii. 216; iv. 110; ix. 511
Filed, *flattering*, iv. 102
Filth, *a term of abuse*, iii. 244
Finden, *to find*, ix. 119
Fined, *refined*, iii. 363
Fines, *defines*, ii. 80
Fire-drake, viii. 163; *will-o'-the-wisp*, ix. 572
Firk, *to cheat, trick*, xiv. 391; x. 291, 292, 328
Firk'd, *beaten*, iv. 64
Firker, *a cheat*, xii. 165
Firmable, *firm*, vi. 282
Fisher, *a fisherman*, iv. 164; xii. 115
Fish-hooks, ii. 378
Fit, *air (in music)*, i. 246; *song*, iii. 92; *to suit*, xi. 456
Fivepence, "as fine as fivepence," iv. 118
Flags, *a term used in falconry*, xi. 341
Flanting, *flaunting*, xiii. 150
Flap-dragon, xiii. 44
Flashy, *fiery*, iv. 149

Digitized by Google

Flat, *plain, plainly*, iii. 19, 20; xi. 304; xiv. 398, 399
Flatcap, *a term of abuse*, xi. 152
Flative, *flatulent*, ix. 454
Flaw, *a blast*, vii. 149
Flayn, *flayed*, i. 416
Flecken, *spotted*, xii. 241
Fleet, *to skim*, viii. 443
Flet (= fleeth), *flee ye*, xii. 287
Fletcher, *an arrow-maker*, xiii. 40
Flicker, *to flutter*, xii. 477
Flim-flam, *a flam*, ii. 335
Flinch, *to shrink*, xii. 259
Flincher, *a coward*, xi. 470, 491
Flit, *to depart*, iv. 336; ix. 124
Flout, *to scoff, mock*, iv. 119; xi. 39; xii. 313; xiv. 190; *a scoff, mock*, x. 523
Flush, ii. 78
Fly-flops, xii. 331
Fode, *person*, i. 243, 247
Foggy, *flabby*, viii. 371
Foil (of a jewel), vii. 288; *a defeat*, iv. 322; *to defeat*, iv. 332
Foils, *set-offs*, xiii. 148
Foin, *thrust, push*, ii. 389, 392; *to fence*, xii. 285
Foist, *to cheat*, xi. 67; *a cheat, deception*, vi. 257; xiv. 359
Fold, *bend*, i. 135
Folt, *a fool*, ii. 304
Fond, *foolish*, iv. 125; x. 192; xi. 129
Fondly, *foolish*, vii. 63
Fondness, *folly*, iv. 55; xii. 8
Fong, *to take*, i. 257, 259
Fool, *a term of endearment*, i. 71, 72
For, *by*, i. 85; *from*, i. 135
Forbode, *prohibition*, "God's forebode" = *God forbid*, i. 68; *forbidden*, i. 212, 226; *forbad*, i. 285
Force, *to care*, i. 34; iii. 39; *matter, worth*, i. 8, 47; iii. 129; "of force," *necessarily*, iii. 255; iv. 19; vii. 503
Forceth, *it matters*, i. 214
Fordoth, *ruins*, i. 68
Fordull, *very dull*, ii. 368
Fore, *before*, i. 343
Foredulled, *very dull*, vii. 32
Forefend, *to defend*, iv. 377; *to forbid*, vii. 18
Foreflow, xiv. 287
Forepassed, *overpassed*, ii. 386; xi. 475
Forespoken, *bewitched*, vii. 465
Forethink, *to repent*, ii. 6
Foretop, *forelock*, xiv. 311
Foreween, *to think of beforehand*, iv. 302
Forfeit, *forfeited*, x. 196
Forfend, *to forbid*, vii. 168, 411; x. 255
Forge, *to frame, mould*, i. 84
Forged, *fabricated*, iv. 102
Forked crest, xiv. 140
Forlet, *to stop*, iv. 152
Forlore, Forlorn, *ruined, lost*, i. 147, 172, 269
Formosity, *beauty*, iv. 111
Forne, *before*, ix. 104
Forsworn, *perjured*, xiii. 148
Forth, *out, from*, ix. 564; xii. 174; xi. 485
Fortitude, *an astrological term*, xi. 319
Fortunates, *an astrological term*, xi. 319
Fortune, *to happen*, ii. 111
Foster, *fosterer*, iv. 143
Foulter, *to falter*, iv. 314, 327
Found, *kept, supported*, i. 244
Fox, *a sword*, vii. 318; xiv. 387; *to intoxicate*, xiii. 28
Foxed, *drunk*, xi. 448, 524
Foyson, *plenty*, xi. 380

Digitized by Google

Frame, *to put*, iii. 21; *to turn out well*, iii. 70; *to try*, iv. 190; xi. 12; *the gallows*, i. 158
Franion, *a loose fellow*, iv. 60; vi. 179
Frappet, *a pet*, ix. 548
Fraudful, *fraudulent*, v. 363
Fraught, *laden*, xi. 471
Fraughtage, *freight*, xii. 141
Fraughted, *freighted*, xiv. 353; *laden*, viii. 337
Fray, *affray, fight*, i. 41; *to terrify*, iii. 131; vii. 313; *to scare*, x. 412
Frayd, *terrified*, v. 201
Frea, *from*, vi. 71
Free, *destitute of money*, iii. 347
Freedom, *generosity*, i. 84
Freely, *nobly*, i. 244
Fremman, *a stranger*, ii. 210
French hood, iii. 28
Frere, *friar*, i. 155, 200; *brother*, i. 188
Fright, *to frighten*, viii. 389
Friscols, *friskings*, ii. 367, 384
Friskas, *friskings*, i. 44
Friskin, *friskingly*, xiv. 125
Fro, *from*, i. 185
Frolic (to) v. 15; viii. 158
Frolicsome, vii. 173
Front, *face*, xiv. 42
Frontisterion, *entrance to a house*, xi. 310
Frontless, xiv. 284
Frontlet, *forehead*, i. 350
Frounced, iv. 321
Frumping, *frumpy*, xi. 104
Fucus, xiv. 290; *paint used as a cosmetic*, x. 274
Fullam, *note*, xii. 124
Fume, *passion*, xii. 423
Fumishness, *anger*, i. 400
Furbish, *to clean clothes*, ix. 553
Furmenty, *frumenty*, ix. 155
Furnycard, ii. 78
Furth, *forth*, ii. 46
Fustigation, xv. 32

Ga, *gave*, iii. 193
Gaberdine, *a long frock*, xiv. 125
Gaffer, *godfather*, vi. 399
Gage, *pledge*, iii. 233; vi. 311
Gaged, *gauged*, i. 148
Gagtooth, *a large tooth*, viii. 119
Gainful, *advantageous*, viii. 35; xi. 547; *meritorious*, xiv. 117
Gallant, *to act the gallant*, x. 125
Galley-foist, *a pleasure-boat*, xiv. 385
Galliard, *a dance*, ii. 117, 372
Gallon, *gallant*, viii. 344
Gallow-tree, *the gallows*, ii. 15; viii. 189
Gallymawfries, *cowards* (*properly a dish of remnants*), xii. 166
Gambawds, *gambols*, i. 44
Gan, *did*, xii. 242
Gang, *to go*, xii. 257
Gape, *to desire*, iv. 353; ix. 519
Gar, *to cause, make*, vi. 70; xii. 507; *to force*, x. 363
Gard, *welt*, vii. 213
Garded, *laced*, xi. 366
Garden-house, x. 135
Garden-plot, v. 155
Gardings, *trimmings of a dress*, x. 121
Garish, *gay, fine*, x. 199
Gash, *tear in a garment*, iii. 176
Gauding, *toying*, iii. 109
Gaudish, *gaudy*, i. 286
Gaurdon, *reward, recompense*, i. 206
Gauds, *gauderies*, x. 175; *gaudy toys*, iv. 130
Gazet, *name of a coin*, xv. 128
Gear, *matter, business*, ii. 302; xi. 204; *costume*, iii. 28

Digitized by Google

Geason, *scarce*, ii. 319; iv. 138; vii. 130
Gelt, *gelded*, xiv. 396
Generate, *generated*, i. 13
Genman, *a gentleman*, iii. 160
Gentle, *gentle hearer*, iv. 396; *noble*, i. 81, 147
Gergon, *jargon, talk*, xii. 241
German clock, xii. 231
Gewgaw, xiv. 291
Gib, *a term of contempt*, iii. 215
Gibb'd, *castrated*, xiii. 31
Gibe, *to taunt*, iv. 330; *to mock*, viii. 365
Gibridge, *gibberish*, viii. 75
Gif, *if*, vi. 75; xii. 507
Gimmal, *a ring*, ix. 372
Gin, *a snare*, xii. 232; *a trick*, xii. 242; *a wire trap*, xi. 134; *contrivance*, i. 246
Gin, *to begin*, x. 338; *do*, xii. 507
Ging, *a gang*, viii. 145
Gingerly, *delicately*, i. 147; *mincingly*, ii. 22.
Gi'r (=give her), iii. 217
Gird, "at a gird," *in a trice*, ii. 331; *to strike*, i. 429
Girl, *a roebuck two years old*, ix. 148
Gis, *Jesus*, ii. 129; iii. 225
Gittern, iii. 87; ix. 444; xv. 114
Give aim, *to incite*, x. 85
Glad, *to gladden*, xi. 516
Glassing (=glassen), *of glass*, i. 62
Glave, x. 358; *a sword*, ix. 362; xii. 477
Glay, *a dirty wench*, iii. 176
Gleek, *three*, xi. 217, 364; *a term used in card-playing*, xi. 395
Gleering, *leering*, ix. 191
Glister, *to glitter, to shine*, i. 252; xi. 432, 485; x. 218
Gloming, *lowering*, iii. 59
Glooming, *sulkiness*, iii. 220
Glorify, *to boast*, i. 68
Glose, *to flatter*, i. 7; *gloss*, iii. 12
Gloser, *a flatterer*, iii. 224; *liar*, iii. 43
Glosing, *flattering*, vii. 165
Gloss, *to glose*, i. 199
Glossing, *commenting*, iii. 198
Glustering, *glistering*, xii. 351
Go-by, "a go-by," xv. 17
Go forth, *to proceed*, i. 17
Go prig, x. 288
Gob, *mouthful*, x. 273
God-a-marsy, *God of mercy*, iii. 313
God-a-mercy, xi. 452
God Mary mother, *marry!* vii. 405, 489
God's dear holy bread, viii. 267
God's Mary, *marry!* vii. 472
God's nigs, *an oath*, xiv. 422
God's so (=God's sonties), *God's sanctities*, xiv. 145
Gog, "on gog," *agog*, iv. 302
Gog's, *God's*, i. 20, 42
Gog's nails, *an oath*, i. 41
Gold the nerves of war, xii. 61
Goliardis, *a buffoon; note*, xii. 240
Goll, *hand, fist*, x. 92, 357
Golpol, *a term of endearment*, ii. 260
Good, *goods*, i. 152
Goodden, *good even*, x. 544
Gooseling, *a gosling*, xiv. 356
Gorbelly, *a glutton*, ix. 434
Gorboil, *turmoil*, x. 287
Goreblood, *gore*, ii. 273
Gorget, xiv. 464
Gorse, *furze*, v. 190
Goss, i. 232, 233; iii. 113
Gostly, *spiritual*, xv. 420
Got, *begotten*, i. 107
Governance, *control*, i. 150, 164

Digitized by Google

Government, *control*, x. 122
Gracious, *graceful*, ix. 342
Graff, *graft*, ii. 173; *to graft*, iii. 58
Gramercy, *great thanks*, i. 250; ix. 192
Grandsire, *great* (?), iv. 130
Grannam, ix. 251; *grandmother, grand-dame*, xii. 329
Grate, viii. 241
Graved, *troubled* (?), iv. 143; *buried*, ix. 124
Gravel, *to sand*, x. 21
Gravelled, xiv. 204
Gredaline, *pucker'd*, xiv. 418
Greedy, *greed*, iv. 193; "greedy fates," iv. 302
Grenning, *gnashing*, iv. 323
Grief, *ill-will, grievance*, iii. 153
Gripe, *to grasp*, iii. 273; *vulture*, vii. 60; *to pinch*, xi. 63
Griping, *a grasp*, xii. 231
Grisly, *dreadful*, i. 252; iv. 302; *horrible*, xii. 25, 502
Gristless, *without muscle*, viii. 278
Gromaly-seed, *gromwell seed*, i. 422
Groom, *man*, i. 252; iv. 283; ix. 128
Grope, *to search*, iii. 184, iv. 176, 216
Gross, *coarse*, ii. 212
Ground, *a musical term*, ix. 338
Grutch, *to grudge, murmur, to grumble*, i. 63; iii. 133
Gude, *good*, vi. 71
Guerdon, *a reward*, iv. 337; vii. 122; ix. 448; xii. 311, 476
Guerdonless, *rewardless*, viii. 343
Guess, *to deem*, i. 57; *a guest*, viii. 180
Guid, *guide*, iv. 137
Guider, *a guide*, i. 172
Guise, *mode, way, fashion*, i. 73; ii. 260, 312
Gulch, *a pool*, ix. 452
Gumm'd, *dimmed*, v. 132
Gush, *to weep*, xi. 30
Guzzle, *throat*, xii. 349
Gyre, *a circle*, ix. 358
Gyve, *a fetter*, i. 170, 171; vii. 79
Gyved, *fettered*, i. 156

Habergeon, Habergin, *a small coat-of-mail*, i. 149, 399, 400
Hadiwist, *had I known, vain after regret*, vi. 457; vii. 356
Haggard, *a wild hawk*, v. 36; ix. 379; xiii. 161; xiv. 344
Halcyon, *favourable*, ii. 99
Hale, *to drag*, iv. 139; xiv. 479
Halfacre (*not* halse acre), iii. 178
Half-god, *a demi-god*, x. 127
Halidom, *an oath; properly sacred relics, the sacrament*, vii. 467
Hally, *holy*, vi. 71
Halse, *neck*, iii. 240
Han, *have*, vi. 71
Handkercher, *handkerchief*, iv. 140
Handle, *to treat*, iv. 63
Handling, *treatment*, i. 217
Handsel, *earnest-money*, xii. 335; *to handsel*, viii. 426
Handwork, *handiwork*, i. 250
Handy, *hand to hand*, v. 13
Hanker, *to hang*, ix. 379
Hap, *to happen*, i. 81; v. 111; x. 183; xi. 456; *fortune*, ii. 393
Happiless, *unhappy*, xi. 144
Happily, *perhaps*, xiii. 362
Harborough, Harborow, *harbour*, i. 228; vii. 85
Hardness, *hardship*, i. 298
Harecop, *a hair-brained fellow*, iv. 73
Harlot, *a (low) fellow*, i. 253

Digitized by Google

Harlotry, *obscène*, viii. 351
Harness, *armour*, iv. 329
Harnessed, *equipped*, i. 395; iv. 176
Harri'd, *abused*, x. 27
Harrow, *note*, xii. 253
Hasp, *a fastening*, ii. 338; *to embrace*, x. 66
Hatch, *a wicket-gate*, vi. 535
Haught, *haughty*, v. 230; viii. 132; xiv. 442
Haunt, *to frequent*, i. 134; *practise*, i. 249
Hauster, *note*, viii. 444
Haviour, *behaviour*, x. 35; xi. 452
Haxter, xiv. 282
Hay, *hedge*, i. 401; *a net for catching rabbits*, vii. 341
Haydegyve, *a kind of dance*, xii. 507
Hazard, *risk*, xv. 225; *game*, ii. 34; *plot of a tennis-court*, ix. 381
Haze, *note*, iii. 110
He, *one*, iv. 357
He and she, *man and woman*, xiv. 443
Heal, *salvation*, i. 199, 212
Heale, xv. 425
Heart of grace, *courage*, xii. 212
Heats, "ride his heats," xv. 129
Hedgecreeper, *a term of contempt*, ii. 251
Heightening, *aggravation*, xv. 92
Heildom, *properly "health," but here seems a corruption of "hilding," a caitiff, slave*, xiii. 43
Heir, *an heiress*, ix. 535
Hele, *health, salvation*, i. 129
Helic, *a term in astrology*, xi. 336
Helm, *helmet*, i. 149
Helter-skelter, *to waste*, vii. 436
Hem, *to clear the throat*, iv. 69; *talkative*, i. 74
Hemuse, *a roebuck of three years old*, ix. 148
Hend, *courteous*, i. 250
Heng, *to hang*, i. 134
Hent, *to seize*, xii. 311
Herber, *arbour*, ii. 46
Heritor, *inheritor*, ii. 8
Herme, *harm*, xii. 311
Heronsew, ii. 282
Herry, *to harry*, i. 30
Hest, *behest, command*, vii., 18; xi. 99
Hey-pass, *a term in legerdemain*, x. 306
Hey troly lolly, i. 20.
Hidder, *hither*, xii. 507
High, "a high," *loudly*, i. 23; *aloud*, i. 33
Highmen and lowmen, xii. 243, *note*
Hight, Highteth, } *is called*, i. 56; xii. 241, 253
Hind, *a peasant*, xii. 224
Hing, *to hang*, i. 274
Hire, *to reward*, i. 364; *a reward*, vii. 59; viii. 360
His, *its*, i. 12
His noun, *his own*, viii. 76
Ho, *bounds*, ix. 390
Hoart, *hurt*, xii. 253
Hobby (*hawk*), ix. 379
Hobil, *a term of abuse*, iii. 103
Hoddypeak, Hoddypeke, Hodypeak, Huddypeke, } *a fool, a term of contempt*, i. 42; ii. 164, 211; iii. 217
Hodmandod, *a snail, a term of abuse*, xiv. 525
Hoise, *to hoist*, iii. 34, 218
Hold, *to bet*, ii. 275
Hold bias, xii. 280
Holes (nine), iii. 9
Holidam. See *Halidom*, iv. 219, 244

Digitized by Google

Hollen, *of holly*, i. 49
Holp, *helped*, i. 85, 191
Holt, *wood, grove*, i. 148
Holy, *holly, wholly*, i. 359
Honesty, *honest people*, iii. 228
Honor, *credit, reputation*, iv. 98, 185
Hope, *to expect*, xii. 132
Hop-holiday, ii. 379
Horrid, *bristling*, xi. 527
Hostelity, *hospitality*, v. 398
Hot, *did hit*, vii. 276
Hotchpotch, *a pudding*, ix. 183
Hoten, xii. *called*, 255
Hough, *to hamstring*, ix. 457; xiv. 164
Hound-fish, *dog-fish*, xii. 241
Hoved, *abode*, i. 178
How, *who*, xiv. 458
Howlet, *an owl*, iii. 87
Hucklebone, iii. 180
Hud, *to hood* (?), xi. 353
Huddle, *thick*, ix. 269
Huff, } *an exclamation*, i. 20,
Huffa, } 188; ii. 13
Huff, *anger*, vii. 311
Hugeously, *much*, xii. 276
Huggermugger, *in secret*, viii. 84; x. 91
Hugy, *huge*, v. 106
Humblesse, *humility*, viii. 166
Humorist, *a madman*, ix. 17
Humorous, *fanciful, capricious, ill-tempered*, v. 31; vii. 433; xiv. 296
Hundreth, *a hundred*, vii. 278
Husbanded, *economised*, xi. 355
Husbandry, *economy*, iii. 16; v. 189; xi. 63
Hussy, *housewife*, xiv. 331
Huswife, *huzzy*, vii. 250; *applied to a man*, vii. 303 (?)
Hydroptic, xiv. 288
Hyghten, } *called*, i. 129, 275;
Hyght, } xii. 254
Iброken, *broken*, i. 49
Ich, *I*, i. 73; ii. 169; iii. 175
Icha, *I have*, iii. 227
Ichotte, *I wot, I know*, iii. 75
Iclipped, *called*, v. 363
I-dight, *prepared*, i. 243
Ield, *to reward*, iii. 75
Ifare, *to go*, v. 395
Ilk, *same*, i. 264; *each*, vi. 71
Ilkwhare, *everywhere*, vi. 71
Illicentiate, *not lawfully licensed*, xiv. 283
Ill-mutton, *a strumpet*, xi. 43
Ill-part, *malapert* (?), viii. 250
Illumine, *to illuminate*, i. vi.
Illustrate, *to make illustrious*, xv. 229
Immeriting, *undeserving*, xiv. 307
Imp, *to graft*, xi. 346
Impale, *to surround with pall* (?), vii. 112
Impal'd, *surrounded*, viii. 165
Imp'd, xii. 530.
Impede, *impediment*, xiv. 362
Impoisoned, *poisoned*, viii. 38
Impoisoning, *poisoning*, xi. 566
Import, *importance*, vii. 471; *to concern*, xv. 23
Imports, *is necessary*, xv. 102
Importune, *importunate*, i. 54; *to be importunate*, xi. 109
Impossible, *impossibility*, i. 152
Imposthumes, *boils*, i. 66
Impostume, *a boil*, xi. 343
Impostur'd, *deceived*, xiv. 352
Impresse, *impress*, xiv. 293
Imprinted, *printed*, i. 7
Imps, *scions*, xii. 450
Impudency, *impudence*, ix. 191; x. 31.
Incertain, *uncertain*, vii. 195
Incomposed, *indisposed*, xiv. 198
Incontinent, *forthwith*, i. 48

Digitized by Google

Inconveniency, *inconvenience*, xi. 442
Indeniz'd, *one made free*, xii. 472
Indent (to), ii. 213
Indifferent, *impartial*, i. 415; v. 405
Indifferently, *impartially*, viii. 32
Indite, *to compose (ballads)*, i. 7
Indulgency, xiii. 466
Infect, *infected*, i. 302
Inferial, *below, mundane*, i. 9
Influence (of the stars), i. 11; vii. 63; xii. 339
Ingenious, *ingenuous*, 13, 53
Ingeniously, *ingenuously*, xiv. 281
Ingram, *ignorant*, vi. 397
Inis, *I am not*, xii. 287
Inkhorn, *pedantic*, viii. 70
Inquisition, *inquiry*, xiii. 156
Insame, *together*, i. 245, 247
Insculp'd, *engraved*, xii. 202
Insculption, *inscription*, x. 12
Insensate, *without feeling*, i. 12
Insensitive, *irrational*, xi. 144
Insidiate, *to plot*, xii. 605
Insolency, *insolence*, xiv. 206
Insort, *to distribute*, vii. 425
Inspire, *to breathe into*, xiv. 105
Insufferable, *unbearable*, x. 194
Insurance, *affiance*, iii. 136
Insure, *to assure*, iv. 220
Intea, *into*, vi. 71
Intellection, *knowledge*, i. 124; *understanding*, ii. 263
Intellective, *intellectual*, i. 12
Intelligence, *watch, spying*, x. 174; *a spy*, xi. 337
Intelligencer, *a spy, informer*, xi. 319, 554
Intelliment, *meaning*, i. 421
Intemperance, *lust*, viii. 303
Intend, *to pretend*, ii. 369
Intendiment, *intention*, x. 129
Intending, *intention*, i. 63
Intendment, *intention*, viii. 454
Intendments, *intentions*, xiv. 117
Intent, *intention*, xi. 455; *purpose*, xi. 465
Intentive, *attentive*, vii. 172
Intermete, *intermeddle*, xii. 286
Inter-parley, vii. 186
Interrogative, *a question*, xi. 279
Intreat, *to treat*, i. 237
Invective, *abusive*, viii. 75
Inversation, i. 268
Invocate, *invoke*, xv. 210
Inward, *intimate*, x. 38, 305, 434
Ipocras (wine), xi. 194
Ireful, *angry*, i. 81
Irked, *irksome*, ix. 176
Irremeable, *having no way of return*, xi. 567
Ise, *I will*, iii. 218
Ish, *I will*, i. 231, 232
Issue, *outlet*, xv. 88
I-the, *to prosper*, i. 155
I-wis, *truly*, i. 42; xii. 240
I-wiss, *truly*, i. 14

Jack, *jacket*, xi. 138
Jack-a-lent, xi. 262
Jack of beer, vii. 218
Jacksnipe, xiv. 450
Jack sprat, ii. 357
Jade, *a strumpet*, vi. 257
Jadishly, *like a jade*, xiv. 285
Jakes, *a privy*, x. 339
Jangler, *a babbler*, ix. 397; *jester*, xii. 240
Janty, *jaunty*, xiv. 401, 506
Jape, *jest, trick*, iii. 245; viii. 389
Japed, *deceived*, i. 171
Javel, *a fool*, iv. 150
Jawled, *nagged*, ix. 252
Jaxes, *privies*, ii. 276

Digitized by Google

Jealous, *suspicious*, xiii. 424
Jeltron, *shelter, shield*, i. 149
Jeopard (to), *risk*, i. 412; ii. 252; *to lay a bet*, iii. 309
Jeopardous, *hazardous*, i. 185
Jerted, *jerked*, viii. 52
Jerts, *jerks*, ii. 194
Jest, *deed*, vii. 186; *part played in a mask*, viii. 114
Jet, *to go, strut*, i. 356, 384; xiv. 176, 181
Jetter, *strutter*, i. 164, 384
Jetting, *strutting*, iii. 108; vii. 191
Jis, *Jesus*, i. 168
Jobbed, *struck*, i. 442
Jobbernole, *pate* (?), viii. 446
Job-nut, xiv. 306
Jockey, *Jack*, xii. 156
Jollity, i. 164
Jolly-timber'd, *finely-built*, vii. 145
Jouissance, *joy*, vii. 192, 493
Joust, i. 74
Joyen, *to rejoice*, i. 249
Joying, *rejoicing, joy*, ii. 297, 320
Jug, *a strumpet*, iv. 183; *mistress*, vi. 511; viii. 409; *term of endearment*, xii. 115
Jumbler, *a strumpet*, x. 111
Juments, *beasts of burden*, xii. 234
Jump, *exactly*, iv. 366; *to agree*, viii. 430; x. 184; *to eke*, xiii. 63
Jump'd, *agreed*, xiv. 248
Justicer, *a judge*, xiii. 462
Jut, *a jostle*, iii. 102
Jutty, *to jut*, iv. 121

Keep, *care*, i. 202; ii. 233
Keep touch, x. 9
Keisar, *emperor*, ix. 202
Kembeth, *combs*, xii. 242
Kembs, *combs*, xii. 463
Kempt, *combed*, i. 376
Ken, *to show, teach*, i. 273; *to thank*, iv. 61
Kercher, *covering for head*, xiv. 464
Kerchief, *a covering for the head*, i. 429
Kern, *an Irish soldier*, iv. 308
Kest, *cast*, i. 179
Kestrel, *a hawk*, ix. 111
Kex, *hemlock*, ix. 534; xiv. 309
Kickshaws (*for* bashaw), xii. 280
Kind, *nature*, i. 113; iii. 312; *natural*, i. 245; "of kind," *naturally*, i. 246; iii. 210
Kit, *a musical instrument*, i. 43
Kitling, *a kitten*, x. 349
Kit-strings, *strings for the kit or fiddle*, xii. 220
Knack, *trick*, ii. 214
Knacking (to be), iv. 121
Knacks, *knick-knacks*, i. 349; viii. 157
Knap, *blow*, i. 422; *to knock*, i. 428
Kneve, *knave*, viii. 122
Knit, *bound, united*, xi. 473; xiv. 153
Knocked bread, i. 405
Knotted (*read* notted), *cut*, ii. 135
Knottle, *knotted*, iii. 333
Knowing, *knowledge*, i. 249
Knowledge, *to acknowledge*, i. 293
Knowlition, *knowledge*, i. 89
Ko, *quote*, iii. 103
Kock's nowns, *God's wounds* (*an oath*), iii. 79
Koss, *kiss*, iii. 75

Lack, *like*, vi. 71
Lacquey, *to act as lacquey*, xiv. 111
Lad, *led*, i. 160
Lade, *load*, i. 31
Ladyfied, *made a lady*, x. 321

Digitized by Google

Ladyware, *genital organs*, v. 345
Laft, *left*, i. 28, 68
Lag, *late*, ii. 252; *to linger*, x. 48
Laken (=lady-kin), *the Virgin Mary*, x. 497
Lamback, *to beat*, vi. 204
Lambeak *or* Lamback, *to strike*, viii. 305
Lambswool, ix. 424
Lanard, ix. 379
Lance presado, *the leader of a half file of soldiers*, xiv. 328
Landskip, *landscape*, x. 178; xiv. 300; xv. 116
Lang, *long*, vi. 73
Lap-clap, *to embrace*, ix. 252
Larum, *alarm*, iv. 320; xiii. 110
Lash, *snare*, vi. 254
Lass, *less*, i. 256
Late, *lately*, i. 6
Lathe, *barn*, xii. 507
Latten, *brass*, ix. 393
Laud, *to praise*, i. 131; *praise*, i. 54, 397
Laundress, *a woman employed at an Inns-of-Court*, x. 275; xiii. 231
Lave, *long*, ix. 304
Laverock, *lark*, i. 425
Lavolta, *a dance*, ix. 408.
Lavoltoe, xiv. 111
Lawless, *illegal*, ix. 74
Lay (=waylay), xiii. 253
Layk, *like*, vi. 76
Lay out, "*put out to interest*," xi. 363
Laytell, *little*, vi. 72
Lazars, *lepers*, viii. 70
Lead, *a caldron*, iii. 231
Leady, *heavy*, i. 85
Lease, *a leash*, iii. 355
Leech, *surgeon*, i. 168; *physician*, x. 115
Lefe, *dear*, xii. 288
Leg, *a bow*, xiv. 443.
Leger wafers, xii. 334
Leman, *a sweetheart, concubine, mistress*, ii. 20; iv. 143; *note*, xiii. 497; xiv. 296
Leme, *gleam*, i. 64
Lemen, *laymen*, vi. 71
Lenger, *longer*, i. 29, 103
Lenity, *softness*, v. 388
Lese, *to lose*, i. 74, 83, 156; iv. 194
Lesing, *leasing, falsehood*, i. 119; i. 159
Lest, *list*, i. 247; *please*, i. 80
Let, *hindrance*, i. 347, 351; x. 150; *to hinder*, ii. 7, 387; iv. 93; *to refrain*, i. 252
Leteth, *let* (*imperative*), xii. 286
Leve, *dear*, iii. 208
Lewd, *foolish*, xiii. 442; *ignorant*, i. 35, 36
Lewdness, *ignorance*, i. 270; iv. 121
Lewt, *a lout*, i. 255
Libbard, *leopard*, xiv. 325
Libbards, *leopards*, xiii. 282
Liberal, *licentious*, v. 136
Liberally, *licentiously*, xi. 194
Lie, *urine*, x. 340
Lie at ward, *a fencing term*, viii. 149
Lief, *soon*, i. 20
Lieger, vii. 417; *ledger, resident*, xiii. 271
Liever, *sooner*, i. 35
Life-vein, *life's vein*, i. 152
Lift, *a term used in card playing*, x. 186
Lig, *to lie*, xii. 257
Ligg, *lie*, xii. 507
Light. *easy*. i. 25; "by this light," *an oath*, i. 33; x. 296
Light-a-love, vii. 296
Light-bolt, *lightning-bolt*, xi. 312

Digitized by Google

Lighted, *lightened*, i. 126
Light-fingered, ii. 167
Lightly, *easily*, vii. 304
Lightness, *levity*, ii. 318
Light-skirt, *a woman of light reputation*, ix. 127
Like, *to please*, i. 31. 137; ii. 213; xi. 225, 499; *likely*, i. 88
Likelihood, *likeness*, i. 55; *probability*, xi. 15
Liking, *pleasure*, i. 80, 247, 269; xii. 378
Lilburn, *a term of abuse*, iii. 103
Limber, *pliant*, x. 363
Lim'd, *snared*, v. 80
Lin, *to cease*, ii. 116; viii. 447
Lind, *to lend*, i. 255
Lindabrides, *a strumpet; note*, xiv. 478
Lines, *lineages*, xii. 251
Linger, *to prolong* (?), viii. 440
Linstock, *a stick with a match at the end, used by gunners*, xiv. 141
Lip-clip, *to kiss*, ix. 252
Liripup, *art, craft*, iii. 322
List, *pleasure*, i. 24, 29; *please*, i. 79; xi. 487; *pleases*, iv. 15
Lither, *bad*, iii. 250; vii. 418
Livelihood, *liveliness* (?), x. 185
Lively, *lifelike*, xi. 514
Livery, *to sue, to recover property*, ix. 482
Living-giver, *a master*, xi. 465
Loadam (= lodam), *a game at cards*, ix. 101
Loading, *laden*, xiv. 248
Loathful, *hateful, distasteful*, i. 111
Loave-ears, *long-ears*, xiv. 321
Lob, *term of contempt*, ii. 221; *fool, lout*, iii. 272; viii. 443
Lobbish, *blockish*, iii. 268
Lobcock, *a fool*, iv. 75; *foolish*, ix. 241
Lobcocked, ix. 288
Lob's pound, *a snare*, xv. 32
Lock and hasp, ii. 338
Lode, *leading*, i. 50
Lode star, *leading star*, v. 103
Loggerhead, *a blockhead*, x. 478
Loggerheaded, *blockhead*, vi. 177
Logheaded, *blockhead*, iv. 65
Lombard, *banker*, i. 266
Long, *to belong*, i. 255; *a long time*, i. 149
Long coat, *a nurse*, xi. 464
Long of, *on account of*, ii. 300
Loose, *purge*, xv. 316
Loover, *opening in the roof, skylight*, viii. 320; xi. 105
Lope, *to run*, vi. 70
Lore, *learning*, i. 60; *lost*, i. 413; *to teach*, xii. 241
Lorn, *lost*, i. 271
Losel, *a loose, worthless fellow*, iii. 128, 218; *good for nothing*, viii. 341
Loselled, *losel, worthless* (?), ix. 288
Losopher, *a philosopher*, i. 40
Losophy, *philosophy*, i. 42
Lout, iii. 103
Loud and still, *openly and secretly*, i. 269
Lough, *to low*, xii. 507
Lour, *to look sad*, ii. 290
Louse (to), *to pick off lice*, viii. 69
Louser, *a catcher of lice*, iv. 118
Lousious, *luscious*, iv. 73
Loute, *to bow*, xii. 507.
Louted, *treated as a loutish stupid*, iii. 97
Loutishness, *stupidity*, iii. 117
Love-longing, i. 247
Love's dance, i. 156
Loving, *love*, iv. 15
Low, *to allow*, iii. 136
Loy, St, ii. 117
Lozel, *a worthless fellow*, vii. 155

Digitized by Google

Lub, *love*, iii. 67
Lug, *to pull, drag by the ear*, i. 231 ; ix. 304
Lugs, *the ears*, ix. 215
Luke, *look*, vi. 73
Lull, *to seize by the ear* (?), ii. 211
Lulling, iv. 120
Lumperdy-clumperdy, iii. 92
Lumpish, *dull*, xii. 212
Lungis, *a lubber*, viii. 53
Lurden, *a term of reproach*, i. 76; *a lout*, ix. 289
Lusk, *sluggard*, ix. 462
Luskish, *slow*, viii. 370
Lust, *to please*, i. 292 ; iii. 102 ; *to desire*, ii. 119
Lusty, *pleasant*, i. 48
Luxur, *a lecher*, x. 8
Lycand, *pleasing*, xii. 254
Lytherly, *bad*, xii. 241

MACULATE, *to spot, soil*, i. 225
Mad, *to madden*, x. 169
Madding, *mad*, v. 185
Maddle-coddle, *foolish*, vi. 391
Made, "we're made," = *our fortunes are made*, xii. 211
Magnifico, *a grandee*, xi. 453
Maids, *thornbacks*, xii. 113
Mail, *wallet*, vi. 511
Maim'd, *wounded*, v. 13
Maintain, *to encourage*, iii. 155
Maintenance, *servitude*, xi. 468
Make ready, *to dress*, xiii. 489
Make, *mate*, iii. 24
Maked, *matched*, i. 252
Maker, *poet*, ii. 112
Making, *mating*, xi. 144
Malcontent, *discontented*, xiv. 107
Malcontented, *discontented*, x. 162
Malecotoon, *peach*, xii. 236
Malison, *curse*, iii. 181
Malkin, *a term of contempt*, iii. 65
Malvoisin, *Malmsey wine*, i. 24
Manchet, *white bread*, viii. 160
Manhood, *manliness*, xi. 459
Mankin, *manly, furious*, ii. 210
Mankind, *manlike*, vii. 319; *ferocious*, viii. 439
Mankine, *masculine*, iii. 146
Mannerly, *well-behaved*, vii. 162
Man-of-war, *constable*, i. 185
Manship, vii. 417
Mantle-tree, *mantlepiece*, ix. 222
Marchpane, ix. 424; xi. 540; *note*, xii. 235
Mare, *nightmare*, "let pass away the mare," i. 57; "two-legged mare," *the gallows*, iii. 335
Margarites, *pearls*, xii. 475
Margent, *margin*, ix. 169
Marish, *marshy*, x. 161
Marl, *marvel*, x. 504
Marl'd, *marvelled*, xi. 284
Marmoset, *monkey*, xiii. 298; xiv. 285
Marry, *the Virgin Mary*, xi. 461
Marry a God, *marry, the Virgin Mary*, vii. 477
Marshal (of the revels), i. 45
Martialist, v. 9 ; *a soldier*, viii. 440 ; xiii. 462
Martyrdom, *suffering*, x. 149
Marybone, *marrow-bone*, ii. 79
Masculine, *male*, xi. 452
Maship, *mastership*, i. 367 ; iii. 65
Massiness, *massiveness*, x. 131
Massy, *massive*, ii. 329 ; xi. 339
Masterdom, *power*, viii. 250
Mastlin, *mixed metal*, ix. 411
Match, *rival*, ii. 349
Maternal (tongue), *mother (tongue)* i. 7
Matron, *an old crone*, i. 72
Matt, *the mass*, iii. 146
Maugre, *in spite of*, xi. 316 ; xii. 288
Maukins, *note*, viii. 258
Maumet, *puppet*, x. 167
Mavors, *Mars*, xii. 451

Digitized by Google

Maw, *term used in card-playing*, ix. 387; x. 539
Mayhap, *perhaps*, i. 66
Maze, *to amaze*, iv. 65
Mazzard, *pate*, xi. 47
Me, *expletive*, x. 280; xi. 102
Meacock, *a milksop*, iv. 118
Meads, *meadows*, vii. 295
Mean, "a mean," i. 9; "the mean season," *meantime*, i. 48; "in a mean," *of a medium size, moderate*, i. 62; v. 285, 293
Measure, *moderation*, i. 258
Meaze, *form of a hare*, ix. 44
Meditation, *mediation*, xv. 19
Meed, *reward*, iii. 231
Meet with, *to serve out*, vii. 462; *to be even with*, xiii. 62
Megrim, *megrims*, i. 160; xv. 30
Melancholy, *madness*, i. 84
Melist, *it pleases me*, i. 154
Mell, *to meddle*, iii. 248
Mending, *amendment*, i. 153
Mends, *amends*, v. 299
Merce, *to amerce*, ix. 487
Merchant, *person, fellow, chap*, i. 69; ii. 255, 383; xi. 28; iii. 8; *rogue*, xii. 165
Merchantman, *merchant*, xii. 158
Mercurials, xi. 301
Mere, *pure, perfect*, vii. 270
Merely, *quite, absolutely*, x. 204
Merk, *to darken*, xii. 507
Meseem, *meseems*, vi. 62
Meseraics, xi. 303
Met, *dreamt*, xii. 242
Metamorphose, *to change, transmute*, xi. 488
Mete, *to measure out a reward*, viii. 304; *to measure*, ix. 557; *measured*, x. 37
Metely, *fitly, meetly*, i. 48
Meteoroscope, xi. 344
Metheglin, xiii. 32
Methink, *methinks*, i. 9
Mettles, vii. 146
Meve, *to move*, i. 244; iv. 98
Mew'd, *confined, restrained*, i. 60
Meyne, *company*, i. 262
Mich, *much*, i. 22
Micher, *a truant, flincher*, i. 164; viii. 57; ix. 550; x. 332
Mickle, *great, much*, i. 249; iii. 86; viii. 151; xii. 507
Middes, *midst*, i. 16
Middle-earth, i. 250
Midsummer-ale, *note*, xiii. 503
Mightly, *mightily*, i. 248
Milksop, vii. 127
Mincing, ii. 290
Mind, *to intend*, iii. 45
Minion, *favourite, darling*, ii. 169; iii. 159; xi. 19; xiv. 100; *servant*, vii. 293
Minionly, *mincingly*, ii. 346
Minish, *to diminish*, i. 141, 417
Minister, *to administer*, xii. 104
Mischief, *misfortune*, i. 23, 234
Mischievous, *unfortunate*, i. 188
Misdeem, *to misjudge*, ii. 119
Miser, *wretched*, ii. 252; *a wretch*, vii. 62; viii. 343
Miserable, *compassionate*, vi. 360
Mislike, *to dislike*, i. 386; ii. 345; xi. 530; *to displease*, iv. 35
Miss, *to be wanting to*, i. 90; *to lose*, i. 215; *to fail*, ii. 225; iv. 54; *fault, sin*, i. 147, 186, 192
Mister, *to serve, be needful*, i. 264; *to need*, i. 347
Misterm, vii. 493
Mistress, *note*, xii. 120, 165
Mistrist, *mistrust*, i. 203
Misuse, *to abuse, commit adultery*, i. 308
Misusing, *abuse*, i. 193
Mit (= mist?), i. 356
Mo, *more*, i. 7, 246
Mockage, *mockery*, iii. 135
Mocking-stock, vii. 176
Model, *plan*, x. 66

Digitized by Google

Modesty, *moderation*, x. 475
Moiling, *toiling*, xiii. 7
Moilingest, *most toilsome*, x. 259
Molt, *molten*, x. 335
Moly, *note*, viii. 228
Mome, *a fool*, ii. 315
Moneth, *month*, ii. 179
Monethmayndes, (= month-minds), *monthly remembrances of the departed*, vi. 72
Moneths, *months*, iii. 183
Monition, *admonition*, i. 132; ii. 270
Moon, *frenzy*, x. 50
Moot, *talk*, iv. 258; *to plead*, ix. 180
Mooting, *discussion*, ix. 183
Mooting night, *note*, xii. 276
Moped, *moping*, xv. 521
Mopish, *foolish*, ii. 255
Moppet, *a term of endearment*, viii. 308
Moral, "a moral play," i. 99
More, *greater*, x. 118
Morglay, *note*, xii. 286
Morion, *helmet*, xii. 488
Morn, "to-morn," *to-morrow*, ii. 283
Mort, *a loose woman*, viii. 156
Most, *greatest*, i. 113
Most-part, *ad. mostly*, i. 30
Mot, *may*, i, 256, 257; xv. 418
Mote, *may*, ii. 255; xii. 241
Motion, *movement*, x. 119; *puppet-show*, x. 135; *puppet*, *note*, xiii. 420; xiv. 412
Motley, *a fool*, x. 525
Motte, *witty saying*, xi. 401
Mought, *might*, i. 249; iv. 306
Mounseer, *a Frenchman*, xiv. 32
Mount Saint, *game of cards*, x. 186
Moustachio, xi. 76
Movings, *motions*, i. 11
Mow, *to make grimaces*, i. 246; *to mock*, viii. 49
Mowing, *making grimaces*, ii. 211; *mouthing*, x. 493
Mowt, *might*, vi. 72
Much, *very*, i. 379
Muck, *riches*, xiii. 7
Mued, *moulted*, xi. 360
Muliebrity, *womanhood*, v. 345
Mum, *silent*, i. 74; *silence*, iii. 352
Mumchance, *note*, xii. 120
Mummery, *masking*, v. 300
Mun, *must*, iii. 159; vi. 74; xv. 143
Mundungo, *tobacco*, xiv. 291
Murlons, *merlins* (*hawks*), iv. 70
Murnival, *a term used in card-playing*, xi. 217
Murrain, *plague*, *curse*, xiii. 160; *plaguy*, *very*, xv. 144
Murrainer, *worse* (?), iii. 221
Murrainly, *much*, *exceedingly*, iii. 213
Murrion, *murrain*, iii. 180
Muscadine (wine), ix. 526
Muskadine, *muscadel*, xi. 491
Muss, *a term of abuse*, ix. 367
Musselden, *muscadine*, iv. 73
Mussers, *hiding-places*, x. 294
Mutin, *mutinous*, iv. 258
Muzzling, iv. 120
Mynock (myn hock), vi. 242

NAKED, *without weapons*, xiv. 334; *note*, 511
Nale, "at nale," (=atten ale) *at the ale-house*, i. 166; *ale*, vi. 73
Napery, *napkin*, xv. 159
Nat, *not*, iii. 177
Natural, *an idiot*, xi. 453
Naturate, *natural*, i. 11
Naturing, *bringing into birth*, i. 11
Naunt, *aunt*, *whore*, xiii. 161
Nawl, *an awl*, iii. 210
Nay, *denial*, iii. 38
Ne, *nor*, i. 226

Digitized by Google

Near, *nearer*, ii. 125; iii. 64; xi. 46
Nearhand, *nearly*, iii. 31
Neat, *finely-dressed*, vii. 286
Neck verse, i. 159
Neele, *needle*, iii. 180
Neighbourhood, *neighbourliness*, xii. 67
Nem, *take*, xii. 287
Nempd, *named*, xii. 242
Nessary, *necessary*, i. 253
Nething, *nothing*, vi. 72
New, "a new day," i. 86
New-joint (to), ix. 556
Next, *nearest*, i. 27; ix. 441; *nearest of kin*, x. 196; *the next heir*, x. 31
Nice, i. 116; *foolish*, i. 235; *tender, delicate*, ii. 272; *coy*, xi. 531
Nicely, *quietly*, iii. 232
Niches in the wall, *note*, xv. 216
Nick (of time), xii. 390; xv. 47, 60; *a term used in dicing*, ii. 171
Nicking, *using a beer-can with a raised bottom, hence giving short measure*, xii. 334
Nidiot, *idiot*, ii. 303
Nifling, *trifling*, xiv. 317
Niggers (=snigs), *an oath*, xiii. 6, 22
Niggersnoggers, *an oath*, xiii. 5, 10
Niggler, *sporter*, xiv. 313
Nill, *will not*, vi. 475; vii. 108; x. 474
Nim, *to take*, xiv. 350
Nimmer, *thief*, xi. 370
Ningle, *a term of endearment*, xiv. 297
Nipitaty, *note*, viii. 60
Nippitate, *note*, vii. 445
Niset, *a term of endearment*, ii. 22
Niters, *note*, xi. 430
Nitty-napry, xiv. 344
Nod, *noddy*, ii. 130
Noddlehead, x. 328
Noddy, *nobody*, iv. 17
Noiling, *noise* (?), iii. 230
Noise, *band*, x. 263; *note*, xii. 231
Noisome, *poisonous, noxious*, xii. 192
Nol, *pate*, vi. 253
Noly, ii. 171
Norice, *nurse*, xii. 241
Nosthrils, *nostrils*, i. 376
Not, *nought*, i. 321
Notable, *well-known*, i. 69
Note, *mark*, ix. 427
Notes, *signs*, vii. 187
Nother, *nor*, i. 22; *neither*, i. 200, 368
Nothing, *not at all*, i. 7
Noughtiness, *badness*, ii. 317
Noughty, *naughty, bad*, ii. 307
Nouns, *zounds*, x. 260
Nowl, *an owl*, ii. 113
Noy, *annoy*, ii. 109
Nuddled, *note*, xiv. 62
Nup, *a fool*, ix. 367
Nupson, *a fool*, ix. 458
Nurslings, ix. 453
Nusled, *nurtured*, iii. 44

Obediency, *obedience*, xi. 486
Obeisance, *obedience*, i. 59
Obeying, *obedient to*, xii. 570
Obstination, *obstinacy*, i. 164
Occident, *west*, i. 18
Occupier, *a merchant*, x. 308
Occupy, *cohabit*, xii. 137
Occurents, *occurrences*, xi. 475
Odsnigs, *an oath*, xii. 249
Of, *by, concerning*, ii. 274
Officious, *diligent in office*, ii. 339
Oft among, *often, at intervals*, i. 7
Ointment, *unction*, i. 132
Old, *much*, ix. 381
Oliv'd, *note*, xii. 239

Digitized by Google

Olivet, xiv. 344
On, *of*, i. 59
On-begging, *a-begging*, vi. 399
One, "at one," *friendly*, vi. 57; "in one," *at one*, vi. 148
One's, *some one's*, xi. 443
On's, *of his*, xi. 453
Oon, *one*, xv. 424
Ooze, *mud*, xii. 492
Ope, *open*, x. 116; xiii. 31
Open-arses, *medlars*, xiv. 414
Opinionated, *thought of*, viii. 139
Opportuneful, *opportune*, iv. 374
Opunctly, *opportunely*, xi. 264
Oration, *prayer*, i. 409
Orbicularly, *around, circularly*, i. 14.
Ordinately, *in order*, ii. 217
Orient, i. 296; *east*, i. 18
Orient pearl, xi. 489
Orison, *vow*, vii. 431; *prayer*, i. 89; x. 121
Other, *or*, i. 409
Otherwhere, *elsewhere*, iii. 266
Outcoming, *a coming out*, i. 255
Outcry, *auction*, xiv. 445
Outgnawn, *gnawed out*, iv. 338
Outher, *either*, i. 202
Outlandish, *foreign*, xiii. 43; v. 262
Outnick, xv. 60
Outrased, *rased, scraped out*, i. 293
Outsearch, i. 102
Outsep, *except*, vi. 392
Outvoice, xi. 86
Outward, *outer*, i. 484
Overbarring, viii. 77
Overblown, *blown over*, xi. 74
Overcrow, *to overcome, subdue*, viii. 452
Overlove, vii. 23
Overpeer, ix. 404
Oversayne, *to oversay*, i. 33
Overslip, *to omit*, xi. 490
Over-year, xi. 401
Owe, *own*, i. 202; v. 232; ix. 471; xi. 124

PACIFICAL, *peacemaking*, xii. 270
Pagend, *pageant*, xv. 423
Paicture, *picture*, vi. 74
Pain, *pains*, i. 7; *to take pains*, iv. 33
Paining, *suffering*, i. 81
Pair, *pack*, vi. 421
Paishe, *passion*, iii. 130
Pall, *robe*, vii. 106
Palliardize, *dirtiness*, viii. 135
Palmer, *the rod, a schoolmaster* (!), ii. 275
Palter, *to mumble, speak indistinctly or shufflingly*, iii. 205
Paltry, *rubbish*, viii. 137
Palyes, *palace*, xii. 253
Pander, *panderer*, viii. 148; xi. 520, 546
Panderise, *to act as panderer*, x. 294
Pantable, *pantofle, slipper*, iv. 67; vii. 409; xv. 105
Pantler, *the keeper of a pantry*, iv. 491
Parachitoe, xiv. 289
Parages, *rank, lineage*, iii. 66
Parator, *apparitor*, ix. 307
Parbreak, *to vomit*, viii. 462
Parcel, *part*, x. 275
Parcels, *parts*, xii. 62
Pardy, } *by God*, i. 111, 154; ii.
Perde, } 221
Paril, *peril*, vi. 74
Parley, *to speak*, ix. 477
Parliament (=parament), *apparel*, vi. 312
Parlous, *perilous, great*, x. 77
Parlously, *perilously*, xiv. 395
Part, *to share*, i. 243
Partaker, *a sharer*, vii. 255
Parted, *shared*, i. 67
Partiner, *partner*, i. 126
Partlet, *a ruff*, i. 350

Digitized by Google

Parts, *parties*, iii. 248; *conflicts*, vii. 401
Party, *person*, x. 123
Pash'd, *crushed*, viii. 314
Pass, *to care*, ii. 47; *care*, ii. 171, 301; *to surpass*, i. 408; *exalt*, vii. 352; *to exceed* (*belief*), ix. 364; *passage*, xi. 375
Passable (*pun on*), xii. 220
Passage, *game at dice*, i. 266; xi. 431; *note*, xii. 120
Passages, *love-passages*, x. 194; *what has passed between two persons*, xi. 14, 33.
Passes, *surpasses*, xiii. 106
Passing measures, *a slow dance*, ix. 408
Passion, *suffering*, i. 274; *a love sonnet*, xi. 327
Passion-a-me, *an oath*, xi. 522
Pastance, *pastime*, i. 23; iii. 88
Patch, *a fool*, iii. 186; iv. 220; x. 493; xi. 140
Patter, *to talk*, i. 181
Paunch, *to stab*, ix. 451
Paunch'd, *wounded in the belly*, v. 26
Paxes, *pax-breads* (?), iii. 11
Pay, *pleasure*, iv. 71
Paynim, *pagan*, xii. 229
Peach, *to impeach, accuse*, i. 157
Peaching, *blabbing*, xv. 29
Peak, *to be peaky*, ii. 212
Peaking, *prying* (?), vii. 437
Peakish mome, ii. 208
Pearl, *note*, xiv. 424
Pearmains, xii. 328
Pease (a), iv. 224
Peat, *pet*, vii. 475; ix. 369; xiv. 321
Peccant, *sinner*, xiv. 355
Pectorals, xiv. 321
Peedee, *note*, xiv. 289
Peel, Pele, *a baker's rod or shovel*, i. 424
Peer, *equal*, i. 26; *to look at*, iv. 353
Peevish, *foolish*, ii. 304
Pelf, *riches, wealth*, xi. 466
Pelican, xii. 174
Pelt, *a blow* (?), ii. 391
Peltingly, *paltry* (?), viii. 350
Pelts, *shields*, xii. 477
Penitency, *penitence*, xi. 458
Pennyfather, *miser*, vii. 300; xi. 468
Pented, *painted*, vi. 74
Peppercorn, *note*, xii. 280
Peradventure, *hazard*, ix. 17
Percase, *perhaps*, i. 67; ii. 109
Perdue, *a soldier on a forlorn hope*, xii. 235
Perdurable, *everlasting*, i. 64
Perdy, *by God*, i. 43
Perfectness, *perfection*, vii. 302
Perfit, *perfect*, i. 7, 61, 353
Perfitly, *perfectly*, i. 383
Perilsome, *perilous*, viii. 46
Period, *end*, x. 170; xi. 472, 563
Perk, *to perch*, iv. 124
Perpend, iv. 167, 236
Perry, *a squall*, vii. 482
Personable, iii. 32
Personally, *in person*, i. 28
Perspicil, *a telescope*, xi. 311
Persuase, *persuasion*, vii. 376
Perturb, *to disturb*, i. 217
Perturbation, *disturbance*, xi. 486
Pervart, *perverted*, ii. 58
Pervert, *perverted*, i. 200
Pes, *haunch*, iii. 181
Pesle-mesle, *pell-mell*, v. 246
Pestens, *pestilent, bad*, iv. 82
Pester, iii. 32
Pestilent, *troublesome*, iii. 11
Pestilently, *badly*, iii. 271
Pestle, *gammon, leg*, iv. 82
Petitory, *petitionary*, ix. 341

Digitized by Google

Pettifogger, *attorney*, vi. 281; ix. 264
Pettifogging, *cheating*, ix. 238
Pettyfogging (groom), *a knavish lawyer*, x. 356
Phalange, *phalanx*, ix. 362
Pheer (=feer), *companion*, iv. 263; xiii. 425
Philosophy (natural), i. 6
Philtres, xiv. 520
Phlegm, "easy phlegm," xv. 199
Phlegmy, xv. 117
Physnomy, *face, note*, xiv. 253, 320
Pick, *sharp point*, vii. 318
Pickadel, *part of a doublet*, xi. 17
Picking, *pilfering*, vii. 214
Pickle, *plight*, viii. 364
Pick-thank, xv. 29
Piddling, *petty*, xiii. 143, 152
Piece, *a cup*, i. 178; *a vessel*, ii. 232; *creature*, xiii. 163; *coin*, xiii. 8; *woman*, xiv. 318, 479
Pigeon-holes, *note*, xii. 101, 120
Pight, *placed*, i. 249; ix. 176; *pitched*, i. 403; *determined*, ii. 47
Pignie, *a term of endearment*, ii. 151; xiii. 142
Pigsny, *a term of endearment*, iii. 80; ix. 547
Pilfries, *pilferings*, xi. 303
Pill and poll, *to pilfer and to plunder*, x. 501
Pilling and polling, vi. 49
Pin, "a merry pin," i. 45
Pinch, "at a pinch," *in need*, xii. 365
Pinchback, viii. 76
Pinchgut, *miser*, xiv. 291
Pinder, *pinner*, viii. 232
Pinion, *term used in dicing*, ii. 35
Pink, *to gamble* (?), ii. 35
Pinkany, *a term of endearment*, vii. 324
Pink'd, *peep'd*, xi. 117
Pinken eyes, *small eyes* (?), xi. 71, 72
Pinky eyne, *small eyes*, vii. 167
Pins, *legs*, i. 181
Pioner, *pioneer*, x. 160
Pishes, *cries of pish*, xii. 298
Pissing, "a pissing while," iii. 224
Pistoles, *coins*, xv. 131
Pistolets, *pistols*, xiv. 164; *coins*, xv. 126
Piteousness, *pity*, x. 189
Pithily, *strongly*, i. 250
Pitiful, *merciful, compassionate*, i. 81, 288
Pittance, *a morsel of bread*, ii. 242
Plain, *to complain*, vi. 414
Plaint, *complaint*, vii. 83; x. 189
Planch, *to patch all round*, iii. 176
Plantain, xv. 143
Plantation, *colony*, xi. 467; xv. 334
Plantations, *colonies*, xiii. 274
Plat, *place*, ii. 297; iii. 196
Platform, *note*, xiii. 336
Play fast and loose, xiii. 174
Pleasance, *pleasure*, i. 56
Pleasaunce, *pleasure*, xii. 240
Pleasure, *to give pleasure*, vi. 150; *to humour*, vi. 291; *to please*, viii. 299; x. 134
Plenal, *full*, xiii. 153, 156
Plete, *to plead*, i. 262
Plight, *vow* (?), i. 82; *to pledge*, i. 257; *a pledge, promise*, iv. 313; *sort, company*, iii. 173
Plotform, *plot, platform, note*, viii. 423
Pluck, *to drag, pull*, i. 72; xiii. 285

Digitized by Google

Pluck'd, *pulled*, xi. 282
Pluck up heart, iv. 245
Plumb, *plummet*, x. 199
Pocky, xi. 463
Podstick (= pot-stick), *a staff*, ii. 114
Poetise, *to make poetry*, xi. 451
Poignant (sword), *sharp*, ii. 250
Poignet, *a little bodkin*, i. 351
Poinard, *poignard*, ix. 117
Point-device, *with great exactness*, i. 23, 44
Pointed, *appointed*, i. 33
Pointment, *appointment*, i. 33, 37
Points (untrussed), ix. 41
Poise, *weight*, x. 119, 146, 190
Poking-stick, *note*, viii. 161
Politicly, *craftily*, xii. 52
Poll, *to pill, rob*, i. 199
Poll'd, *having the hair cut*, iv. 81, 82
Polldennery, *extortion*, ix. 229
Polling, *plunder*, iii. 118
Polt, *lame*, viii. 91
Pomander, *balls of perfume*, ix. 419
Ponderosity, *heaviness*, i. 14
Poopnoddy, *a fool*, ix. 242
Popinjay, *a parrot*, ii. 117
Porkling, *a pig*, viii. 369
Port, *manner, bearing, behaviour, courage*, ii. 248, 335; vii. 293
Portace, Portass, Portesse, } *prayer-book, breviary*, iii. 24; vii. 464; viii. 393
Portraiture, *painting*, i. 62
Pose, *to question*, vii. 291
Poser, *examiner*, ix. 139
Posnets, *little pots*, xii. 328
Possems, *possets*, xiv. 296
Possess, *to inform*, ix. 483
Possessed, *acquainted, informed*, xiii. 144, 175
Possing, *pushing*, iii. 183
Post, *term used in dicing*, ii. 35; *haste*, iv. 18, 19; viii. 399; *to haste*, v. 11; vii. 203; *messenger*, viii. 154; x. 488; "to ride post," ix. 102
Posting, *hastening*, xi. 488
Posts, *supports* (?), i. 75
Pot (go to), ii. 252; vi. 66; vii. 302
Potgun, *popgun*, iii. 141
Pothecary, *apothecary*, i. 178; i. 346
Potluck, vii. 87
Pottle, *a half-gallon*, xi. 136, 195
Poult-foot, *club-foot*, xiv. 308
Pouped, *deceived*, iii. 194
Powdered, *salted*, viii. 320
Power, *force*, iv. 260
Poynado, *poignard*, xii. 524
Poynant, *sharp*, xii. 286
Practic, *practical*, xi. 98
Practice, *treason, plotting, plot*, vii. 451; xiv. 128, 149
Præstigiatory, *juggling*, xi. 324
Praise-worth, *praiseworthy*, vii. 73
Prancome, *a trick*, iii. 177
Prank, *trick*, ii. 117, 230; iii. 198; *to adorn*, ix. 231
Pranker, *finer*, ix. 431
Prater, *a chatterer*, ii. 255
Pratty, *pretty*, viii. 23
Praty, *pretty*, i. 71, 165
Preachment, *a declaration*, ix. 307
Preacquainted, xiii. 487
Prease, *crowd*, vii. 53
Prebends, i. 226
Precious thief, ii. 143
Preciousness, xv. 103
Predication, *preaching*, i. 235
Predycacyon, *preaching*, xv. 426
Prefe, *proof*, i. 179
Pregnant, *full of wit*, xii. 111
Pregnant wits, i. 7

Digitized by Google

Prenticehood, *apprenticeship*, iii. 310
Presence, *company*, i. 35
Presently, *at once*, xi. 82
Presentment, *representation*, xiv. 280, 281
Prest, *ready*, i. 82, 248
Prester-Johnian, xii. 229
Prestly, *readily*, i. 253
Pretence, *intention*, iii. 307
Pretend, *to intend*, vii. 178; ix. 283
Pretended, *intended*, iii. 13
Pretty man, i. 19
Prevent, *to forestall, anticipate*, ii. 250; vii. 233; xii. 101; *go before*, xiii. 473
Prey, *prize*, ii. 360
Price, *prize, renown*, iii. 28
Prick, *to ride*, iv. 92
Prick-eared cur, i. 87
Prick-eared song, i. 48
Pricked, *dressed*, i. 244
Pricket, *a young buck*, ix. 149
Prickle, *prick*, v. 46; *to prick*, xiv. 318
Pricks (on a gall), i. 14
Prick-shafts, xiii. 39
Prick-song, i. 48; xi. 144
Priesthade, *priesthood*, vi. 72
Prime, *spring*, ix. 231
Primero, *term used in card-playing*, ix. 387
Prims, *pretty lasses*, i. 181
Princock, *a dandy*, ii. 170; iv. 308
Princocks, vii. 442
Princox, *coxcomb*, xi. 126; xii. 524
Prinkox, *a fop*, ii. 260
Prink up, iii. 6
Print, *to impress*, ii. 275
Privity, *secresy*, i. 34
Privy council, *secret council*, i. 157
Proface, *note*, viii. 160
Proine, *to prune*, x. 160
Promise is debt, i. 137
Propagation, *conception*, i. 290
Proper, "a proper wench," i. 26; *well-behaved*, i. 426; *own*, viii. 148
Properties, (of a theatre), xiii. 274
Property, (of a stage), *a scene (?)*, viii. 316
Propriety, *property*, xiv. 364
Prospective, *a view*, vii. 269
Provand, *plain, common*, xiv. 385
Prune, *to pick clean, trim*, xi. 361
Pucellage, *maidenhead*, i. 77
Pudder, *pother, disturbance*, xiv. 444
Pudding-time, iii. 319
Pugging, *pulling*, iv. 120
Puisne, *puny*, x. 25
Puissance, *power*, i. 41
Puissant, *powerful*, xiii. 343
Pullen, *poultry*, iii. 239; *chicken*, ix. 491
Pumps, *dancing-shoes*, xv. 360
Puns, *a term of endearment*, i. 405
Punk, *a prostitute*, xiv. 60
Punks, ix. 471
Punto, *note*, xiv. 284
Purchase, *to obtain, get*, viii. 402; *robbery*, xi. 304; *a prize*, xii. 232; xiii. 406
Purchasing, *getting*, xi. 490
Purfled, *trimmed*, ix. 417
Purgation, *cleansing*, i. 213
Purls, *hem or fringe*, xi. 134
Purple, *a disease*, i. 175
Purporting, iv. 173
Purpose (to), *to the purpose*
Purpur, *purple*, i. 252
Pursy, *fat*, viii. 369
Purvey, *to provide*, i. 25
Putting out, *lending money at interest*, xi. 190

Digitized by Google

Pye, ii. 22
Pyketh, *picks*, xii. 242
Pyrdewy, i. 156

Quadragesimal, *lenten*, xii. 268
Quail, *to terrify*, vi. 266; *to languish*, vii. 48, 204
Quaintly, *fitly*, xiii. 158
Quapp, *to quake*, xii. 242
Quarled, *curdled*, x. 84
Quarry, xi. 404; *game*, xiv. 379
Quashed, *smashed*, i. 399
Quass, *to quaff*, iii. 327
Quatorzain, viii. 88
Quaver, *to sing*, ii. 117
Quean, *woman*, ii. 346
Queasy, *sickly*, ii. 112; xiii. 45; xiv. 145
Queck, *blow* (?), ii. 8
Queen's game, ii. 34
Quell, *to kill, subdue*, i. 79
Quere, *quire*, i. 194
Quest, *jury*, ii. 176; *inquiry*, xiv. 343
Quick, *living, alive*, i. 110; v. 248
Quick brimstone, *gunpowder*, i. 179
Quid, *the what*, x. 363
Quiddits, *quibbles*, v. 363
Quiddle, iv. 81
Quillets, *quibbles*, x. 289
Quirister, *chorister*, vii. 470
Quiristers, *choristers*, xv. 416
Quirk, *trick*, xv. 169
Quirks, *quibbles*, x. 125, 292
Quit, *clear, free*, i. 132, 373; *to acquit*, vi. 588
Quite, *to requite*, viii. 175
Quittance (to), x. 200
Quod, *said*, iii. 31
Quod-a, *quoth he*, ii. 81
Quodestow, *saidest thou*, iii. 23
Quoit, "to quoit away" (?), *to quit*, xiv. 208
Quotha, *quoth he*, i. 23

Rabblement, *rabble*, iii. 35
Rabbling, *intriguing*, iv. 143
Raches, *a kind of dog*, ix. 148
Raffraff, *riffraff*, viii. 39
Rage, *fever*, i. 85
Ragman rolles, } *bulls*, i. 234;
Ragman-rolls, } xv. 427
Rakehell, ix. 450
Ramp, *a romp*, iii. 95, 215
Rampallion, *rascal*, xi. 197
Rampier, *rampart*, xii. 521
Rampiers, *ramparts*, iv. 309; x. 326
Ramping, *rampant*, i. 399; *romping*, iii. 94
Rampion (wine), i. 24
Randall, *random*, vii. 360
Rank, *row*, ix. 440
Rapt, *ravished*, x. 358
Rascal, *rabble*, ix. 223
Rascal deer, ix. 148
Rase, *race, channel*, i. 164; *to erase*, xi. 53
Raspice (wine), i. 24
Rather, *sooner*, i. 364; *earlier*, iii. 117
Ratsbane, *poison for rats*, xiv. 79
Rattled, *rated, scolded*, xiii. 112, 138
Raught, *reached, gave*, iv. 302; *reft*, vii. 57
Rave, *to talk madly*, iii. 228
Ray, *array*, iii. 137; *to soil*, viii. 87
Rayed, *soiled*, ix. 241
Razed, *rooted out*, iv. 337
Reach, *aim*, vii. 123; *reaching cough*, xi. 43
Reading, *advice*, xi. 14
Rear, *to raise*, xi. 489
Rear-banquets, xiv. 293
Rearward, *rear*, v. 11
Reason, *right*, ii. 118; "I'll do you reason," *I'll pledge you*, xv. 214

Digitized by Google

Rebato, *an ornament for the neck, a kind of ruff*, x. 122
Recede, *withdrawal*, xiv. 312
Rech, *to care*, ii. 290; *care for*, xii. 288
Rechless, *careless, reckless*, i. 298; iii. 196
Reck, *to care*, i. 188; vii. 68
Recoil, ii. 368
Reconcilement, *reconciliation*, ix. 52; xii. 275; xiii. 463; xv. 89
Record, *to sing*, v. 51; viii. 154
Recorder, *a flageolet*, iii. 87
Recover, *to cause to recover*, viii. 467
Recoverance, *recovery*, i. 237
Recreance, *recreation*, vi. 32
Recreate, *to refresh*, xi. 511
Recure, *to recover*, i. 369; vii. 107; xii. 172; *recovery*, ix. 52
Rede, *reed, counsel*, viii. 405
Reduce, *to bring back*, x. 280; xii. 452
Reed, *to advise*, i. 181; *advice*, ii. 257; vi. 475; vii. 337
Re-edified, *rebuilt*, xii. 200
Reek, *to smoke*, xi. 275
Reels, vii. 303
Refel, *to refute*, viii. 318
Refranes, *proverbs*, xi. 401
Reft, *bereft*, viii. 159
Refuge, *refuse*, vii. 335
Refuse me, *oath*, xiii. 5
Regiment, *rule*, viii. 77; *authority*, xii. 505
Rehearsing, *repeating*, i. 61
Reject, *rejected*, i. 213
Remit, *to condone*, xi. 474
Remorseless, *pitiless*, ix. 504
Ren, *to run*, ii. 253
Renne, *to run*, i. 181, 246, 395; iii. 70
Renowm, *renown*, iv. 338
Rent, i. 199
Rented, *rent, distracted*, ix. 133
Repass, *a term used in legerdemain*, x. 306
Reprefe, *reproof*, i. 120
Resolute, vii. 487
Resolution, i. 12
Resolve, *to make one acquainted with the resolution of another*, vii. 45; *to dissolve*, vii. 46
Resolved, *dissolved*, xi. 62
Respective, *respectful*, vii. 396; x. 342
Respire, *to revive*, xi. 67
Respite, *delay*, i. 103, 106
Rest, *stake*, xi. 363
Rested, *arrested*, i. 178
Resty, *restive*, vi. 32
Retchless, *reckless*, ii. 196
Retire, *retirement*, xiv. 312
Retrograde, *recreant*, x. 95
Reuth, *pity*, xii. 286
Reve, *to rive*, ii. 271
Revel, *sport, fun*, i. 371
Reven, *to rob* (?), i. 252
Revengement, *revenge*, vii. 162
Rever, *robber*, viii. 155
Reverent, *reverential*, xi. 143
Revert, *to turn back*, xi. 476
Rew, *row*, i. 262
Rewarding, *a reward*, i. 63
Rewhayre, *require*, vi. 71
Rheuming, *ruminating* (?), ix. 152
Rib, *wife*, xii. 214
Ribald, *prostitute*, i. 82
Ribble-rabble, *nonsense*, viii. 110
Riches (*singular*), i. 8
Rid, *rode*, v. 343
Ridder, *deliverer*, i. 216
Rig, *strumpet*, iii. 215
Righting, *setting right*, xv. 13; xv. 55
Rightwiseness, *righteousness*, i. 100
Rim, *verge, degree*, x. 22

Digitized by Google

Rine, *rind, cane*, i. 246; ix. 244
Riot, *extravagance*, xii. 101
Ris, *branch (of a tree)*, i. 252
Rise-again, *a rising again*, i. 286
Roarer, *a bully, swaggerer*, xi. 139; xii. 102
Rock, *distaff*, i. 65
Rode, *ridden*, x. 118
Roguery, *wantonness*, xii. 241
Roil, *to roam*, iii. 91
Roister, *roisterer*, iii. 307; viii. 340
Roisters, *roisterers*, iii. 307, 320
Roisting, *roistering*, ii. 300; iii. 348; viii. 360
Romth, *space*, iii. 207
Ront, *runt, a term of abuse* (?), viii. 366
Rood, *cross*, i. 26, 137; ii. 36
Rood-tree, *cross*, i. 253
Roomer, "to cry roomer," *a nautical term*, x. 253
Roper, *ropemaker*, ii. 16
Rosary, *a place where roses grow*, x. 186
Rosy, *blushing*, xi. 306
Rot, *to destroy*, vii. 314
Rotten, *a rat*, iii. 216
Rought (=rout), *to roar, snore*, i. 270
Round, *to whisper*, v. 10; ix. 365, 436; *to encircle*, xiii. 184
Rounding, *whispering*, iii. 78
Roundly, *plainly*, xi. 471
Rouse, *to praise*, iii. 59
Rout, *company*, i. 260; *to assemble*, iii. 137
Rowt, *to appear (in arms?)*, i. 256
Rub, *a term used by bowlers*, xi. 55
Rubbers, "a rubbers," *a game of whist*, vii. 272
Ruddock, *redbreast*, iv. 72
Rudeness, *fault*, i. 294
Ru'd, *pitied*, xii. 370
Ruffle, *to swagger*, i. 402; *to brandish*, i. 407
Ruffler, *a swaggerer*, i. 395
Ruinate, *to destroy, to ruin*, viii. 158, 184; xi. 480; *ruined*, xiv. 103
Rumney (wine), i. 24
Rumple, *to play wantonly*, viii. 389
Runagate, *renegade*, ix. 267
Ruth, *pity*, i. 256; vii. 30; *cruelty*, xiv. 138
Ruthful, *piteous*, v. 127
Rutter, *trooper*, v. 265

Sa, *so*, xii. 507
Sacket, xi. 340
Sacrament, "by God's sacrament," iii. 34
Sacrament (by Gog's), iii. 180
Sacring, *consecrating*, x. 235
Sad, *adj. sober, serious*, i. 20; iv. 137
Sadder, *slower*, iii. 132
Sadly, *seriously*, iii. 73; vii. 39
Sadness, *seriousness, sobriety of conduct*, i. 187; iii. 124
Safe-conduct, i. 375
Safeguard, *to protect*, ix. 565; x. 212
Sained, *blessed*, i. 261
Saker, *a gun*, xi. 325
Salacious, xiv. 344
Sale, *hall*, i. 243; *shall*, vi. 71
Sallet, *a sort of helmet*, i. 396; *sallad*, i. 397
Same, "in same," *together*, i. 245, 247
Sampler, v. 259
Sanctimonious, *holy*, x. 128
Sandry, *sundry*, vi. 74
Sanguine, *ruddy*, iv. 80
Sanguineous, *ruddy*, i. 54
Sans, *without*, i. 26; xi. 104

Digitized by Google

Sate, *to satisfy*, xiv. 337
Saucebox, *an impudent fellow*, x. 509 ; xi. 536 ; xv. 68
Saunce-bell, *a bell rung at different parts of the mass-service*, x. 422
Saunt, *term used in card-playing*, ix. 387
Savour, *smell*, i. 20 ; *to feel. experience*, i. 294; *to smack*, xi. 454
Saw, *proverb*, xiii. 8
Sawl, *soul*, vi. 77
Saws, *sayings*, i. 20
Saxes, *note*, xii. 287
Sayn, *to say*, xii. 242
Saysmatic, *schismatic*, vi. 71
Scab, *term of abuse*, xii. 313
Scale, *ladder*, x. 139
Scaledrake, *sheldrake*, xiv. 290
Scamble, *to scramble*, x. 244
Scant, *scarcely*, i. 78
Scape, *to escape*, i. 163
Scaped, *escaped*, i. 41
Scapethrift, viii. 138
Scarbabe, *a scarecrow*, ix. 268
Scath, *harm*, ii. 249
Scathe, *harm, to hurt, injure*, v. 327 ; viii. 152 ; ix. 21 ; xv. 145
Sciotherical, *belonging to a sundial*, xi. 326
Sconce, *head*, x. 300; xiv. 304
Scot and lot, xii. 251
Scouting (=scutting), *mucking, messing*, ix. 154
Scrag, *a scraggy, lean person*, xiv. 164
Screeking, *screeching*, ix. 341
Screw'd, *shrewd, supercilious* (?), xiv. 351
Screwed, *shrewd*, xiv. 282
Scrine, *a desk*, iii. 141
Scrubbed, *scrubby, shaggy*, xii. 323
Scud, *to run away*, vii. 321 ; viii. 292
Se, *seat*, i. 244
Sear, *a term in falconry*, xi. 341
Search, *try, prove*, i. 199 ; xiii. 389
Secretness, *secresy*, i. 85
Sector, *executor*, iii. 105
Secure, *confident*, v. 167 ; vii. 180
Seducement, *seduction*, xiii. 213
Seech, *to seek*, i. 268 ; i. 406
Seely, *blessed*, i. 267; *happy*, ix. 216
Seeming, *apparent*, xi. 457
Seeth, *to boil*, ii. 171
Seethe, *to boil*, i. 162 ; ix. 490 ; xiii. 25
Segs, *sedges*, v. 213
Seld, *seldom, rare*, iv. 302; x. 86
Seld-seen, *seldom seen, rare*, v. 107
Self, *same*, vi. 376; x. 139
Seller (=soler), *a room aloft*, i. 157
Sellinger, *St Leger*, ix. 409
Semblant, *appearance, pretence*, iii. 6
Sembling, *dissembling*, ii. 251
Sempiternal, *everlasting*, i. 286
Sempster, xi. 210
Send, *sent*, i. 64
Seneschalship, viii. 139
Sens, *since*, iii. 117
Sensibility, *tender feelings, sensitiveness*, xv. 207
Sensible, *sensitive*, xi. 15
Sentence, *sense*, i. 10 ; *saw, saying*, iii. 264
Sent-Loy, *Saint-Loy*, vi. 75
Sepulture, *burial*, ii. 274
Serpently, *serpentlike*, i. 60
Serviceable, *willing to be of service*, ii. 339

Digitized by Google

Sess, *to assess*, viii. 155
Set-by, *to esteem, to prize*, i. 46; iv. 17
Settles, *benches*, xi. 304
Sever, *to separate*, viii. 86
Several, *separate*, xi. 462
Sew, *pottage*, xii. 507
Sewen, *follow*, i. 248
Shagged, *shaggy*, iv. 279
Shag-hair, *shaggy-haired*, xii. 477
Shagrag, *a beggarly fellow*, xii. 132
Shake, *shaken*, iii. 88
Shamble, *bandy*, ix. 488
Shamefac'd, *modest*, xii. 295, 298
Shamefast, *modest*, iii. 68
Shapen, *made*, i. 247
Sharepenny, *a miser*, ix. 228
Shark, *to rob*, xii. 73
Sharp, *to sharpen*, ix. 422
Shase, *she has*, iii. 221
Shaveling, *a monk*, viii. 301
Shaver, ix. 116
She-chirurgeon, xiv. 399
Sheen, *bright*, vii. 58
Sheer, *clear*, viii. 443
Sheerly, *quite*, ix. 120
Shent, *ruined*, ii. 216; *injured*, ii. 279; *punished* (?), iii. 71
Shewer, *an example*, ii. 388
Shidder, *thither*, xii. 507
Shifts, viii. 138
Shine, *sheen, splendour*, vii. 313
Shit, *shut*, i. 183; ii. 153
Shoot-anchor (=sheet-anchor ?), iii. 58
Shope, *ordained, provided*, i. 163
Short, "at short and long," *the long and the short of it*, i. 25
Shot, *reckoning*, i. 353
Shot-anchor, *sheet-anchor* (?), i. 366
Shotlog, xi. 141
Show, *to appear*, x. 120
Shrew, *to curse*, i. 33; ii. 223; xv. 426; *a vicious horse* (?), viii. 425
Shrewd, *bad*, i. 20, 60, 401; iii. 346; viii. 297; xi. 43; xii. 142; *a wicked man*, iii. 241
Shrewdly, *badly*, iii. 131; xiv. 473
Shrieve, *sheriff*, viii. 146; x. 344
Shrive, *to confess*, iii. 219
Shroud, *to shelter*, iv. 308; xi. 484
Shrow, *shrew*, iv. 232; viii. 302
Sib, *akin*, viii. 124
Sibber, ii. 78
Sickerly, *certainly*, i. 259
Side, *wide*, iv. 118
Sieged, *besieged*, x. 324
Siesta, *note*, xv. 22
Sifflements, *whistlings*, ix. 340
Signet (=sonata), iv. 349
Signiorise, v. 185
Signiorising, *lording it*, v. 220
Signiory, *lordship*, v. 216
Sikerly, *surely, truly*, iii. 255; xii. 241
Silder, *less often*, vii. 46
Simper, ix. 115
Simplitude, *simplicity*, i. 263
Sin, *since*, i. 175; *since*, xii. 257; *sinner*, x. 61
Sink and cise, *terms used in card-playing*, iii. 346
Sinksanker, *a cardsharper*, viii. 192
Sipers (=Cyprus), *a white stuff of which veils were made*, i. 350
Sir, *a gentleman*, xi. 463
Sisterne, *sisters*, xii. 242
Sistren, *sisters*, i. 226, 227
Sith, *since*, i. 13, 16, 268; iii. 282; x. 115
Sithence, *since*, iv. 336
Sitten, *sat*, xi. 520
Skald, *a term of abuse, a scabby or shabby fellow*, iii. 216, 217
Skein, *a knife*, x. 229

Digitized by Google

Skene, *a dagger*, ix. 337
Skill, *knowledge*, i. 7; *to help*, iii. 178; *to matter*, iii. 311; *matter consequence*, iv. 128
Skinker, *drawer, tapster, a pourer out of wine*, viii. 426; x. 252
Skipjack, *a dwarf*, iii. 312; vi. 179
Skirret, x. 126
Slab, *to lap up*, ii. 215
Slack, *late*, ii. 245
Slake, *to assuage, to soften*, i. 202; iii. 30
Slampambs, *craft*, iii. 39
Slav'd, *enslaved*, x. 116; xiv. 437
Slaver, *to slobber*, viii. 60; x. 539
Slavering, *slobbering*, vii. 300; x. 499
Sle, *to slay*, i. 257; ii. 251; iii. 147
Sleight, *craft, deceit*, i. 82; *prudence*, iii. 27
Sleightly, *slyly*, ii. 243
Sleights (of hand), x. 208
Slick, *sleek, soft*, xiv. 58
Slidder, *slippery*, i. 213
Slide, *to go astray*, ii. 100
Slight, *weak*, x. 75
'Slight (= God's light), *an oath*, xi. 125; xiii. 235
Slim, *frail, feeble*, i. 288
Slip, *false coin*, x. 197
Slopped, *lapped up*, iii. 193
Slops, *breeches*, x. 345; xi. 67
Slot, *note*, xiv. 520
Slouch, *a lout*, xi. 282
Slouches, *slutches, dirty fellows*, i. 416
Slough, *slew*, i. 235
Sloughing hot cockles, ix. 102
Slubber, *to obscure*, iv. 374
Smack, *to taste*, ii. 230
Small, i. 10
Smattering, *talking*, i. 211
Smick-smack, ii. 85
Smit, *smitten*, i. 41
Smock-satyr, *woman-hater*, xiv. 277
Smolder, *to smother*, iii. 243
Smug, *trim, nice, neat*, iv. 183; ix. 326; x. 473; *to adorn*, xi. 532; *pleasantly*, xii. 327
'Snails, *an oath*, xiii. 7, 37
Sneaksbill, *one who doesn't pay his score*, xii. 258
Sneap'd, *rebuked*, x. 428
Snick-up, ix. 285
Snigs, xii. 257, 259
Snip, *a snap*, x. 346
Snipsnap, iii. 332
Snudge, *a mean fellow*, iv. 314; *a miser*, viii. 83
Snudge-snout, ix. 232
Snuff pepper, *to feel offended*, xiii. 166
Snyb, *to snub, reprove*, xii. 240
So, *provided*, i. 63
Soaker, *drinker*, xii. 334
Soap, "soap-ashes," i. 31
Soar, *a young hawk*, xi. 360
Sod, *boiled*, i. 25
Sodden, *boiled*, i. 34
Sodometry, *Sodomy*, ii. 65
Soldan, *sultan*, i. 31
Solf, *to call over the notes of a tune*, i. 71
Solicitancy, *solicitation*, xiv. 291
Somedele, *somewhat*, xii. 241
Sometime among, *sometimes, at intervals*, i. 7
Sonde, *message*, xv. 421
Sooth, *true*, i. 20, 66; *to flatter, soften*, iii. 59; viii. 455, *to prove*, iv. 258; *truth*, vii. 287; ix. 569; xii. 256
Sophy, *philosophy*, iii. 261
Sops, i. 79
Sorel, *a buck of the third year*, ix. 149

Digitized by Google

Sort, *set, lot, company*, i. 405; ii. 309; viii. 118, 291; xiii. 430; *choose*, v. 164; *to turn out*, viii. 411; xiv. 129; *condition, rank*, x. 343
Sossing, *sousing* (?), iii. 183
Sot, *fool*, ii. 378; xi. 525
Sothery, *sweet*, i. 376
Sotting, *getting drunk*, xiii. 437
Sound, *to part, sunder*, i. 244; *swoon*, iii. 107; vii. 323, 383; *true*, x. 49
Souse, *soused fish, pickled fish*, i. 418; iii. 356; *a blow*, ii. 126; *to beat*, iii. 218; (a dish of), vi. 291; ix. 240
Souterly, *snobbish*, iii. 321
Span-counter, xiv. 306
Sparkify, *to make a spark* (*gallant*) *of*, xv. 47
Sparkles, *sparks*, xii. 514
Speck-and-span new, xi. 334
Spectatrix, xiii. 513
Spectrum, *a looking-glass*, ix. 221
Speculation, *sight*, xii. 563
Speed, *to prosper*, i. 70; *to despatch*, xiv. 176; *success*, i. 135
Spells, x. 207
Spence, *pantry*, i. 35
Spent, *spend*, i. 407
Spere, *to ask*, i. 321
Spettle, iii. 11
Spial, *espial*, vi. 409; *spy*, viii. 274
Spice, *species*, i. 58
Spill, *to destroy*, i. 119, 270; iii. 118
Spindleshanks, *legs*, ii. 336
Spital-house, *hospital*, iii. 193
Spitchcock, xii. 236
Spitchcock'd, xii. 239
Spite, *to anger*, ii. 289
Spittle-house, *hospital*, viii. 70
Splayed, *displayed*, i. 147
Splendent, *resplendent*, ix. 310
Spokes, *saws, sayings*, vii. 300
Spongeous, *spongy*, ix. 422
Spot, *to defame*, x. 155
Spousail, *marriage*, xii. 241
Spousal, viii. 117
Spreet, *spirit*, iii. 177
Sprent, *sprinkled*, i. 425; vii. 83; ix. 267
Spright, *spirit*, vii. 474
Spring, *dance*, viii. 348
Springal, *a young fellow, youth*, ix. 271; x. 366; xiii. 159
Springe, *a trap, snare*, xi. 69
Springed, *ensnared*, xiii. 47
Springes, *traps*, xiv. 352
Sprite, *spirit*, iii. 49
Spriteful, *sprightly*, xi. 126
Sprites, *spirits*, i. 46
Spruce, *finely dressed*, vii. 286
Spun, *to burst out*, ii. 273
Spurt, ii. 291
Spyal, *spy*, viii. 397
Squall, *a squalid thing*, ii. 387; *a little insignificant fellow*, vi. 199, 200; *one who squalls*, xiv. 102
Squalms, i. 68
Square, *to adjust*, xi. 564
Squich, *to skip*, ii. 387
Squich'd, *winced*, v. 343
Squirrility, *scurrility*, iv. 62
Squitter-book, viii. 74
Stab (? slab), *to eat up*, ii. 215
Stacker, *to stagger*, i. 270
Stager (=an old stager), *not a newcomer*, xv. 19
Stale, *stole*, i. 171
Stales, *baits, allurements*, vii. 137; viii. 260
Stall, *stole*, i. 160; *to forestall*, xii. 45
Stalworthy, *brave*, i. 251
Stamel, *a kind of fine worsted*, ix. 164
Stammer, *to stop*, i. 250

Digitized by Google

Stand in paint, xi. 133
Standish, xii. 270
Stang, *did sting*, i. 363; *stung*, v. 348
Staniel, *coward, note*, xiv. 284
Stanielry, *weakness*, xiv. 357
Star Chamber, *to bring before the Star Chamber*, x. 378
Star-cross'd, x. 182
Stark, *great*, i. 65; *strong*, ii. 33; *quite*, iii. 69
Starken, *stark*, v. 403
Starker, *greater*, i. 68
Start, *started*, i. 49
States, *note*, xiv. 470
Statist, *note*, xiii. 421
Stead, "in the stead of," i. 30
Steely, *like steel*, xiv. 240
Steep-fall (hill), *precipitous*, vii. 210, 223
Stellified, *made a star*, xii. 114
Stench, *staunch*, xiv. 329
Stere, *to stir, move* i. 293
Stern, *tail*, xiv. 365
Sterve, *to die*, vi. 51
Stick, *to hesitate*, iii. 285; xiv. 241
Stickled, *acted the umpire*, xii. 275
Stickler, *umpire*, xii. 121
Sticklers, *umpires*, xii. 450
Stigmatic, *branded*, viii. 300
Stilling, *distilling*, iv. 236
Stinkard, *a stinking fellow*, x. 339; xiv. 145
Stint, *stop*, iv. 268; vii. 46
Stinted, *stopped*, x. 56
Stirrups, *fetters*, i. 184
Stir stumps, xv. 41
Stitch (in side), xv. 182
Stitchel, *a term of abuse*, xiv. 357
Stock, *rapier*, ix. 119
Stomach, *bravery, pluck*, iii. 138; *indignation*, viii. 324
Stomach'd, *disliked, resented*, iii. 125
Stone priest, viii. 461
Stoon, *stone*, xv. 423
Stoop, *post*, vii. 66; xi. 364, 400
Stound, *interval, time*, i. 183; ii. 213; iii. 117; *a blow*, vii. 64
Stout, *brave*, iii. 137
Stoutly, *bravely*, ii. 359
Stra, *straw*, i. 255
Straight, *straightways*, xi. 488
Strained, *distressed*, xiii. 9
Strait, *strict*, i. 109
Straitest, *strictest*, x. 188
Straitly, *strictly*, i. 73
Strakeground, *struck, foundered*, i. 163
Straking, *stretching*, i. 88
Strands, i. 243
Strange, "to make strange," *to be shy*, i. 83; *shy, coy*, xiii. 61
Strawed, *strewed*, iv. 120
Streck, vi. 31
Strene, *strain* (*note is wrong*), i. 55
Stricken, *struck*, iv. 218
Strike up, *to play*, i. 74
Stroke, *struck*, i. 49
Stroken, *struck*, i. 407; iv. 53; vi. 200
Strow, *scattered*, xiv. 311
Studious, *musing, thoughtful*, i. 88
Studs, *mares*, xiv. 342
Stung, *bitten*, i. 202
Stutter, *stutterer*, iv. 137
Sublime, *sublimate*, i. 366
Submiss, *submissive*, iv. 256
Subordination, *gradation of higher and lower orders*, xiii. 373
Subscribe, *to agree*, xiv. 148
Subsizer, ix. 181
Suburb-garden, *note*, xii. 119
Successive, *successful*, xiv. 325

Digitized by Google

Suckets, xiv. 337
Sufferance, *suffering, endurance*, x. 149 ; xiii. 300 ; *permission*, xi. 287
Suffisance, *sufficiency*, ii. 242
Suffrages, *sufferings*, x. 169
Sugarloaf-hat, v. 330
Sullenwood, *southernwood*, xii. 144
Sulphury, *sulphurous*, xi. 486 ; xiv. 126
Summersault, xv. 69
Sumner, *summoner*, ix. 397 ; x. 356 ; xi. 537 ; xiii. 88
Supernaculum, viii. 58
Supernal, *above*, i. 396
Supportance, *support*, xiv. 319
Supportation, *support*, i. 6, 201
Suppose, *conjecture*, viii. 423
Suppository, viii. 370
Surcease, *to stop*, iv. 327
Surcloy'd, *surfeited*, v. 190
Surquedry, *pride*, v. 312
Suspect, *suspected*, ii. 167 ; vii. 56, 377 ; viii. 427 ; xi. 73 ; *suspicion*, i. 57 ; xi. 108, 490
Sustenance, *support*, xi. 472
Sustentation, *sustenance*, xi. 481
Swabber, *one who swabs*, xii. 219
Swabbers, xv. 216
Swad, *a bumpkin* (?), vi. 256 ; *fellow*, vi. 380 ; ix. 109
Swain, *servant*, ii. 247
Swap, *to drink up*, iv. 73
Swash, *swaggerer*, vi. 254
Swath-bands, *rolls of cloth in which infants were swathed or swaddled*, i. 350
Swearing, "of swearing," *a-swearing*, iii. 186
Sweat, "the sweat," *the plague*, iv. 119
Sweeting, *darling*, i. 417 ; ii. 286 ; viii. 364 ; *a sweet apple*, viii. 91 ; *sweetheart*, x. 551
Swelt, *to swelter*, vi. 291 ; *die*, xii. 253
Sword, *sword*, i. 151
Sweven, *dream*, xii. 242
Swill, xii. 232
Swinepox, *measles*, xii. 337
Swinge, *to beat*, iv. 224
Swing'd, *beaten* (?), iii. 95, 246
Swink, *toil*, iii. 192
Swoons, Swounds, (= *God's wounds*), *an oath*, vii. 344, 352
Swythe, *quickly*, iii. 182

Taberet, i. 48
Table-book, xi. 345
Tables (to play at), vii. 271
Tacklings, *tackle*, xii. 345
Tacon, vi. 197
Taffata, xi. 113
Taint with, *to accuse of*, xiv. 211
Taker, "the king's taker," i. 24
Taking, *temper, condition*, ii. 376 ; x. 226
Talc (oil of), *note*, xiii. 225
Tale of a tub, ii. 335
Tall, *adj., valiant, brave*, i. 41 ; iii. 147 ; vii. 318 : x. 294
Tallies, *note*, xii. 137
Talter, *to hang, swing*, i. 428
Tampion, *a plug*, i. 370
Tane, *taken*, i. 255
Tango mongoes, x. 521
Tapester, *a female drawer (of wine)*, i. 263
Tapper, *a male drawer*, i. 425
Tappis, *to lie*, xiv. 322
Taratink, xii. 327
Tare, *tore*, i. 148
Tarmagons, *termagants*, xiv. 286
Tarry, *to delay*, i. 14
Tartarian, *a thief*, x. 242
Task, v. 379 ; *to rate, scold*, xi. 225
Tatterdemalion, xii. 128
Tavern-bushes, xii. 130
Taverner, *innkeeper*, i. 23

Digitized by Google

Tawdry, *towardly* (?), v. 403
Tawrhalts (= tawed halters ?), i. 158
Taym, *time*, vi. 75
Taythes, *tithes*, vi. 71
Te, *to*, vi. 71
Tee-hee, wee-hee ! x. 231
Teen, *sorrow, vexation*, vii. 87; *anger*, ix. 123; *grief*, xii. 507
Teg, *a young deer*, ii. 193, 220
Temper, *to mix*, xiii. 107
Templars, xi. 496
Tend, *to go to*, i. 12; *to attend*, ix. 292
Tender, *to regard*, xi. 454
Tene, *to anger, annoy*, i. 251
Tensures, *exertions*, x. 380
Tent, *to probe*, iii. 311
Tenting, *tempting*, vi. 74
Tenure, *tenor*, vi. 69
Term, "term of thy life," i. 34
Termagant, *a violent fellow*, x. 322
Testament, *will*, i. 132
Tester, *note*, xii. 125; *bed-head*, xiii. 35
Testern, *a coin*, xi. 210
Tewell, *bore, hole*, i. 370
Thacked, *thatched*, ix. 164
Than, *then*, vi. 74
Thankworthy, ii. 112
The, *to thrive, prosper*, i. 257, 259; viii. 163; xv. 418
Thea, *thou*, vi. 74
Theatral, *theatrical*, xiv. 281, 293
Thedom, *success*, i. 261
Then, *than*, xv. 57
There, *where*, i. 132, 249
Thiles, *roofs* (?), xii. 489
Thilk, *that same*, i. 200; *that*, iv. 74
Thills, *shafts*, xii. 136
Thinks, *things*, ii. 287
Tho, *then*, i. 244; iv. 338
Thone, *the one*, ii. 211
Thorough, *to go through with*, xv. 78
Thother, *the other*, ii. 211, 260
Thratty, *thirty*, vi. 72
Thrist, *thrust*, i. 138; *thirst*, ii. 165
Throes, *pains*, xii. 481
Throst, *starved*, ii. 210
Throughgirt, *pierced through*, v. 164
Thrumming, *threading* (?), xi. 249
Thrusteen, *thirteen*, i. 405
Thwacks, *blows*, iv. 320
Thwart, *cross, unlucky*, xi. 42
Thylke, *that same*, xii. 242
Tibiard, *shin*, viii. 139
Tice, *to entice*, i. 115
Tick-tack, ii. 85
Tick (upon), *credit*, xv. 336
Tickle, *ticklish*, v. 82; *unsteady, uncertain*, v. 194; vii. 128; xii. 241
Tickle our catastrophe, x. 225
Tiddle, *to pet, spoil*, ii. 173, 174
Tide, *time*, i. 12, 249
Tidlings, *pets*, ii. 164
Tie-dog, *bandog*, viii. 261
Till soon farewell, *à bientôt*, xi. 577
Timpany, viii. 370
Tink, *to tinker*, i. 261
Tire, *attire*, ii. 377; *to prey on*, v. 248; viii. 278
Tires, *attires*, xi. 201
Tirl, i. 20
Tisty-toisty, iii. 332
Tite, *soon, directly*, iii. 182
Tithing, *tidings*, i. 151
Titivile, iii. 58
Tittifills, *knaves*. i. 424
Tittle-tattles, viii. 418
Titubate, *to stumble*, viii. 139
To, *compared with*, ix. 154; *in addition to*, xiii. 234
Toast (in wine), i. 79

Digitized by Google

Tobacco man, xi. 127
To friend, "for a friend," xv. 14
Toiled, *wearied*, x. 208
Tollage, *toll*, xii. 111
Tomboy, iii. 94
Tone, *the one*, vii. 378
Tongue-wralling, *tongue-jangling*, iv. 120
Toohing, *blowing of a horn*, ii. 195
Too-too, *very much*, *very*, i. 423; vi. 68, 236; xi. 32; xi. 119
To pose, *to puzzle*, xv. 59
Topple, *to wrestle* (?), ii. 210
To-rent, *rend asunder*, i. 408
Torpedo, *electric eel*, xii. 426
Torrup, *to interrupt*, iv. 74
Tossing, *sharp* (?), iii. 207
Toteth, *peeps*, i. 42
Tother, *second*, vii. 292; *the other*, vii. 371
To-torn, *torn to pieces*, i. 424
Totter, *to swing* (*on the gallows*), i. 158; xi. 274
Touch, "to flee touch," i. 156; *feeling*, x. 117; *trick* (?), i. 262, 429; *touchstone*, iii. 89
Tourney, *tournament*, i. 74
Touse, *to trouble*, *tease*, iv. 323; *to pull*, *drag*, ix. 215
Towardly, *good*, xii. 120
Towards, *about to come*, *coming*, *future*, vii. 473; xi. 522
To-yere, *this year*, iv. 118
Trace, "to lead a trace," i. 47
Train, *to allure*, xiv. 116
Traitress, i. 83
Tralilly, *term of endearment*, ix 326
Traiucent, *clear*, ix. 232; xii. 290
Translate, *translated*, i. 7
Transmue, *to change*, xii. 308
Transmued, *transformed*, xii. 242
Transportment, *transport*, xv. 70, 93, 103
Trans-shape, *transform*, xiv. 320
Trattling, *talkative*, ii. 211
Travail, *pain*, *labour*, viii. 312
Tread, *a path*, i. 293; *business*, ii. 235
Treatment, *entertainment*, xiv. 350
Tredging, *trudging*, ii. 126
Trencher-analects, *note*, xii. 269
Trencher-salt, xi. 403
Trentals, *note*, xiv. 170
Treygobet (=Hey-go-bet?), *a game*, ii. 34
Treytrip, *note*, xiii. 238
Triacle, *medicine*, i. 365
Triacles, *medicines*, viii. 46
Trick, *neat*, *proper*, ii. 233; iii. 92; *to trim*, vii. 254
Tricker, *one who is neat*, iii. 281
Tricksy, *neat*, *trim*, ii. 281
Trick up, *to adorn*, x. 175
Tricotee, xiv. 280
Trill (the bones), ii. 92
Trim, *proper*, *fine*, ii. 346; xiv. 357; *adornment*, xv. 116
Trimly, *neatly*, ii. 344
Trimmer, iii. 251
Trim-tram, ii. 66
Trine, *astronomical term*, xi. 336
Trink'd, *adorned*, xi. 363
Trip, *a tripping*, ii. 253
Triump, *trump*, ii. 34
Trot, *an old woman*, i. 427; iii. 72
Trote, (?), vii. 155
Troth, "of troth," *truly*, iv. 16
Trothing, *belief*, *troth*, vi. 73
Trothless, *truthless*, vii. 137; viii. 119
Troth-plight, *pledged*, viii. 109, 111
Troublous, *troublesome*, i. 287
Trouchman, *interpreter*, vi. 463
Trounce, ii. 221

Digitized by Google

Trowl the bowl, *troll (pass) the cup*, iii. 180
Truchman, *note*, xiii. 344
Truckers, xiv. 350
Trudge, *to pack off, to trot*, iii. 24, 43
Trug, *a wench*, vi. 512
Trull, *loose wench*, i. 44; xiv. 317; *term of endearment*, ii. 290
Trump, *game at cards*, iii. 199; *triumph*, iv. 144, 145; *a trumpet*, xi. 486
Truncheon, *a headless spear*, iv. 328
Trundletail, *note*, xii. 121
Trunk-hose, xii. 238
Trup up, *pack up*, x. 539
Trussed, *packed*, i. 117
Trust, *fidelity*, xi. 540
Truth, "of truth," *of a truth*, i. 67
Tuck, *sword*, xiv. 284
Tucket, *a set of notes on the trumpet*, iv. 380
Tune, *voice*, ii. 284
Turchis, *turquois*, ix. 422
Turmoil, *to disturb*, iv. 149; viii. 360; *to trouble*, x. 139
Tutress, *a female tutor*, vii. 499
Twain, *two*, i. 48
Twatter, *to talk, chat*, ix. 270
Twattox, viii. 369
Tway, *two*, ii. 376
Tweche, *touch*, ii. 47
Twichbox, *touchbox*, iv. 67
Twin, *to separate*, i. 244
Twist, *twisted*, i. 158; *fork*, xii. 553
Twitting, *chattering*, xii. 294
Tyrannious, *tyrannical*, iv. 217
Tyre (wine), i. 24
Tyren, *to tear*, xii. 254

Ud's, *God's, an oath*, xi. 101; xiv. 289
Ugly, *horrible*, v. 191
Umbrageous, xv. 9
Unaware, "at unaware," *unawares*, ix. 43
Unbaptized, *heathenish*, xii. 287
Unbiassed (bowl), ix. 539
Unbowelled, *disembowelled*, vii. 24
Uncharm, *to take off the spell*, xi. 563
Uncivilise, *to cease to act civilly*, xiii. 78
Unclear, *unshriven, impenitent*, x. 46
Uncompanied, *having no fellow or equal*, x. 119
Unconceiving, *thoughtless*, xi. 463
Unconcernedness, *unconcern*, xv. 102
Uncouth, *unknown*, vi. 171; *harsh, unkind, strange*, xi. 124; xii. 214
Uncreate, *uncreated*, x. 173
Uncuriously, xv. 24
Undecency, *indecency*, xiii. 78
Undelved, *undigged*, v. 118
Underlaid, *soled (of boots)*, i. 183
Undermine, *to supplant*, ii. 250
Undeserved, *undeserving*, i. 71
Undo, *to ruin*, i. 75
Undoing, *ruin*, xi. 478
Unfallibly, *infallibly*, viii. 66
Unfoil'd, *untroubled, unvanquished*, iv. 330
Ungotten, i. 59
Unhappy, *unlucky, unfortunate*, ix. 566; xiv. 303
Unhappily, *wickedly*, xiv. 243
Unhelm, *to take off the helmet*, iv. 333
Uning, *uniting*, i. 302
Unkind, *ungrateful*, i. 100
Unlaced, ix. 180
Unladified, *having lost the position of a lady*, xi. 79
Unmaiden'd, *deflowerd*, xiv. 224

Digitized by Google

Unmannerly, *wanting in courtesy*, xi. 516
Unneath, *scarcely, with difficulty*, xii. 507
Unneth, *scarcely*, i. 7; iii. 117
Unperfect, *imperfect*, ix. 432
Unperfit, *imperfect*, ii. 329
Unplume, *to take off the plume or crest*, x. 134
Unquietness, *disease*, i. 311
Unready, "to make unready," *to undress*, xiii. 79
Unrest, *disquietness*, i. 56; *disquiet*, v. 97
Unrestful, *unquiet*, vii. 389
Unrevocable, *irrevocable*, x. 154
Unroosted, *uprisen, out of bed*, xi. 281
Unseized, *unloosed*, xv. 210
Unshamefacedness, *immodesty*, i. 60
Unshamefast, *shameless, immodest*, ii. 270; vi. 161
Unsufferable, *intollerable*, x. 194
Unthrift, *extravagant, lavish*, viii. 26; xi. 274: *an extravagant person*, viii. 29; *a rogue*, x. 183
Unthriftiness, *folly*, i. 91
Until, *unto*, i. 269
Untractable, *unyielding*, ii. 203
Untrimmed, *dishevelled*, vii. 87
Untruss, xi. 471
Unuseful, *useless*, xiii. 396
Unwenned (=unwemmed), *pure*, xii. 241
Unwieldy, *without control*, iv. 266
Unwitting (of), *ignorant of*, xi. 31
Unwitty, *unwise*, viii. 336
Unwreaken, *unrevenged*, vii. 86
Upbraid, *a reproach*, vii. 192
Upbringing, *nurture*, i. 91
Upbrought, *nurtured*, i. 92
Upholster, *an upholsterer*, xi. 247
Upland, *the uplands*, i. 262
Uplandish, *foreigner*, vi. 221
Upsey, *note*, xiv. 470
Up-trained, *trained up, brought up*, iv. 209
Urchen, *hedgehog*, ix. 382
Urchin, *child, term of endearment*, i. 72
Ure, *use, practice*, i. 378; *to practise*, i. 153; *interest*, xiv. 314
Utter, *outside*, i. 260

Vacabone, *vagabond*, iv. 63
Vade, *to go*, i. 424; vii. 38; *to fade, go away*, vi. 557
Vail, *to doff*, ix. 371; *to lower*, xi. 55
Vailing, *bending*, xiv. 105
Vain, *fain*, iv. 79
Vair, *fair*, viii. 339
Valiancy, *valour, bravery*, v. 37; viii. 322
Valter, *to falter*, iv. 219, 220
Valuation, *value*, iii. 264
Vantage, *advantage*, iii. 35
Vara, *very*, vi. 76
Vardingale, *farthingale*, vi. 434
Vast, *fast*, iii. 182; iv. 218
Vat, *fat*, iv. 220
Vatten, *to fatten*, vi. 177
Vaulting-house, *a brothel*, vii. 436
Vaut, *fault*, iii. 313
Vay, *faith*, viii. 364
Vear, *fear*, viii. 339, 362
Veget, *lively*, xii. 293
Venereous, *unchaste*, xiv. 191
Veneys, *note*, xiii. 169
Vengeance, *terribly, very*, i. 405; iv. 64
Venom, *venomous*, i. 297
Venter, *to venture*, i. 121: iv. 57
Verament, *truly*, i. 421; ii. 110

Digitized by Google

Verdit, *verdict*, ii. 177
Verity, *truth*, iii. 319
Vetch, *note*, xii. 132
Via, *away!* x. 217
Viand, *sing*, i. 21
Vild, *vile*, v. 85; vii. 296
Vill, *to fill*, viii. 338
Vilthy, *filthy*, iii. 176
Vired, *fired*, viii. 338
Virginal jacks, x. 346
Virtually, *powerfully*, xiv. 311
Visitants, *visitors*, xv. 61
Visitation, *visit*, xi. 13; *plague*, xv. 327
Visnomy, x. 323
Vizarded, *concealed*, xiv. 256
Vlat, *flat*, viii. 344
Vocation, *trade*, xv. 132
Voider, *avoider*, i. 125; *a basket for clearing the table*, xii. 112
Voiding knife, *note*, ix. 447
Voiding of, *avoiding of*, i. 34
Vool, *a fool*, iv. 219
Voolish, *foolish*, iv. 219
Vor, *for*, viii. 338
Vorbod (of God), *prohibition*, "God forbid," iv. 219
Vorty, *forty*, viii. 338
Vound, *found*, iv. 219
Vox, *fox*, iv. 75
Vriend, *friend*, iii. 313
Vull, *full*, viii. 344

WADE, *to go*, i. 67
Waesheal, *note*, xii. 285
Wage, *hire*, i. 247
Wage-pasty, *a term of abuse*, ii. 141
Wain-man, *waggoner*, v. 206
Wait, *to watch, be on guard*, i. 248
Waking, *watchful*, xi. 528
Walter, *to feel sick*, i. 365
Waltering, iv. 313
Wan, *won*, i. 385; *did win*, xi. 472
Wanderers, *planets*, xi. 302
Wane, *waning*, xv. 46
Wanion, *curse*, vi. 196; xiii. 158
Wannion, *curse*, iv. 121
Want, *to do without*, v. 350
Ward, *award*, vi. 166; "lie at ward," *a term in fencing*, viii. 149
Wards, *spies*, xiii. 183
Ware, *be aware*, i. 169; x. 8
Wark, *work*, i. 202; ii. 195; *to work*, i. 253
Warks, *works*, i. 7
Warling, *a slave*, x. 303
Warrantise, *warranty, guarantee*, iii. 139; vii. 126; *to warrant*, viii. 44, 301
Washen, *washed*, ii. 122
Washical, *what-do-you-call-it*, iii. 243
Wassail, *note*, xi. 487
Waste-good, *a spendthrift*, xii. 102
Watching-candle, xi. 352
Waterstairs, x. 124
Wawd, *would*, vi. 71
Wawl, *to make a noise like cats*, ix. 211
Wealth, *welfare, prosperity*, i. 73; iii. 122
Weam, *belly*, x. 366
Weapon'd, *armed*, vii. 417
Wearied, *worried*, ix. 325
Weary, *aware*, vi. 547
Weasand, *windpipe*, iii. 230
Wed, *a pledge*, i. 165; "to wed" *for a pledge*, i. 147; *wedded*, viii. 109
Weed, *garment*, v. 330
Weet, *to learn, know*, iii. 204
Weete, *know*, xii. 507
Weigh, *to care*, iii. 49
Welde, *wielder, ruler*, i. 268
Welding, *to carry*, v. 27
Wele, *well*, xii. 253
Welkin, *sky*, v. 274; xii. 507

Digitized by Google

Wellaway, *well-a-day!* i. 173
Well-a-year, *cf. well-a-day*, vii. 397
Well-left, *having a rich inheritance*, xi. 514
Wend, *to go*, vii. 36; x. 226; *goes*, xii. 241
Wenest, *weenest*, i. 119
Went, *weened*, i. 119; *equipped, well-begone* (?), i. 244
Werme, *warm*, xii. 311
Wete, *to know*, i. 119, 262
Wex, *waxed*, ix. 355
Whadragesima, *quadragesima*, vi. 74
Whaiet, *quiet*, vi. 76
What d'ye lack, *a term of abuse*, xi. 152
What is he for, x. 355
What-not, *a term of abuse*, ix. 78
Whatsomever, *whatsoever*, i. 427
Wher, *whether*, xiii. 47, 511
Whiffler, *a tobacco smoker, hence a trifling fellow*, x. 303; xiv. 360
While, *until*, vi. 65
Whiles, *whilst*, xii. 299; "the whilst," i. 65
Whimling, *a weak person*, viii. 231
Whin-yard, *a sword*, x. 363
Whips-talk, *a whipstock*, v. 95
Whipstock, xi. 384
Whist, *be silent*, ix. 432
Whit, *aught*, i. 428
White son, iii. 329; *boy, darling*, vii. 325
White, *centre of target*, xii. 455; xiv. 144
White-liver'd, *coward*, xiv. 284
Whittle, *a dagger*, i. 168
Whore, *to act as a procurer or panderer*, xi. 520
Whot, *hot*, vii. 47
Whur, *to scold*, iii. 70
Whylk, *which*, xii. 284
Wight, *brave, active*, i. 252; viii. 158, 221; xii. 507
Wild, *vague, loose*, i. 245
Wildfire, i. 72; xiv. 130
Wildness, *wilderness*, i. 149
Wilful, *voluntary*, i. 200
Will I nill I, viii. 302
Wimble, *nimble*, xii. 507
Wimple, *a veil*, iv. 146
Wimpled, *veiled*, vi. 429
Winch up, xii. 469
Wis, *know*, iv. 183
Wished, *desired, recommended*, xi. 449; xiii. 65, 140
Wit, *to know*, i. 102, 202, 223; *opinion*, iii. 7
Witch, *a wizzard*, x. 104
With, *withy*, vii. 176
Withdrawing-room, *the drawing-room*, x. 361
Withouten, *without*, i. 255
Wits, *senses*, i. 12, 130
Wittol, *a cuckold*, xi. 40; *to make a fool of*, xiii. 107
Witty, *wise, clever*, ii. 316
Wizard, *wiseacre*, xiv. 357
Wizzel, *windpipe*, xiii. 271
Wocum (=welcome), *welcome*, viii. 362
Woe, *sorry*, i. 347; ix. 565
Woll, *will*, ii. 113
Womankind, *feminine*, xi. 455
Womanshire, *womankind*, ix. 327
Women be the devil's nets, i. 61
Wonder, *wonderfully*, i. 250
Wondernise, *to make wonderful*, vii. 324
Wonderous, *wonderfully*, ii. 180
Wonders, *wondrous*, i. 9
Wondersly, *wondrously*, i. 16
Wonnot, *will not*, vi. 312; xiii. 80
Wonts, *is accustomed*, viii. 343
Wood, *mad*, i. 351; ii. 122
Woodcock, *a simpleton*, ii. 295
Wooden walls, *ships*, xii. 514
Woodman, *forester*, vii. 321
Woot, *know*, iv. 364; *will it*, x. 339; *wilt*, xiii. 29; xiii. 39

Digitized by Google

Worch, *to work*, i. 274
Worched, *worked* (?), ii. 375
Wordly, *worldly*, ii. 329
Wore (=ore), i. 29, 30
World, "a world," i. 35; ii. 291
Worm, *reptile*, i. 202; *serpent*, x. 117
Wort, *herb*, i. 428
Worth, "of worth," *worthily*, i. 142
Wost, *knowest*, iv. 219
Wot, *know*, i. 23; ii. 115; x. 123
Wottest, *knowest*, i. 264
Wott'st, *knowest*, i. 25
Wounds and hearts, *an oath*, iii. 265
Woundyn, *wrapped*, xv. 419
Wrabbed, *rabid* (?), i. 379; ii. 211
Wrack, *wreck*, iii. 345; xii. 186; *ruin*, viii. 270; *vengeance*, iv. 300, 308
Wrangle, *to discuss*, xi. 271
Wrangling, *peevish*, x. 155
Wreak, v. 386
Wrigaldry-wrag, i. 49
Writhen, *wrinkled*, viii. 89
Wrought, *done*, i. 249

YALL, *to cry*, viii. 242
Yalling, *yelling*, ii. 190
Yate, *gate*, vi. 76; xii. 255
Yawl, *a noise made by the inside*, iii. 193
Yawl and jawl, *to wrangle and jangle*, ix. 284
Yawled, *yelled*, ix. 252
Ycapred, *capered*, xii. 253
Ycleped, *called*, ix. 176; xii. 241; xiii. 163
Yclept, *called*, xiii. 12
Yclipped, *called*, x. 315
Year of the Lord, *date of the year, a.d.*, xiv. 391
Yearthly, *earthly*, i. 55
Yeasty, *frothy*, vii. 300
Yede, *went*, i. 179; iii. 227; *walk*, xii. 507
Yeft, *gift*, xii. 288
Yeke, *eke*, xii. 242
Yell, *to resound*, ix. 279
Yellows, *jaundice*, x. 259
Yeoman of the collar, *prisoner in chains*, i. 158
Yerk, *to jerk*, iv. 74
Yert-point, xiv. 306
Yesternight, i. 34
Yfeel, *to feel*, xii. 253
Yferre, *afar*, xii. 311
Yfound, *found*, i. 252
Yfrounced, *adorned*, xii. 311
Ying, *young*, i. 245
Ylaft, *left*, xii. 240
Ylike, *like*, xii. 241
Yon, *yonder*, xi. 113
Yond, *yonder*, iii. 78
Yore, *of yore*, i. 262
Your, *yours*, i. 374
Youth, *you shall*, iii. 187
Y-proved, *true*, i. 250
Yreken, *raked*, xii. 240
Ystept, *advanced*, xii. 241

ZACKS, *sacks*, iii. 313
Zay, *say*, iv. 219
Zee, *see*, iii. 313
Zell, *to sell*, iv. 219
Zembletee, *appearance*, iii. 82
Zennight, *a week*, iv. 219
Zest, *sayest*, viii. 339
Zet, *set*, viii. 347
Zhrode, *shrewd*, iv. 219
Zold, *sold*, iii. 313
Zome, *some*, iv. 219
Zon, *son*, viii. 338
Zoons, *zounds*, xi. 65
Zow, *sow*, viii. 347
Zuch, *such*, iv. 221
Zure, *sure*, viii. 344
Zwap, *swap*, *blow*, iv. 222

Digitized by Google

PRINTED BY BALLANTYNE, HANSON AND CO.
EDINBURGH AND LONDON

Digitized by Google

A SELECT COLLECTION OF OLD ENGLISH PLAYS.

CONTENTS.

VOL. I.

Interlude of the Four Elements.
The Tragic-Comedy of Calisto and Melibæa.
Everyman: A Moral Play.
Hickscorner.
The Pardoner and the Friar.
The World and the Child.
God's Promises.
The Four P. P.
A New Interlude, called Thersites.

VOL. II.

Interlude of Youth.
Lusty Juventus.
Jack Juggler.
Nice Wanton.
History of Jacob and Esau.
Disobedient Child.
Marriage of Wit and Science.

VOL. III.

New Custom.
Ralph Roister Doister.
Gammer Gurton's Needle.
The Trial of Treasure.
Like Will to Like.

VOL. IV.

Damon and Pithias.
Appius and Virginia.
Cambyses.
The Misfortunes of Arthur.
Jeronimo.

VOL. V.

The Spanish Tragedy.
Cornelia.
Soliman and Perseda.
Life and Death of Jack Straw.

VOL. VI.

The Conflict of Conscience.
Rare Triumphs of Love and Fortune.
The Three Ladies of London.
Three Lords and Three Ladies of London.
A Knack to Know a Knave.

Digitized by Google

VOL. VII.

Tancred and Gismunda.
Wounds of Civil War.
Mucedorus.
The Two Angry Women of Abington.
Look about you.

VOL. VIII.

Summer's Last Will and Testament.
Downfall of Robert, Earl of Huntingdon.
Death of Robert, Earl of Huntingdon.
Contention between Liberality and Prodigality.
Grim the Collier of Croydon.

VOL. IX.

How to Choose a Good Wife from a Bad.
The Return from Parnassus.
Wily Beguiled.
Lingua.
Miseries of Enforced Marriage.

VOL. X.

The Revenger's Tragedy.
The Dumb Knight.
The Merry Devil of Edmonton.
Ram-Alley.
The Second Maiden's Tragedy.
Englishmen for My Money.

VOL. XI.

A Woman is a Weathercock.
Amends for Ladies.
Green's Tu Quoque.
Albumazar.
The Hog hath Lost his Pearl.
The Heir.

VOL. XII.

The Old Couple.
A Woman Never Vexed.
The Ordinary.
The London Chanticleers.
The Shepherd's Holiday.
The True Trojans.
The Lost Lady.

VOL. XIII.

A Match at Midnight.
The City Nightcap.
The City Match.
The Queen of Arragon.
The Antiquary.

VOL. XIV.

The Rebellion.
Lust's Dominion; or, The Lascivious Queen.
Andromana.
Lady Alimony.
The Parson's Wedding.

VOL. XV.

Elvira; or, The Worst not always True.
The Marriage Night.
The Adventures of Five Hours.
All Mistaken; or, The Mad Couple.
Historia Histrionica.

INDEX AND GLOSSARY.

Digitized by Google

WORKS IN STANDARD LITERATURE.

Edited by W. CAREW HAZLITT.

---

1. **The Romance of Paris and Vienna,** from the unique copy by W. Caxton, 1485, *facsimile*, £1, 1s.

2. **Complete Works of William Browne,** author of "Britannia's Pastorals," &c., *woodcuts and facsimiles*, 2 vols., £2, 2s.

3. **Inedited Tracts,** 1579—1618, illustrating old English manners, £1, 1s.

4. **English Drama and Stage,** 1543—1664, a Collection of Documents and Treatises, £1, 1s.

5. **Works of George Gascoigne,** with Life and Notes, 2 thick vols., *woodcuts nd facsimiles*, £2, 12s. 6d.

6. **Poems of Thomas Carew,** with Life and Notes, *portrait*, 18s.

[*** *The six preceding publications are uniformly printed in small* 4°, *only* 170 *copies, and half bound Roxburghe style, edges uncut. The* 8 *vols. may be had together for* £3, 8s.]

7. **Warton's History of English Poetry,** 11th to 16th Century, with new Notes by Madden, &c., 4 large vols., large paper, £6, 6s.; small paper, £2, 10s.

8. **Popular Antiquities of Great Britain,** founded on Brand, 3 vols, large paper, £4, 14s. 6d.; small paper, £2, 10s.

9. **English Proverbs and Proverbial Phrases,** alphabetically arranged, with Notes, large paper, £2, 2s.; small paper, £1, 5s.

10. **Blount's Jocular Tenures,** enlarged and revised, and now first alphabetically arranged, with a Glossary, large paper, £3, 3s.; small paper, £1, 11s. 6d.

[*** *Nos.* 7—10 *are uniformly printed in medium* 8°, *and bound in cloth, edges uncut. Very limited editions were taken, and of the large paper very few copies were struck off—of Warton, Brand, and Proverbs,* 50 *; of Blount,* 25].

11. **Hazlitt's Writings on Art,** a new and enlarged edition, fcap. 8°, cloth, edges uncut, 5s.

*** *Uniform with Bell's edition of the Works.*

Digitized by Google

12. **Cunningham's Traditional Tales** of the **English** and Scottish Peasantry, a new edition, fcap. 8°; paper boards, **edges uncut**, 6s.

13. **Plays, Poems, and Letters of Sir John Suckling,** with Life and Notes, *portrait and facsimiles*, 2 vols. fcap. 8°, paper boards, edges uncut, 18s.

14. **Fairy Tales, Legends, and Romances,** illustrating Shakespeare and other Early English Writers, fcap. 8°, 428 pp., 12s.

15. **Randolph's Poetical and Dramatic Works,** now first collected, *portrait, autographs, and view of birthplace*, pp. 704, 12s.

16. **Shakespeare's Library,** a Collection of the **Materials** employed by him in his Plays, 6 vols, fcap. 8°, boards, uncut, £2, 2s.

17. **Barnabees Journal,** by Richard Brathwaite, **faithfully** reprinted from the scarce and expensive edition of 1820, with all the *plates*, and the Notes of Haslewood complete, large paper, 2 vols., £2, 2s ; small paper, 12s.

[**** *Nos.* 12—17 *are uniformly printed and bound. For a fuller account of these Works, see the Publishers' List*].

18. **Collections and Notes,** a companion volume to **Hazlitt's** Handbook, large paper, £3, 10s.; small paper, £2, 2s.

LONDON: REEVES AND TURNER, 196 STRAND.

JAN 15 1929

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google